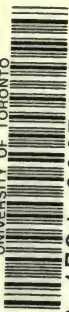


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00359966 9

HANDBOUND  
AT THE



UNIVERSITY OF  
TORONTO PRESS











Palladius on Husbandrie.



~~Revised~~  
~~Printed~~  
~~5/10/96~~

492  
53

# Palladius

## On Husbandrie.

EDITED

FROM THE UNIQUE MS. OF ABOUT 1420 A.D.  
IN COLCHESTER CASTLE.

BY THE

REV. BARTON LODGE, M.A.,

RECTOR OF ST. MARY MAGDALEN, COLCHESTER.

38638  
6/10/96.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY, BY  
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 8 & 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCCLXXIII.

PR  
1119  
A2  
no. 52

52.

HERTFORD:

PRINTED BY STEPHEN AUSTIN AND SONS.

## P R E F A C E.

---

OF the author of this translation nothing certain is known, and he has not left us any clue by which we may hope to discover traces of his name, position, or history: *stat nominis umbra*. Very possibly he may have been a member of one of the Religious Houses in Colchester, or the neighbourhood; but this is only conjecture, founded upon the known facts that gardening was a favourite pursuit of the inmates of these houses, and Palladius was held in repute amongst them. The translator occasionally speaks in his own person, in parentheses, and in the Prologues and Epilogues, and though he does not thus help us in determining directly who he was and where he lived, he affords us abundant evidence that he was a religious and devout man. He must have been possessed also of considerable learning, for those times, to have been enabled to render his Author so correctly as he generally does; and his success in reproducing a Prose writer in a Poetic dress indicates some literary taste as well as leisure. The Editor is not aware of the existence of any other translation of Palladius into English, though he has been published in the vernacular of most of the other European nations. Of the time and place at which the present translation was produced, we may judge approximately by internal evidence. The form and structure of the language point decidedly to a period little subsequent to the age of Chaucer. The grammatical peculiarities lead to this conclusion; the Stanza adopted was a favourite one with the great Poet in his early Canterbury Tales; and in our text expressions and turns of thought frequently occur, which may justify the surmise that the translator, whoever he

was, had recently read and admired Chaucer's wonderful poem, and was led to an unconscious and humble imitation of his verse. Some of the grammatical forms ordinarily employed by this writer shall be appended, by which the Chaucerian reader will be enabled to see at once the similarity referred to. In the structure of the verse it is worth remarking that there is the same tendency as in Chaucer to conclude a paragraph with a syllable, the rhyme to which occurs at the commencement of the next paragraph, and not to complete the rhyme with the paragraph, according to modern usage. Both writers also are in the habit of making words of the same form rhyme together if used in different senses. The author of this translation frequently in a marked manner is at pains to show by his Latin explanations that there is this difference in the words of the same sound at the conclusion of his lines. With respect to the final *e*, this writer's usage cannot be made amenable to the same laws which have been applied with so much ingenious plausibility to Chaucer. Whether these rules were strictly observed by the great poet or not, enough has been done by Dr. Morris, Professor Child, and others, to vindicate him from the absurd charges made against his versification by Dryden. Whilst I am on this subject I must just remark with regard to the common word "atte," which is generally explained to mean *at the*, that in this work it repeatedly occurs, sometimes as a monosyllable, sometimes as a dissyllable, with the definite article immediately following. Our language was then evidently in a transitional state; and the dialect employed by our translator was, according to the *criteria* supplied by Dr. Morris, that of the East Midland districts. The Anglo-Saxon letters þ (thorn) and p (wen) are not once used; the plural of verbs ends generally in *th*, the infinitive often in *en*, the present participle in *ynɡ* or *ing*, but never in *and* or *ande*; the past participle has often the *i* or *y* prefixed to it: the pronouns are frequently used in the dative. But more of this in the Grammatical Paradigm.



The Manuscript from which this transcript has been made had been lying long unnoticed in the Library of Colchester Castle; but how it came there, and whence it was brought, there is no record to show. Probably it was presented to the Book Society, with many other volumes, by the late Charles Gray, Esq.: it has the printed Book-plate of the Society within the cover, and the same impressed on the outside. It had evidently been subject to much ill-treatment before binding; for the title-page is gone, several pages at the end have been rudely torn, and the blank pages have been scribbled over. The MS. is on parchment, in a good hand, carefully written in most places, though sometimes showing signs of carelessness in the copyist; occasionally a whole line is omitted, probably from inadvertence, but once or twice a space is left, as if the author had not completed the translation. Reference will be made to these in the notes. The binder, by a strange blunder, has lettered the volume "Tusser's Calendar MS."

With regard to the personal history of Palladius himself, known facts are very scanty. We can assert that he was called Palladius Rutilius Taurus Æmilianus, that he lived and wrote about the time of Theodosius, in the fourth century, and that his work on Husbandry in fourteen Books obtained some celebrity; but in determining the place of his birth, or whether he was a lawyer or physician, as well as a practical agriculturist, we have little more than conjecture to rely on. There is, however, every reason, short of absolute demonstration, for believing that the following verses apply to the author of the treatise here translated: at any rate they have merit enough of their own to justify their reproduction. They are by Rutilius, and were published in his Itinerary.

Tum discessurus studiis urbique remitto  
 Palladium generis spemque, decusque mei,  
 Facundus juvenis Gallorum nuper ab arvis  
 Missus Romani discere jura fori.

Ille meæ secum dulcissima vinculacuræ,  
 Filius affectu, stirpe propinquus habet,  
 Cujus Aremoricæ pater Exsuperantius oras  
 Nunc postliminium pacis amare docet.

The purity of Palladius's Latin style is remarkable, considering the time at which he wrote; and numerous copies of his work attest the honour in which he was held. Not only in Italy, to which country his directions are more particularly adapted, but in other countries also, he has been much read; and when our own Milton undertook the office of tutor to his sister's two sons and others of his friends, according to Toland, "not content to acquaint his disciples with those books that are commonly read in the schools, wherof several are no doubt excellent in their kind, tho' others are as trivial or impertinent, he made them read in Latin the ancient authors concerning Husbandry, as Cato, Varro, Columella, and Palladius." That part of the work which relates to the vine, and has apparently little to interest the practical husbandman in this country, was once perhaps as acceptable as any: for, beyond a doubt, vine-growing and wine-making were formerly carried on to a great extent in England, as Master Barnaby Googe, who wrote in the year 1614, bears witness on this wise in the Introduction to his work, founded on a German original, on the "whole art and trade of Husbandry, contained in foure Bookes, viz.—I. of Earable-Ground, Tillage and Pasture; II. of Gardens, Orchards, and Woods; III. of feeding, breeding, and curing all manner of Cattell; IIII. of poultrie, fowle, fish, and bees:—

I have also beene carefull about the planting and ordering of the Vine (though some of my friends would have had it omitted, as altogether impertinent to our cuntry): because I am fully perswaded, if diligence and good husbandrie might be used, wee might have a reasonable good Wine, growing in many places of this Realme; as undoubtedly we had immediately after the Conquest, till partly by slothfulnesse, not liking any thing long that is painefull, partly by Civill discord long continuing, it was left, and so with time lost, as

appeareth by a number of places in this Realme, that keeps still the name of Vineyards; and upon many Cliffes and Hilles are yet to be seene the rootes, and old remaines of Vines. There is besides Nottingham an ancient house called Chilwell, in which house remaineth yet, as an auncient monument in a great vwindow of glasse, the whole order of planting, proyning, stamping, and pressing of Vines. Besides there is yet also growing an olde Vine that yeelds a Grape sufficient to make a right good Wine, as vvas lately proved by a Gentlewoman in the sayd House. There hath moreover good experience of late yeeres beene made, by two noble and honourable Barons of this Realme, the Lord Villiams of Tame, and the Lord Cobham, vvho both had growing about their houses as good Vines, as are in many places of France. And if they answere not in all points every man's expectation, the fault is rather to be imputed to the malice and disdaind peradventure of the Frenchmen that kept them, then to any ill disposition, or fault of the soyle. For vvhere have you in any place better, or pleasanter Wines, then about Backrach, Colin, Andernach, and divers other places of Germanie, that have in manner the selfe-same latitude and disposition of the Heavens that we have? Beside that the nearenesse to the South is not altogether the causer of good Wines, appeareth in that you have about Orleans, great store of good and excellent Wine: wheras if you go to Burges, two days journey farther to the south, you shall finde a Wine not worth the drinking. The like is (as I have heard reported by Master D. Dale, Embassadour for his Majestie in these parts) of Paris, and Barleduke, the Towne being Southward, with noughtie wines: the others a great wayes farther to the North, vvith as good Wines as may be. But admit England would yeeld none so strong and pleasant Wines as are desired (as I am fully perswaded it would), yet is it worth the triall and travaile to have Wines of our owne, though they be the smaller; and therefore I thought it not meet to leave out of my booke the ordering and trimming of Vines."

I would remark, in confirmation of Barnaby Googe's statement, that, in an old map of Colchester, I have seen vines depicted in the streets; and in the Corporation Rolls, preserved amongst the Colchester Records, we find that in the 3rd & 4th Richard II., a sufficient piece of land was granted to place three *stulps* (spores, or spars) to support a certain vine opposite the house of one Clement, a dyer in North Street: and "in

4th & 5th Edward II., Hugh de Stowe raised two stulps under his vine opposite his tenement in Chero," *i.e.* the chair, or scherd. And, further, in an account of Belhus, the seat of the *Barrett-Lennard* family at Avely, in Essex, we are told that Belhus is described as "a capital manor, with house and chambers, garden and vineyard from which there is record that wine was made." Mr. Godwin, in the *English Archæologists' Handbook*, informs us that vineyards are mentioned thirty-eight times in the Doomsday Book. Few great Monasteries were without them. They are referred to in the laws of King Alfred, and are said by Vopiscus to be as old as A.D. 280. One in Essex is alluded to, *quæ reddit xx modios vini si bene procedit*. One also is stated to have existed at Bisham, Berks. Mr. Roach Smith has not only called attention to the subject in a very interesting pamphlet, but has also attempted on a large scale to restore the cultivation of the vine in England as a branch of husbandry; and it is to be hoped that his patriotic experiment may be attended with success.

The Editor is well aware, however, that the value of this publication will consist mainly in the specimens it affords of the structure of our language at an important period, and to its first use in English of many agricultural and horticultural terms. He trusts that in these directions it will render sufficient aid to the philologist, in pursuing his interesting investigations, to justify the labour and expense which have been bestowed upon it.

---

## GRAMMATICAL NOTICES.

I WOULD first venture a remark on the great variety of the spelling. It is not only that the present participle is written sometimes with an *i*, sometimes with a *y*, sometimes with a final *e*, sometimes without it; that the past participle sometimes has the *i* or *y* prefixed, though oftener not; that the infinitive appears now with the suffix *en* or *ene*, and now without it: but the same word, without any apparent reason, is represented in every possible variety of form. Thus in the compass of a few pages the word *air* is spelt in four different ways: *e.g.* we have 1, *aier*; 2, *aire*; 3, *ayer*; 4, *eire*; and the common adverb *well* appears in 13/334 as *wele*, and in the same page as *weel*, whilst in other places, as 195/282, it is *wel*. There is the same want of uniformity in many other words; and such queer spellings as *auntceaunt* for ancient, and *medessyng* for medicine, do not point to any clearly defined rules for the guidance of writers of that period. Most of the MSS. of the time are equally obnoxious to the same charge; and it is hardly reasonable to suppose that there was an abrupt descent into this confusion from an age of greater uniformity. It therefore appears to me that clever men are building their ingenious theories on a rather unsafe and uncertain foundation, when they make them to depend on the presence or absence of the final *e* in early MSS. In the grammatical forms which follow, I make no attempt to systematize or account for them. I simply lay before the reader some of the more prominent, and leave to others the task of applying them to scientific use.



## THE PLURAL OF NOUNS SUBSTANTIVE

agrees, in the great majority of instances, with modern usage, ending in *s* or *es* : but remains of the old plural in *n* are not wanting, not only in *housen*, and *oxen* and *exon*, but the following also occur :

<i>Treen</i> , for trees, 4/86.	<i>Boon</i> , for bones, 58/394.
<i>Cleen</i> , for claws, 34/937.	<i>Kyen</i> , for cows, 130/707.
<i>Foon</i> , for foes, 139/964.	<i>Stren</i> , for straws, 74/362.
<i>Been</i> , for bees, 138/953.	<i>Een</i> , for eyes, 105/25 ; and 129/677.
<i>Fleep</i> , for fleas, 34/915.	<i>Toon</i> , for toes, 188/49.

There are some few instances of plurals in *ys*, e.g. :

<i>Wormys</i> , for worms, 138/945.	<i>Marys</i> , for mares, 132/779.
<i>Bonyys</i> , for bones, 213/170.	<i>Malys</i> , for males, 134/821.
<i>Hillys</i> , for hills, 213/181.	

Traces of a still older plural are to be noticed in

<i>Eldron</i> , for elders, 26/714.
<i>Eyon</i> , for eyes, 80/552.
<i>Eyron</i> , for eggs, 22/582.
<i>Lamber</i> and <i>lambron</i> , for lambs, 145/154, and following.

*Peson*, for peas, 106/68, will not appear extraordinary to readers of Tusser ; but in 149/8 we find also *peses*, *pese* being the singular. *Foot* in the plural occurs regularly in its modern form *feët*, but when it signifies a measure of length, it is for the most part written *footes*, e.g. 210/87. There are some rare examples of the plural in *e* : I can only call to mind *kynde*, 13/335 ; *stede* = places in 183/127 ; and *pigge* in 100/1086.

## INFLEXION OF NOUNS SUBSTANTIVE.

The genitive singular ends most frequently in *es*, or *s* only, as :

<i>Hienes skynne</i> = Hiena's skin, 180/43.
<i>Strengthes qualitee</i> = quality of strength, 33/786.
<i>Generacions libertee</i> = liberty of generation, 130/724.
<i>Cannys knottes</i> = knots of cane, 123/542.
<i>This trees feet and legges</i> = this tree's feet, etc., 88/750.
<i>Oon dayes while</i> = the duration of a day, 201/389.

The genitive plural is also formed by adding *s* or *es*, e.g.

*Myrtes bayes*=berries of myrtles, 59/414.

*Vynes rootes*=roots of vines, 101/114.

*Swynes dounge*, 92/860.

*Greynes names*=names of grains, 9/232.

But the preposition *of*, as in Modern English, is much more commonly used instead of the genitive, both singular and plural, as "part of our labour," 1/14; "preef of holsom air," 2/34; "dyvers kynde of treen," 13/336.

Numerous instances occur in which the preposition is omitted. It may be worth while to specify a few of them :

Every maner pere, 88/177.

A potful hony, 95/968.

Every syde it, 105/34.

An acre lande, 106/56.

This maner drove, 134/826.

A sester old wyne, 145/146.

A strike floure, 205/520.

Sycomore a certayne, 185/185.

This wyne the fourthe part,  
202/428.

A conge wyne=ongius of wine,  
203/453.

Two sester hony, 205/514.

A galon muste, 205/519.

I am unable to produce instances of any other case; unless *Summer* and *Winter*, in 13/328 and 9, and *alibi*, are to be considered as ablatives. I have looked for datives differing in form from the accusative, but I cannot find any that I should like to vouch for. For instance, though "in hoot lande," 124/573, "in bareine lande," 7/169, seem to have a dative *e*, when compared with "Yf that thi land," 9/220, yet other instances like "The lande is goode," 5/110; "the lande . . is efte to plowe, 164/2; "deep land also thai seke," 8/193; "oute of that land," 8/194, prevent one's giving any inflexional value to the final *e*.

#### ADJECTIVES

present fewer variations from modern usage. I speak, of course, of those occurring in this translation. The adjective more frequently has the final *e* than not, whether it be definite or indefinite; in the

plural the occurrence of the *e* is more uniform. I will first produce examples, carefully verified, of its indiscriminate use.

- “ This fals humour let goode water oute trie ” (180/40).
- “ Kest it so *thyne* wyne amonge,” i.e. *thin wine* (200/382).
- “ Yf me shall hoothe water sprynge ” (143/95).
- “ In reed (=red), and hoore, and blake unvariable,  
Of hem the reed is best, the hoor is able ” (14/354-5).
- “ The landes fatte, or lene, or thicke, or rare,  
Or drie or moiste ” (5/100).

But even in the plural there are exceptions, e.g. :

- “ In places colde and moist ” (10/243).
- “ Myster derk ” (2/30).
- “ In places moist ” (84/646).
- “ Ther swymmeth seeke, & *hool* adowne wol hie ” (216/264).

The possessive pronoun almost invariably has the final *e* : *thaire* browes, 135/867 ; *thaire* hornes, 134/830 ; *thaire* landes, 181/55 ; but this does not apply to *his* nor to *her* for “ their ” ; and *thin* for “ thy ” is frequently used without the *e*, as in 3/56, “ No doubt is in thi water nor thin aire.”

There is one instance of an adjective declined with *es* in the plural, “ Of children clennes in virginitee,” 9/229.

If “ myres,” 35/966, be an adjective, it is worth notice ; but I incline to think it is a substantive in the genitive singular.

Such adjectives as “ *eschewe* ” for *to eschew*, or *to be eschewed*, are not of infrequent occurrence, 20/528 ; 125/586.

#### DEGREES OF COMPARISON

are formed by *er* for the comparative, and *est* for the superlative, whatever may be the number of syllables : thus, we have not only *sweeter*, *sweetest*, and *rather*, *ratherest* ; but also

- diligenter*, for more diligent, 119/435,
- konnyngest*, for most skilful, 151/63,
- fertilest*, for most fertile, 101/1136,
- lattest*, 14/364,

and the old comparative *herre*, for higher, occurs 77/445.

We have the usual irregular comparatives and superlatives, e.g.



better, best; worse, worst; more, most; less, least, etc.: "better" often assumes the form "bette," as "more" does that of "mo," or "moo."

"This Feveryere and Marche is for hem bette" (97/1011).

"The bitterest erthe and werst that thou canst thinke" (4/81).

*Forme* occurs (60/447) in its old sense of *first* (A.S. *forma*), and the double superlative *formest* (which we now write *foremost*, as if from *fore* and *most*), appears in 72/317, and again in 190/93.

There is a peculiar use of the adjectives great, small, etc., which is worthy of attention. "Bushell greete" is an example; but the instances are so numerous that it is easy to adduce others, thus:

"The graffes to be litel finger grete" (74/379).

"A finger greet is rounde ynough to sette" (85/673).

"The chanel's fynger grete thou most espie" (155/187).

"And therupon doo stones handfull grete" (155/181).

"Grynde it powder small" (169/149).

"Til it be hony fatte and thicke iche dele" (205/516).

"And stere it until hony thicke it renne" (185/189).

Similar to these are "water tempered" (215/232), and "dounge ywette" (191/122); though they may be regarded as no more than ordinary compound words to be joined by a hyphen, like "sonne ydried," in 185/170; but "ox dounge ennoynte," three lines above, does not so easily reconcile itself to our notions; and we meet with other similar expressions quite as strange.

#### PRONOUNS.

The Pronoun of the first person is uniformly *I* or *Y* in the singular, and *we* or *wee* in the plural. The genitive, I believe, does not occur. The dative *me* is very common preceding impersonal verbs, as *me thynketh*, *me lysteth*, etc. The pronominal accusative *me* is to be carefully distinguished from the indefinite *me*, meaning *one* or *men*, and used in the nominative, e.g. "me moost" (1/2)=one must. *Us* in the dative plural is to be remarked in such phrases as, "Us is to write," 1/8, etc.

The Pronoun of the second person is *thou*, or *thowe*, in the singular, and in the plural *ye*. I am unable to produce an instance of the

genitive. The dative *the* or *thee* is common enough with impersonals, e.g. "What the liketh" (48/113). The most usual form of the accusative is *the*, but we meet *thee* also.

The Pronouns of the third person are *he*, *she*, and *it*, or *yt*, or *hit*, or *hyt*. The dative and accusative of *he* are *him* or *hym*; of *she* most frequently *hir*, e.g. "Yf he bite hir in his rage" (136/882).

The plural of the third person is *thai*, *thay*, or *thei*, gen. *her*, or *er*, or *here*. Dative and accusative very generally *hem*, but we do meet with *thayme*, e.g. 92/875: "Thayme that are of gentilnesse." It may be remarked here that *self* and *selve* are joined indifferently to singular and plural: thus, in 1/4, *hemself*=themselves; in 3/64, *itselfe*=itself. In 5/117, we have *hemself* again=themselves; and in 94/931, *himselve*=himself.

The possessive pronouns are *mi*, *my*, *min*, *myne*; and in the plural *oure*, *ower*.

For the second person, *thi*, *thy*, *thin*, *thine*; and in the plural *youre*; and for the third person *his* or *hys* for neuter as well as masculine, and *her*, *hir*, *hire*, for the feminine; in the plural *thaire*, *thayre*, *theire*, *her*, *here*. In 135/867, *her* and *thaire* occur in the same line:

"Thaire browes hoore, her tempils holgh uevon."

#### DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

*The* is without inflexion, singular and plural.

*This* admits no variation in the singular; but in the plural we have *thees*, 3/43; *this*, 30/801; 104/6; *thoo*, 68/194. But *thoo* would seem rather to be the plural of *that*.

Professor Child (see Ellis's *Early English Pronunciation*, pp. 354, et seq.) has noticed the frequent use in Chaucer of *this* instead of the definite article. It is very common, also, in our author. I will produce a few examples.

"And in is kest  
This opium Quyrynaike" (101/1139),

which had not been mentioned before.

"Nowe pulverised be this vynes yonge" (106/71).

The first mention of vines here. In like circumstances,

“Noo man spare  
This goldes outhr rabes forto sowe” (110/173).

In

“This gourdes in this Moone also beth sowe” (114/280),  
“This Mules for to make who so delite” (136/870),

where nothing had before been said about mules. See also 38/1044.

*It* occurs frequently in the form *hit*, e.g. 29/780, 37/1011. The possessive form is *his*, as in 29/773 :

“That it may in itself *his* moisture kepe.”

### THE RELATIVE.

“Who” is of all genders, as “Seedes who descende,” 112/220, and that not only in the nominative, but also in the genitive, and other cases, and in both numbers ; *e.g.*

“Whoos seede in moolde if that me delve” (82/584).  
“The vyne and fruyt, and place in whom thai growe” (6/128).  
“Eke places unto whome from hilles sonder” (49/145).  
“As hony me may kepe it in a stene,  
In stede of whome in metes it demene” (205/501).

*That* occurs most frequently as a relative. Sometimes it is used for *he who*, e.g.

“That” (*i.e.* he that) “roboth hem well worthi go to hell is” (196/271).  
“And that” (*i.e.* that which) “was cut of, close it after clene” (127/655).

### ADVERBS.

We refer to the Glossary for a goodly number of rare and interesting adverbs ; not only the original form of the ordinary adverb in *ly* ; e.g. *joyfulliche*, 215/222, and *iliche* = equally, 7/167, and such specimens as *pitchelonges*, 150/42, *afterlonges*, 66/139, *allyng*, 208/42, etc., etc. ; but the following are also noteworthy : *by and by* = now and then ; and *nowe and nowe*, used much in the same sense. *Eft and eft* = again and again ; *to and to* = regularly, in course ; *from nowe forth* = henceforth ; *atte alle* = altogether, *omnino*, see 77/463 ; *therayeine* = on the other hand ; *amonge* = in the meantime, 105/29 ; *so or soo* = as the case may be, 155/166 ; *every*

*amonge*=every now and then, 105/29. The interjection *wellesay* occurs, 167/91, but I have not been able to meet with it elsewhere. It is hardly necessary to mention the numerals *ones, twies, thries*.

The ordinary comparison is by the suffixes *er*, and *est*.

#### VERBS.

All the persons of the verb in the plural number end most frequently in *th*, in the present indicative, and the imperative. As was to be expected from the nature of the subject, we have not many *preterites*; but in 79/500, instead of the strong form *grew*, we meet with *growed*. The third singular subjunctive is of most frequent occurrence, *e.g.* 149/4 :

“Untouched nowe the Tilman let hem growe.”

And *let, do, make*, with an infinitive active, like the French *laisser*, and the German *lassen*, are very frequent. We have repeated instances of the infinitive in *en*, as *kepen, slen, doon*; but the omission of the *en* or *n* is much more frequent, as, to *sle, to kepe, to do*. Sometimes the two forms occur in the same line, *e.g.* :

“What is to rere or doon in everything” (1/11).

The following are examples of *to* omitted before the infinitive :

“Suffice it the there as thowe casteth dwelle” (9/234).

“Thai loveth derk Septentrion beholde” (217/279).

“When he his gemmy tail begynneth splay” (23/625).

“And right as hennes heel her maladie  
Is goode” (25/686)

“Barly and whete & sengul sedes owe  
VIII daies floure,” *i.e.* ought to flower (149/6).

“The plaunte in yeres two wol gynne grone” (216/255).

“And after suffre thay the sonne it drie” (158/8).

“And yf the tree begynne seke,” *i.e.* to sicken (193/177).

On the contrary, *to* is often redundant before the imperative, *e.g.* :

“Only the litel feet to cleme in cley” (92/888).

In the following passage we have both the redundant *as* and the *to* before the imperative :

“Lowe on the truncke *as* wounde him in the rynde,

A lite humoure whenne oute of it is ronne,

With chaved cley the wounde ayein *to* bynde” (212/141-3).

## PARTICIPLES.

Those of the present tense all end in *ing* or *ynge*, as *bering*, 4/7, *havyng*, 38/1038. The following are various instances of the past participle : *taken*, 1/1 ; *overtake*, 8/2 ; *fonde*, 2/3 ; *brought*, 6/2 ; *hidde*, 7/2 ; *overgowe*, 9/220 ; *forferde*, 109/160 ; *spende*, 105/40 ; *turne*, 45/26 ; *gonnen*, 159/23 ; *eete* = eaten, 123/553 ; *bende* = bent ; *sprad*, 31/135 ; *letted* = hindred, 105/31 ; *holde* from verb held, *lest* = lost ; *taked* = having taken, 83/630 ; *wende*, 93/902 ; *sayen* = seen, 93/907 ; *unrende*, 104/9 ; *stolon*, 113/269 ; *umvionne*, 13/334 ; *sene*, 122/520 ; *heede* = hidden, 111/199 ; *wrion* = covered, 171/11 ; *rope* = reaped, 183/127.

The following occur with the prefix *i* or *y* : *ywonden*, 115/314 ; *ygrounde*, 15/400 ; *ychaunged*, 21/566 ; *ywesh* = washed, 27/762 ; *ymeddled*, 28/763 ; *ypitte* = put, 41/1119 ; *Ysowe* = sowed, *passim* ; *Idolve* = delved, *Itaught* = taught, 81/570 ; *ywronge* = squeezed, 90/814 ; *iholde*, 250/48 ; *ycalled*, 93/921 ; *ydoon*, 70/259 ; *ydoe*, 75/405.

## NEGATIVES.

Two in the same sentence strengthen the negation, according to the usual rule, as "ne" and "not."

"So that they ne touche not" (89/804).

The negative verbs *nath* = has not, *na* = have not, *nys* = is not, *nare* = are not, *nass* = was not, *nylle* = will not, *molde* = would not, have frequently, but not always, another negative adding emphasis, *e.g.*

"The frostes *na* noo dominacion" (188/41).

"And naked cley nys nought" (77/450).

## NOMINATIVE ABSOLUTE.

Numerous instances might be produced ; the following will suffice :

"This flooring wol be black and wynter warme  
And, lycoure shedde, anon it wol drie" <sup>1</sup> (13/344-5).

"Sprad the winges outte, sette up an oule" <sup>2</sup> (31/835).

<sup>1</sup> Orig. "et siqua fundentur ex poculis velociter rapta desuget."

<sup>2</sup> Orig. "Noctua pennis patentibus extenta suffigitur."

“The corse idelve in grounde, the rootes wol abounde”<sup>1</sup> (73/336).

“Men graffe hem nowe, thaire graffes buddes ungrowe”<sup>2</sup> (98/1046).

“This doon, is other thinges for to doo”<sup>3</sup> (27/736).

#### PECULIAR ORDER OF WORDS.

Professor Child (in Ellis's *E. E. Pron.* p. 375) has collected several instances from Chaucer, but none more peculiar than some of these in our author :

“Coloured, stonde not on to besily to se thi lande” (4/71); *i.e.* stand not too much on seeing thy land high coloured.

“Yit if that he Vulturinus oversette a vyne in heete or other blastes lette” (6/144); *i.e.* if he let the N.E. or other blastes overset a vine.

“The pament under thorled and suspense, bete under fyre” (19/500); *i.e.* make a fire under the hollow pavement.

“The lupinge is noo wedyng on to spende” (46/71); *i.e.* no weeding is to be expended on the lupine.

“The vynes roote umwried be fayne wolde” (171/7); *i.e.* would fain be covered.

“This moone is good, to make in, pastyning” (46/71); *i.e.* in this month it is good to do pastining.

“The galle, is boote to touche hem with, of neutes grene” (92/865); *i.e.* it is good to touch them with a green newt's gall.

“Other with noo holde” (130/715); *i.e.* hold with no other.

“A fressh potte on hem sevred pitcheth ynne” (127/657); *i.e.* put them in separately on a fresh pot.

“A comune bussshell greet circumferent, one of thi worchers falle” (151/60); *i.e.* let one of thy workmen fall the tree when it is as large round as a common bushel.

#### DISSYLLABLES PRONOUNCED AS MONOSYLLABLES.

Thorowe, 90/814; over, 92/879; sayen, 92/884; *cometh*, and several verbs of the third singular, 97/1019 (as so often in Chaucer, etc.); forowe, 105/41; theroute=*sub divo passim*; *eree* to plough, 62/40; and *ayenie* is pronounced as a dissyllable.

<sup>1</sup> “Si infossione totius corporis obsuatur.”

<sup>2</sup> “Antequam germinint.”

<sup>3</sup> “His ordinatis.”



TRANSLATION  
OF  
PALLADIUS ON HUSBONDRIE.

BOOK THE FIRST.

[Most of the final letters *n*, *t*, *h*, and some *e*'s, have a curl or flourish over them; these are judged not to be marks of contraction, and are disregarded.]

*De preceptis rei rustice.*

1.

Consideraunce is taken atte prudence  
What mon me moost enforme: and husbondrie  
No rethorick doo teche or eloquence;  
4 As sum have doon hemself to magnifie.  
What com therof? That wyse men folie  
Her wordes helde. Yit other thus to blame  
We styntte, in cas men doo by us the same.

No rhetoric is necessary for husbandry, though some have thought differently, to magnify themselves.

2.

8 Us is to write tillinge of everie londe,  
With Goddes grace, eke pasture and housyng;  
For husbondry how water shal be fonde;  
What is to rere<sup>1</sup> or doon in everything,  
12 Plesaunce and fruyte the tilier to bring  
As season wol; his appultreen<sup>2</sup> what houre  
Is best to set is part of our laboure.

We shall treat of tillage, pasturage buildings, finding water, etc.

<sup>1</sup> nutrire.

<sup>2</sup> pomos.

*De iii<sup>or</sup> rebus quibus agricultura consistit.*

## 3.

The four points  
of husbandry :  
water, air, land,  
and management.

- In thinges IIII alle husbondrie mot stande :  
16 In water, aier, in lande, and gouernance.  
And III the first, as water, aier, and lande  
Beth natural, the IIIIth is of plesaunce  
And crafte of men ; but this consideraunce  
20 Is first to seen, how thyng is of nature  
In places there thou wilt have the culture.

## 4.

The air must be  
clear and whole-  
some ; the water  
too.

- And first beholde aboute and se thin aire,  
Yf it be clere and hole stand out of fere ;  
24 The Water eke beholde yf it be faire,  
Hoolsum, and light, and eyther springing there  
Or elles thider brought from elles where,  
Or that it come of rayne ; eke se thi lande  
28 Be bering,<sup>1</sup> and commodiously stande.

The land fertile  
and well situate.

*De aieris probacione.*

## 5.

Good air is known  
by countrymen's  
cheeks, clear  
wits, and unim-  
peded sight.

- Good ayer is there as dales deep are noon,  
And mystes derk noo dayes maketh nyght ;  
The contreemen coloured well ichone,  
32 Thaire wittes clere and unoffended sight,  
Her voices faire, her herynge pure and light.  
All this is preef of holsum aire and clene,  
And there as is contraier is aire unclene.

*De acquâ probandâ.*

## 6.

The water must  
not be brought  
from puddles or  
marshes.

- 36 The water out of gauseyn or of myer<sup>2</sup>  
Be it not brought, nor out of metal synke,  
That it be freshe coloured first desire,

<sup>1</sup> *Vel* fertile.

<sup>2</sup> *Vel* palude.



Not poury,<sup>1</sup> but plesaunt and good to drinke,  
 40 And smell also therto in cas it stynke ;  
 If it be coole in heete and luke<sup>2</sup> in colde,  
 The better may thowe with that water holde.

7.

Yit although thees in water faire appere,  
 44 An hidde defaictie is sumtyme in nature  
 Under covert, and therof thus thowe lere :  
 Yf contreyemen in likyng hele endure,  
 Her hedes good, her chekes also pure,  
 48 And lite or no compleynt inwith the brest,  
 The longes hole and wynded with the best.

Learn if the countrymen are well-liking, their heads good, cheeks clean, lungs long-winded.

8.

The longe-woo cometh ofte of yvel eire,  
 The stomake eke of eire is overtake,  
 52 Take heede eke yf the dwellers in that leire  
 Her wombes, sydes, reynes swell or ake,  
 Yf langoure in thaire bledders ough' awake.  
 And if thoue see the people sounde and faire,  
 56 No doubt is in thy water nor thin aire.

The lung-woe comes of bad air; the stomach also is overtaken by it. See if the dwellers in that place have aches in their stomachs, sides, reins, or bladders.

*De electione terre.*

9.

Ffecunditee thowe see thus in thi lande :  
 See not the swerd<sup>3</sup> all naked, white, unclene,  
 All chalk<sup>4</sup> or gravel groissyng in thi hande  
 60 Withouten moolde<sup>5</sup> admixt, nor sandy<sup>6</sup> lene,  
 Nor hongrie clay,<sup>7</sup> nor stones ful iche rene,  
 To ronke aud weete, yolgh, bitter, salt ragstone,<sup>8</sup>  
 Valeyees herde and depe eke be ther noon.

Let not the sward be bare or white, nor chalk, nor gravel unmixed with mould, and let there no salt ragstone, or hard deep vales.

10.

64 A roten swerd and welny blaake, it selve  
 Suffysing wel with graas<sup>9</sup> to ouerwrie,  
 And tough to glue ayein though thowe it delve,

A rotten sward, almost black, self-covered with grass, and toughly adhering again

<sup>1</sup> moddy.      <sup>2</sup> tepida.      <sup>3</sup> glebam.      <sup>4</sup> creta.      <sup>5</sup> terreno.  
<sup>6</sup> *Vel* sabulo.      <sup>7</sup> glarea.      <sup>8</sup> tophus.      <sup>9</sup> gramine.

when dug, its fruit not scabby nor dry, bearing walwort, rushes, reeds, grass, clover, wild plums and briars, is good.

The fruit of it not scabby, rosted drie,  
68 With walwort that goode lande wol signifie.  
With ryshes, reede, graas, trefoil, plummes wilde,  
And briers fatte also goo it with childe.

## 11.

Thy land need not be coloured, but fat and sweet. Take a clod, and wet it with good water, and see if it be tough and gluey; or dig a hole, and if the earth will not all go in again, it is fruitful.

Coloured stonde not on to besily  
72 To see thi lande; but rather fatte and swete;  
To preve it fatte, a clodde avisely  
To take, and with gode water weel it wete,  
And loke if it be glewy, tough to trete;  
76 Or make a dyche, and yf the moolde abounde  
And wol not in agayn, it is fecounde.

## 12.

To choose sweet land, take an earthenpot, give it drink in sweet water, and so judge. For vines you must take care the land be loose

Yf it be lene, it goeth all in and more,  
Yf it be meene,<sup>1</sup> it wol be with the brinke.  
80 But for to take it swete, ataste alore  
The bitterest erthe and werst that thou canst thinke;  
An earthen potte thou take and yeve it drinke  
In water swete, and theruppon thou deme.  
84 Ffor vynes land to chees eke must thou yeme,<sup>2</sup>

## 13.

in body and colour, the trees thereon light, fair, and long.

In coors<sup>3</sup> and in colour solute and rare,  
The treen<sup>4</sup> thereon light, fertile, fair, and lange,  
As peres wilde, as plummes boshes are,  
88 Not coked, lene, or seke, but hole and strange;  
Ne pulle<sup>5</sup> it not, but goodly plaine elonge,<sup>6</sup>  
Ne pitche it not to sore into the vale,  
Nor breke it not all down aboute a dale.

Let there be no pools, but let it lengthen out into a goodly plain.

## 14.

If it be hilly, storms will assail it. Choose a plain in the mean.

92 Tempest, yf it be hilly, must assaille;  
An even feelde thou chese, and in the mene,  
Thater by the cleef awaie travaille;

<sup>1</sup> mediocris.<sup>2</sup> attendere.<sup>3</sup> corpore.<sup>4</sup> arbores.<sup>5</sup> stagnet (verbum est).<sup>6</sup> elonget (verbum est).

Or hille or dale in mesure thou demene.

- 96 But se thin eyre be faire and land unlene,<sup>1</sup>  
An higher hille the wynd that wolde offende  
Must holde of, but yf woddess the defende.

A high hill must keep off offensive winds, unless woods protect you from it.

## 15.

- The landes fatte or lene, or thicke or rare,  
100 Or drie, or moiste, and not withouten vice,  
Ffor divers seede yit thay right needful are ;  
But chese the fatte and moyste is myne avyse.  
Her werk is leest, and fruyt is moost of price.  
104 And after it the thicke and ronke is best :  
But thicke and drie espy, and grannt it rest.

Soils not without defects are good for divers seeds. I advyse to choose the fat and moist ; they require least labour and bear the best fruit. The next best is the thick and rank ; but let the thick and dry land alone.

## 16.

- Ayer, water, lande considered in nature,  
Nowe se the crafte ;—the crafte is gouvernance ;  
108 Nowe every worde and sentence hath greet cure ;  
The lord present his feelde may best avaunce.  
The lande is goode, the colour nought perchaunce ;  
Therefore in hewe doo thou noo diligence,  
112 ffor god by his plesaunce alle will dispence.

Now for good management. The master's presence benefits his fields. Regard not the hue of land.

## 17.

- The graffe and grayne is goode, but after preef  
Thou sowe or graffe, and seedes newe eschewe  
To sowe or sette, and trust in thair bonchief.  
116 Oute of thaire kynde eke scedes wol renewe  
And change hemself, as writeth clerks trewe,  
In places weete all rather then in drie.  
ffor vynes nowe, appointe of husbondrie.

Sow and graft after trial. Avoid new seeds. Seeds will change their nature.

## 18.

- 120 Northwarde in places hote, in places colde  
Southward, and temporannt in Est and West ;  
Yet of tylling is dyvers reson holde ;  
But chuse of thi province I holde it best.  
124 To fructife also this is honest,

Plant vines towards the north in hot places.

Follow the ways of the place.

<sup>1</sup> pinguis.

Let the younger  
obey their elders.

That yonger men obeye unto thaire eldron  
In gouuernynge, as goode and buxom childron.

## 19.

Vines cut early  
will produce  
many branches ;  
if late, many  
grapes.

To kytte a vyne is thinges iij to attende :  
128 The vyne, and fruyt, and place in whom thai growe.  
Of erly kytting braunches fele ascende,  
Of late kyttyng cometh grapes right enowe.

Change them  
from poor land  
to good, if you  
can.

From feble lande eke chaunge hem yf thou mowe :  
132 For man and tree from feble lande to goode  
Who can and wol not chaunge I holde him woode.

## 20.

After a good vin-  
tage cut them  
close. Do not  
spare the knife.

And kytte<sup>1</sup> hem streyt after thi goode vindage,<sup>2</sup>  
And grapes fewe and badde, thou kytte hem large.

136 Thyn yrons kepe in harde and sharpe usage  
For graffyng and for kytting I the charge,  
And doo thi dede, or flour or germ enlarge,  
And yf the plough mys doo, the spade amende,  
140 In landes drie and hote noo vyne extende.

If the plough  
fail, use the  
spade.

## 21.

It is of no use to  
set a vine in hot,  
dry places. But if  
wind overthrow  
or burn your vine,  
you may cover it  
with straw.

In places hote, in places over drie  
It is noo boote his vyne a man to sette,  
There as for heete he must hem over wrie ;<sup>3</sup>  
144 Yet if that he Vulturinus oversette  
A vyne in heete or other blastes lette,  
Or brenne a vyne, in stre or other thyng  
To covert here is holsom husbondynge.

## 22.

Cut off the barren  
branch. A void  
barren and dung-  
ed land for young  
vines.

The bareyne braunche, if ronke and greene it be,  
Right by lette kytte him of as mortal foo  
Of alle thi tree ; but barenne lande thou flee  
As pestilence ; in donged londe also  
152 To sowe in vynes younge as do not so ;

<sup>1</sup> puta.

<sup>2</sup> vindimiam.

<sup>3</sup> operire.

Yit Grekes seyen that after yeres thre  
Save Wortes, sowe in hem what ever it be.

Plant anything  
but colewort  
among vines.

23.

Iche herbe also thai sayen it is to sowe,  
156 In landes drie, outtake of hem the bene;  
The bene in landes weete is best to throwe;  
And sette not oute thi landes fate or lene  
To him whoos lande adjoyneth on thi rene;  
160 For harme and stryffe of that upon thi self  
May ryse, ye and perchaunce the overwhelve.

Plant all herbs,  
except beans, in  
a dry soil. Let  
not your land to  
the owner of the  
adjoining pro-  
perty.

24.

Tylle all thi felde, or all thy felde is lorne;  
Thi whete, a wonder, chaunging, thries sowe,  
164 In lande to fatte, wol tourne into other corne,  
And rie of whete ysowen wol up growe,  
As thay that are expert in tilling knowe.  
Iliche fre fro thinges thre thowe twynne,  
168 Sterilitee, infirmitee, and synne.

Till the whole  
field. Wheat,  
sown thrice in  
rich land, will  
turn to other  
corn.

25.

In bareine lande to sette or foster vynes  
Dispiseth alle the labour and expence.  
In feldes more,<sup>1</sup> in hilles nobler, wyne is;  
172 Abundaunt wyne the north wynde wol dispence  
To vynes sette agayne his influence;  
The sotheren wynde enspireth better wyne.  
Nowe moche or noble chees; the choys is thyne.

It is lost labour  
to set vines in  
barren land. In  
fields you get  
more wine, but  
in hills better.  
The north also  
dispenses abun-  
dance, the south  
better quality.

26.

176 Necessitee nath never haliday:  
Take hede on that, and feldes temperate  
All though it be goode sowyng, yit alway,  
Or long yf it be drie in oon astate,  
180 Let sowe it forth, and god it fortunate;

Necessity has no  
holiday, and  
though it is good  
to sow fields when  
in good condition,  
yet if it continue  
dry overlong, de-  
lay not to sow.  
Keep the paths  
clean.

<sup>1</sup> vini.

And yf thi wey be foule, it is dampnable,  
And neither plesaunt, neither profitable.

## 27.

A field must be well tilled to requite the expense. Take in hand no more than you can sustain. Take away black vines. Do not cut the green and tender. Long stakes desirable.

To tille a felde man must have diligence,  
184 And balk it not; but eree it upbe bydene.  
A litel tilled weel wol quyte expence,  
So take on hande as thou may wele sustene.  
The vynes blake awaie thowe take, eke greene  
188 And tender vynes kytte are therby shent,  
And stakes longe are vynes increment.

## 28.

Turn away the cutting, so that it does not drop on the grape, and anoint the branches out. Great olives, with poor watery fruit not worth the cost of the labor, grow out of deep land.

Twine every kirf awaywarde from the grape;  
Lest dropping doo it harme, ennointeth eke  
192 The braunches kitte, and up thay faste escape  
Alle fatte and sadde: deep land also thai seke,  
Olyves greet oute of that land wol reke  
With drafty, wattry fruyte and late and lite  
196 Unsuffisaunt the costes for to quyte.

## 29.

Olives love luke-warm air and temperate winds; and vines by process may be brought to a height, but not more than four feet in poor land and seven feet in rich land.

Luke ayer and tempre wynde olyves love,  
And vynes, that upon the hilles stande,  
By processe may be brought to thair above,  
200 Yit not but fotes IIII in feble land;  
And seven foote in fatte up may they stande.  
Eke as the grape is grene and wol not shake,  
Up bind it softe, and it is undertake.

## 30.

Do not tie your vine always in the same place. If not dug close it will hurt the vintage. Two feet deep enough for corn, double for trees. A new vine is improved by diligence as much as it goes back by negligence.

204 Thy vyne is oon stede ever thou ne bynde,  
And delve her cloos for hurtyng thi vindage,  
Eke deep and fertile land it is to fynde,  
And two foote depe is good for corne tillage,  
208 And double deep for treen in depnesse gage.  
A novel vine up goeth by diligence  
As fast as it goeth down by negligence.



## 31.

- And take on hande in husbonding thi lande  
 212 As thowe may bere in maner and mesure ;  
 War arrogaunce in takyng thing in hande ;  
 For after pride in scorne thou maist assure.  
 And elder then oon yere noo grayne in`ure  
 216 Thowe putte, in drede it die ; yit hilles yelde is  
 Wel gretter grayne and fewer than in feldys.

Beware of arrogance, and do not take in hand more than you can manage. Use no grain more than a year old.

## 32.

- In springing of the moone is best to sowe  
 In daies warm ; and, treen unprofitable—  
 220 Yf that thi land with hem be overgrowe,  
 Devide it thus ;—that fatte and bering able<sup>1</sup>  
 Let eree it up, and leve the lene unable<sup>2</sup>  
 Covert in wode ; yit wol this, with travaille  
 224 And brennyng it, thi fatte lande countervaille.

At new moon on warm days is best to sow. Plow up the rich fat land, but leave the poor land covered with trees. Yet this well worked and burnt will countervail your good land.

## 33.

- But when it is so brent by yeres fyve,  
 As nygh it not,<sup>3</sup> and after shalt thou se  
 That is as fatter lande wol crece<sup>4</sup> and thrive.  
 228 Tholyve, as Grekes sayen, shall planted be  
 Of children clennes in virginitee,  
 Perchance in remembraunce that tholyve tree  
 Ys p`mynent to virgyne chastitee.

After burning let the land lie idle five years. Greek notions with respect to the olive.

## 34.

- 232 The greynes names is noo nede to telle,  
 Nor after tyme and places how thai chaunge ;  
 Suffice it the there as thow casteth dwelle,  
 To see the countrey seed, and seed estraunge,  
 236 Preve eke the unproved grene afore eschaunge ;  
 Lupyne and fetches sleyn, and on thaire roote  
 Up dried, are as dounging landes boote.

There is no need to give the names of grains, nor their varieties. Wherever you choose to dwell see the seed of the country, and make no change without trial. Lupines and vetches cut down and dried are good manure.

<sup>1</sup> sc terra.<sup>2</sup> sc terra.<sup>3</sup> dimitte jacere.<sup>4</sup> crecere.

## 35.

Uncut they drink the moisture of the land. In hot and dry places work early on your vines; in cold, moist, and shady places, do not hasten.

- And lette hem drie unsleyne, and up thai drinke  
 240 The landes juce :<sup>1</sup> in place eke hoot and drie,  
 In champeyne eke, and nygh the sees brynke  
 Betyme upon thi werk in vynes hie ;  
 In places colde and moist, or shade and hie  
 244 Have thou noo haste, and this to kepe in houres  
 Aswell as moneth or dayes, thyne honoure is.

## 36.

When it is time to till, it is not too early or too late fifteen days before or after. Open land inclining to the sun is best for corn, and for wheat if it be be marly, thick, and somewhat wet.

- And tilling, when the tyme is it to doo,  
 Is not to rathe yf daies thries fyve<sup>2</sup>  
 248 It do prevent, and not to late also  
 As for as long ;<sup>3</sup> eke cornes best wol thryve  
 In open lande solute acclyned blyve  
 Uppon the sonne, and lande is best for whete  
 252 If it be marly,<sup>4</sup> thicke, and sumdele wete.

## 37.

Barley likes loose, dry earth. Three month sowing is to be confined to cold places where the land is wet in summer.

- And barly lande is goode solute and drie,  
 That manner molde hath barly in delite,  
 In cley lande yf men sowe it, it wol die.  
 256 Trymenstre<sup>5</sup> sedness<sup>6</sup> eke is to respite  
 To places colde of winter snowes white,  
 There as the lande is weete in somer season ;—  
 Aud other wey to wirche is counter reason.

## 38.

Three-month seed to be sown in autumn in cold lands. If you want trees or grain to grow in salt land, you must plant or sow immediately upon autumn, that winter may drive off the vice of that land.

- 260 Trymestre seede in hervest for to sowe  
 In lande colde is best, and yf the need<sup>7</sup>  
 In landes salt that treen or greynes growe,  
 Thou must anoon on hervest plante or sede,  
 264 The malice of that lande and cause of drede  
 That wynter with his shoures may of dryve,  
 Yit must it have an other thing to thryve.

<sup>1</sup> succum.<sup>2</sup> xv.<sup>3</sup> xv dies.<sup>4</sup> cretosa.<sup>5</sup> trimenstris.<sup>6</sup> satio.<sup>7</sup> sc serere.



## 39.

- Sum gravel or sum water lande caste under  
 268 If thou it plannte, and yf thou wolt it sede  
 A comune molde among it part asonder,  
 And alle the better wol thi werkes sped.  
 The stones on thi lande is for to drede ;  
 272 For thai be somer hoote and winter colde,  
 That vyne, and greyne, and tree distẽpre wolde.

Put some gravel or river-soil under it, or common mould. Stones will be hot in summer, and cold in winter, and will injure vines or grain.

## 40.

- The land aboute a roote is to be moved  
 All upsodoune, and fleykes<sup>1</sup> shal we take  
 276 Of dounge and moolde, and first be moolde admoved  
 And after dounge. Ap'mynent to make  
 Upon thi felde, hym nil<sup>2</sup> I undertake  
 That is thi dere entere : and whi? For, he  
 280 Wol wene his werke be wele, hou soever it be.

The ground about trees is to be thoroughly changed, and new mould and dung is to be applied.

A favourite ought not to be made foreman.

## 41.

- To chese or bey a felde consider this,—  
 That his nature and his fecunditie  
 Be not fordoon. In housbonding is mysse,  
 284 Unhusbondyng undooth fertilittee.  
 Yet pose<sup>3</sup> I that it myght amended be.  
 The surer is to trust in thinges sure ;  
 The hoole is save, the hurt is for to cure.

Things to be considered in choosing or buying a field. It is safer to take ground that does not require improvement.

## 42.

- 288 Yit as for seede, it may wel been amended ;  
 But vynes may have vices worthy blame,  
 To longe, or broode, uptrailed, or extended,  
 As dyvers men have doone to fresh her fame,  
 292 And fewe or feble grapes in the same  
 Have growe. A grete laboure is to correcte  
 A molde in this maner that is enfecte.

It is very difficult to undo the mischief arising from bad seed, though credit may be gained by the size of the vines thus reared.

<sup>1</sup> crates.<sup>2</sup> nolo.<sup>3</sup> pono.

## 43.

Let the land face the south and east where it is cold, and let not the sun be kept off by hills. In hot regions choose the north.

- Thy landes is thus to cheese in costes colde ;  
 296 On south and este se that it faire enclyne,  
 And that noone hille the sonne out from it holde,  
 But from the colde Septemprion declyne,  
 And from northwest there chylling sonnes shyne.  
 300 In coostes hoothe Septemtrion thou take,  
 Ther fruyte and high plesaunce and helthes wake.

## 44.

Seethat the water be good where you dwell. It is not safe to live near a marsh, especially if (the south) and west winds dry and harden it.

- And se the floode be goode ther thou will duelle ;  
 For ofte of it exaleth myst impure :  
 304 And fle ther from, in caas it myght the quelle.  
 By myre also to dwelle it is not sure,  
 And namely and West that drie<sup>1</sup> and dure  
 In season hoothe, for causes pestilent  
 308 Engendring there, and wormes violent.

## 45.

Let your house be in proportion to your income, and let it stand rather high, so as to be cheerful, firm, and dry.

- Thyne house as wol thi fortune and thi felde  
 Lete make it up in crafte and in mesure,  
 It to repaire as may thi lande foryelde,  
 312 Demened so that yf mysseaventure  
 For do thin house, a year or two recure<sup>2</sup>  
 It at the mest, and sette it sumdele hie,  
 For gladsum and for sadder ground and drie.

## 46.

Let the foundation extend half a foot beyond the wall; but see whether it be on rag-stone or rock or on clay.

- 316 The fundament enlarge it half a foote  
 Outwith<sup>3</sup> the wough, but first the grounde assay  
 If it be ragge or roche; on it thou foote<sup>4</sup>  
 In depth a foote or two; but uppon clay  
 320 If thou wilt bilde an other is the array;—  
 Let delve and cast it up until thou fynde  
 It herde and hoole, and tough itself to bynde.

<sup>1</sup> arent et indurant verbum.

<sup>2</sup> recuret verbum est.

<sup>3</sup> extra parietem.

<sup>4</sup> fundare.

## 47.

- With orchard, and with gardeyne, or with mede,  
 324 Se that thyne hous with hem be umviroune,  
 The side in longe upon the south thou sprede,  
 The cornel ryse upon the wynter sonne,  
 And gire it from the cold West yf thou conne,  
 328 Thus shall thyne hous be wynter warm and light,  
 And somer colde, and lo this crafte is light.

Let an orchard, garden, or meadow environ your house. Let the front in its whole length look to the south, its corner to the east.

## 48.

- Eke fourme it so that faire it stande yfere ;  
 The wynter wones<sup>1</sup> on the sonny side  
 332 There Phebus with his bemes may it chere,  
 And tymber stronge enlace it for to abyde,  
 Eke pave or floore it wele in somer tyde,  
 But tymber not thyne hous with dyvers kynde  
 336 Of treen, as ashe and birche, and ooke, and lynde.

The form of the house, and the arrangement of the rooms (wones) for summer and winter. The floor must not be made of various woods.

## 49.

- The mapul,<sup>2</sup> ooke, and assche<sup>3</sup> endureth longe  
 In floryng yf thou ferne it weele,<sup>4</sup> er chawe,<sup>5</sup>  
 That in the tree the mortar doo noo wronge.<sup>6</sup>  
 340 Oon parte of lyme and tweyne of robell have,  
 Sex fyngre thicke a floore therof thou pave  
 With lyme and ashes mixt with cole and sande,  
 A flake above in thiknesse of thyne hande.

Fern or chaff will prevent the mortar from injuring the floor. How to make a pavement.

## 50.

- 344 This flooring wol be blak and wynter warme,  
 And lycoure shedde, anoon it wol up drie,  
 But, lest the sonne in somer doo the harme,  
 Thy somer hous northest and west thou wrie,<sup>7</sup>  
 348 With marble or with tyle thi flooryng wrie,<sup>8</sup>  
 Or thus thou maist thi wynter flooryng take,  
 Or lyme or gravel mynge and therof make.

A summer-house should look to the north-east and west, and be floored with marble or tile. Mix lime or gravel for a winter flooring.

<sup>1</sup> domus.

<sup>2</sup> acer.

<sup>3</sup> fraxinus.

<sup>4</sup> filice sternas.

<sup>5</sup> paleis sternas.

<sup>6</sup> se putrefaciendo.

<sup>7</sup> inclines.

<sup>8</sup> operias.

## 51.

There are three kinds of dug gravel: red, white, and black. The finest is gritty.

- The bylder eke to knowe is necessarie  
 352 What gravel and what lyme is profitable.  
 Savelles dolve in III natures<sup>1</sup> varie,  
 In reed, and hoore, and blake unvariable.<sup>2</sup>  
 Of hem the reed is best, the hoor is able,  
 356 The blake is werst, yit gripe hem in thyne honde,  
 For grossyng<sup>3</sup> gravel fynest wol be fonde.

## 52.

Good gravel will not soil a cloth if cast into it. Where there is no gravel to be dug, collect it from rivers or from near the sea. Sea-gravel retains the moisture long.

- Eke preve it thus, in clothes white it kest,  
 And shaken oute yf that the clooth be clene,  
 360 Withouten spotte, that gravel is the best,  
 And yf thou may noon delve, in flood, or lene  
 Clay lande, or nygh the see, gravel thou glene.  
 The see gravel is lattest for to drie,  
 364 And lattest may thou therwith edifie.

## 53.

Use land-gravel quickly, ere sun, or wind, or showers dissolve it. Drench sea-gravel in sweet water to bring the salt out of it.

- The salt in it thi werkes wol resolve;  
 And lande<sup>4</sup> gravel anoon set<sup>5</sup> in worching,  
 Er soone or wynde or shoures<sup>6</sup> it dissolve.  
 368 And floode gravel is goode for coveryng.  
 Oute of the see gravel the salt to bringe  
 Let drenche it for a tyme in water swete.  
 Thy lyme of stones harde is thus to gete—

## 54.

Burn stone or marble to make lime. Mix two parts of lime and one of gravel, and a third part of marl in river gravel will make it very firm.

- 372 Stone tiburtyne, or floody columbyne,  
 -Or spongy rede, lete brenne, or marble stone,  
 For bylding better is the harder myne,<sup>7</sup>  
 The fistulose and softer lete it goone  
 376 To cover with, and tweyne<sup>8</sup> of lyme in oon<sup>9</sup>  
 Of gravel mynge,<sup>10</sup> and marl<sup>11</sup> in floode gravel  
 A thriddendele wol sadde it wonder wel.

<sup>1</sup> colours.    <sup>2</sup> This is notable.    <sup>3</sup> stridens.    <sup>4</sup> quæ fossilis est.    <sup>5</sup> pone.  
<sup>6</sup> imbres.    <sup>7</sup> minera.    <sup>8</sup> partes.    <sup>9</sup> pars.    <sup>10</sup> misce.    <sup>11</sup> crete.

## 55.

- Thi walles bricke with brik thou must corone  
 380 A foote aboute, and sumdel promyent,  
 That thay by storme or rayne be not fordone,  
 And lete hem drie er thou thi bemes bent,  
 Or rovyng sette uppon, lest all be shent  
 384 For lacke of crafte, eke this is husbondrie  
 To covert hem with sumwhat whille thay drie.

Brick walls should be surmounted with a brick coping. Let them be dry before you place beams or roofing upon them.

## 56.

- Make light ynough aboute on everie syde,  
 And loke, as the is taught, that este and west  
 388 And north and southe thyne houses thou devyde,  
 In wynter south, in veer and hervest est;  
 Septemtrion in summer houseth best;  
 And half as high thy chambre and triclyne  
 392 Thou make as it is mesure long in lyne.

Let the house be light, and stand duly to the four quarters, the rooms half as high as long.

## 57.

- Of suche a stuffe as easy is to fynde  
 Is best to bilde, and bordes of cipresse  
 Plaine and directe upsette hem in thaire kynde  
 396 A foot atwynne, and hem togedre dresse  
 With jenyper, boxe, olyve, or cupresse,  
 So worching up thi woves by and by,  
 But se that it be tymbred myghtely.

Build of such wood as is at hand—the uprights of cypress, a foot apart, dressed with juniper, box, olive, or cypress. Let the walls be strongly timbered.

## 58.

- 400 Fatte reed<sup>1</sup> of myre<sup>2</sup> yground<sup>3</sup> and tempered tough,  
 Let daube it on the wough on iche asyde,  
 And with a trowel make it plaine yo,  
 That it upon the tymbre fast abyde,  
 404 Lyme and gravel comyxt thereon thou glide,  
 With marble greet ygrounde and myxt with lyme  
 Polisse alle uppe thy werke in goodly tyme.

Daub the wall with marsh-reed mixed with lime and gravel, and polish it with ground marble.

<sup>1</sup> crassa cana.

<sup>2</sup> palude.

<sup>3</sup> contusa.

## 59.

To prepare lime  
for whitewash-  
ing.

- Eke whityng werk is thyng of grete delite.  
408 Lime is for that in tymes long made lene ;  
That it be profitable preve astite;<sup>1</sup>  
As tymber hewe it with an axe and sene<sup>2</sup>  
Yf it be not in the egge,<sup>3</sup> and sum sustene  
412 In the axe<sup>4</sup> all gliry<sup>5</sup> tough and softe relente ;  
For whytyng that lyme is convenient.

## 60.

The plaster to be  
made strong and  
bright with a  
trowel; one coat  
to be dry before  
another is added.

- The parget of thi wough be stronge and bright,  
The truel firste ful ofte it must distreyne,  
416 And as it drieth efte and efte it dight ;  
The kirtils doo theron of marble greyne,  
But first lete oon be drie, and thenne engreyne  
A smaller coote above on that, and thenne  
420 A thridde on alle as small as it may renne.

## 61.

Beware of build-  
ing on low  
ground, and if  
there be nospring  
or well, have a  
cistern.

- And ware a thyng that many men have used,  
To drenche her dwellyngplace in dales deep,  
Lest water sholde hem lacke, and foule excused,  
424 For helth is rather thenne thi lust to kepe ;  
The languor of thi lande is to bywepe.  
In stede of Welle or wynche have a cisterne  
And rayne of ever hous in it gouverne.

## 62.

Make it as high  
as you like, put  
tile-paving over  
it, and rub it well  
with boiled lard.

- 428 Let crafte it up pleasaunt as it may suffice  
Unto thi self, as best is broode and longe.<sup>6</sup>  
The guttures<sup>7</sup> left in sadde ground, assise  
And yole<sup>8</sup> on it tilpavyng<sup>9</sup> playne and stronge.  
432 This pavyng must thou cure and labovre longe<sup>10</sup>  
And clere it up, but frote it wol with larde  
Fatte and decocte ; thi werk wol the rewarde.

<sup>1</sup> mox.    <sup>2</sup> expectet.    <sup>3</sup> acie.    <sup>4</sup> ascia.    <sup>5</sup> glutinosa.    <sup>6</sup> longum.  
<sup>7</sup> fusoriis relictis.    <sup>8</sup> fundas.    <sup>9</sup> testaceum pavimentum.    <sup>10</sup> diu.



## 63.

- Whenne that is drie, upwalle it every side  
 436 In like maner, eke larde it, herdde it weel,  
 Tyl water wol endwelle it and abyde,  
 And fede in it thi waterfish and eel,  
 To move and make it faire and fresh as well,  
 440 As though it were a ryver or a welle.  
 Now chenes<sup>1</sup> to repaire I am to telle.

Do the same with the walls, till it is hard enough to hold water, and you may keep fish in it as if it were a river.

## 64.

- The chenes, holes, pottes, poles mende,  
 And thorough the stoone yf that the water synke,  
 444 Take pitche<sup>2</sup> and talgh, as nede is the to spende,  
 And seeth hem tyl thai boile up to the brynke,  
 And let it coole; eke give it lyme to drynke  
 A lite and lite and smal, but mynge it yorne,<sup>3</sup>  
 448 Tyl every parte until oon body tourne.

To stop holes, etc., in the cistern make a cement of pitch and tallow, and keep mixing lime with it.

## 65.

- Whenne this cyment is made, it must in synke  
 Uche hole, and chene, and every lekyng stoone,  
 And presse it thicke aboute on every brynke;  
 452 And holsum is that pipes from it goone,  
 To bringe aboute in water oon by oon,  
 To drynke of this of waters first and best,  
 Licoure of grace above, a thyng celest.

Let pipes go from the cistern to carry the water to drink.

## 66.

- Thi wyne celar in colde Septemtrion  
 Wel derk and ferre from bathes, oste, and stable,  
 Myddyng, cisterne, and thynges everichoon  
 That evel smelle; eke se that it be able  
 460 As for thi fruyt, an other thyng notable,  
 Above it well the calcatory make,  
 A wyne pitte the oon half either to take.

The wine cellar to be to the north, away from bad smells, and large enough for the fruit, with a wine-press above,

<sup>1</sup> rimas.<sup>2</sup> picem.<sup>3</sup> sæpe.

## 67.

ascended by steps.  
Let pipes lead to  
the vat, and let  
there be a pit for  
the waste,

- Thre grece or IIII is up therto to goo;  
464 Caneln or pipes wynes forth to lede  
Into the vat, and tonnes make also,  
And pave it yf the lyst in length and brede.  
A pitte in it, for wynes white and rede  
468 That over renne of ignoraunt keypynge,  
To make is oon goode poynte of husbondyng.

## 68.

The barns to be  
sweet and high,  
with a hard floor  
two foot thick.  
A place for every  
kind of corn.

- Thi barnes fer fro stynk and sumdele hie,  
Thi stable ferre away therfro thou sette,  
472 Eke se that thay be wyndy, colde, and drie,  
Thi berne also be playne, and harde the flette,  
And footes two to thicke it thou ne lette,  
For every corne a place is to devyse,  
476 As large as for thi tylling wol suffice.

## 69.

The granary to  
be high, and its  
walls plastered  
with oil-dregs,  
clay, and olive-  
leaves.

- Thi garner and thi vessel for thi grayne  
Make sumdele high, and walle it thus to thryve:  
Oyldregges mixt with clay thou must implayne  
480 Thi woves with, and leves of olyve,  
In stede of chaf upon thi woves dryve,  
And drie it wel, and then oyldregge it efte,  
And saufly may thi whete in it be lefte.

## 70.

So you get rid of  
weevils and other  
noisome beasts.  
Coriander-leaves  
prevent the wheat  
from sweating.

- 484 This maner crafte wol holde oute of thi whete  
Gurgolions and other noyus bestes,  
The coriander leves, lest it swete,  
Is putte therin, an other crafte unleest is;  
488 From floor to floor to chaunge it ofte his feest is.  
Coniza is an herbe, as Greekes sayne,  
That drie is goode to kest under thi grayne.



## 71.

- Thyne oilcellar sette on the somer syde,  
 492 Holde out the cold and lette come in the sonne  
 At hooles, so that in the wynter tyde  
 Thyne oil with esy pressure out be wonne.  
 Oilmylles, wheelles, wrynges, not begonne  
 496 Of newe I nyl not speke of nowe, but clene  
 Thyne oyle's receptacles thou demene.

The oil-cellar to be on the south. The receptacles of the oil to be kept clean.

## 72.

- Men may also doon other diligence  
 Aboute an oylcellar, it for to warme,  
 500 The pament under thorled and suspense  
 Bete under fyre, so smoke it may not harme,  
 A dell, and hete eke wol thi hous enarme,  
 As from the swerde of wynter kene and colde.  
 504 Now husbondrie for stables write I wolde.

An oil-cellar may be warmed by flues underneath.

## 73.

- Towards the southe thi stable and thi stall  
 For hors and neet thou sette, and gette in light  
 Oute of the north, and wynterclose it all  
 508 To holde outte colde. In summer yeve it sight  
 Thi hous to cole, and nygh thi bestes dight  
 A fire in colde; it wol thyne oxen mende,  
 And make hem faire, yf thai the fyre attende.

Stables and stalls for oxen to be towards the south. Make a fire for them in the winter.

## 74.

- 512 For harming of thaire hoof eke sette hem drie,  
 And for iche yoke of exon in thi plough  
 VIII foote in brede, and goodly length outtrie,  
 The length as from the horne unto the sough,  
 516 The brede is crosse, and plank it stronge ynough  
 Under thyne hors, that it be lygging softe  
 Ynough, and harde enough to stande alofte.

Not to harm the hoofs, set them in a dry place. Allow eight feet in breadth for each yoke of oxen. Horses require strong planks.

## 75.

A shed for cattle on the south to be covered with shingles, tiles, broom, or sedge.

- Elke on the south thou make an hous for bestes,  
 520 But over hoote attemperate to holde  
 A pointe of husbondrie not this the leest is,  
 Of forkes, and of borde, and bowes colde  
 A standyng must be made, and overfolde  
 524 And heled weel with shyngul, tile, or broom,<sup>1</sup>  
 Or segges are as good as to my doom.

## 76.

Mews for birds, whose dung is necessary for the land except that of the goose.

- This hous aboute also make up thi mewes,  
 For dounge of foules is ful necessarie  
 528 To londtillynge ; yit gooses donnge eschew is,  
 It is right nought, it is an adversarie  
 To every seed, now everie birdde hem warie !  
 Fy on you, gees ; fy on your tail for shame !  
 532 Your dounge is nought, turn out your taille of game.

## 77.

The dove-cote to be in a tower away from the dwelling-house. It is good to scatter old broom with which shoes are made for oxen, amongst doves.

- And in a toure with plaine and whited walles  
 And fenestelles IIII, a columbaire,  
 As is the gyse, away from there thyne halle is  
 536 Lete sette, as doves may therto repaire,  
 And inwith make hem nestes many a paire.  
 Olde spartea, that bestes with beth shode,  
 To sprynge amonge the doves is ful goode.

## 78.

It will be a charm against weasels ; so will the rope with which a man has been hanged.

- 540 The wesel shal for this doon hem noon harme,  
 So it be doon secré that noo man see.  
 Yit for the wesel use another charme,  
 Sum of the roope wherwith hath strangled be  
 544 Sum men, pray God lette it be never the,  
 Hang part of that in every fenestell,  
 And this wol from the wesel wite hem well.

<sup>1</sup> genesta.

## 79.

- Gyf hem comyne ynough, and barme her pennes,  
 548 And doves moo ynough in wol thay brynge;  
 And yf thou wolt have many briddes thennes,  
 Let barly bake, or bene, or fitches flynge  
 Afore hem ofte, also for her helping  
 552 Let honge aboute in dyvers places rewe,  
 And bestes adversannt hem wol eschewe.

Give them cum-  
 min, and rub  
 their wings with  
 balsam. Let them  
 have baked bar-  
 ley, beans, or  
 vetches, and hang  
 rue about.

## 80.

- Under thi colver hous in alle the brede  
 Make mewes tweyne, oon litel and obscure,  
 556 With whete and mylde in that thi turtours fede,  
 In somer faat ynough with litel cure:  
 But boile it in sweetness, and oon mesure  
 A strike is for vi<sup>xx</sup> oon daies mete,  
 560 But water ofte refreshhed do hem gete.

Under the whole  
 breadth of the  
 dove-cot make  
 two mewes: in one  
 feed doves with  
 wheat and millet.  
 A strike is enough  
 for six score.

## 81.

- And thrushes fede upon that other syde;  
 To faat hem is avayling and plesaunte;  
 But make this house wherin thay shal abyde  
 564 Light, elene, and playne with perches transversannte  
 To sitte upon, and bowes in to chaunte  
 Ychanged ofte; eke yeve hem figges grounde  
 Comyxt with flour to make hem faat and rounde.

In the other feed  
 thrushes. Let  
 them have trans-  
 verse perches and  
 fresh boughs to  
 sing in. Fatten  
 them with ground  
 figs and flour.

## 82.

- 568 The seed of mirt, if that thou maist it gete,  
 Of birch, of yvy, crabbe, and wild olyve  
 Lete yeve hem nowe and nowe for channge of mete;  
 With channged water ofte. Eke fressh as blyve  
 572 As thai be take unhurt, with IIII or v  
 Of thrushes tamed, putte hem in this mewe,  
 To doo disport among thees gestes newe.

Seed of myrtle,  
 birch, ivy, crab,  
 and wild olive is  
 good for a change;  
 Put in with those  
 newly caught  
 four or five tame  
 thrushes.

## 83.

Women know how to set hens. The black are best, the white are worst, yellow are good. Lees of wine make them barren.

What woman cannot sette an hen on broode  
 576 And bryng her briddes forth? the crafte is lite,  
 But ashes smoke and dust is for hem goode.  
 Eke best are hennes blake, and werst are white,  
 And good are yolgh: but yf thaire appetite  
 580 With draff of wyne be fedde anoon bareyne  
 Thei beth: for thi therfrom thou hem refreyne.

## 84.

Two cruses of half-boiled barley is one day's food for a hen at large. Place an odd number of eggs under a hen when the moon is between ten and fifteen days.

Wol thou thai often hache and eyron grete  
 Thai legge? Half boiled barly thou hem bringe,  
 584 Twey cruses<sup>1</sup> in oon day oon hennes mete  
 That gothe atte large, and odde<sup>2</sup> eyron in springe  
 Of echates<sup>3</sup> under thynne hen sittyng  
 To putte, as whenne the moone is daies dene<sup>4</sup>  
 588 Of age is good, and til she be fiftene.

## 85.

To cure the pip, slip off a pellet from the tongue with your nail, and cast ashes on the wound, and put garlic, alum, and oil in the mouth.

And other while an hen wol have the pippe,  
 A white pellet that wol the tonge enrounde,  
 And softely of wol with thi nailes slippe  
 592 Anoon, and askes after on the wounde  
 Thou kest, and clense it, ley on garlic grounde,  
 Ground alom eke with oile put in her mouthes.

. . . . .

## 86.

Staphis agria, or stavesacre, will heal the tongue. Remove a horny substance from the eye with a needle or pin.

As staphisagre medled in thaire mete  
 Wol hele her tonng, another maladie  
 Wol ryse of soure lupyne, if thai it ete,  
 As cornes that wol under growe her eye,  
 600 That but thou lete hem oute, the sight wol die.  
 All esely thou maist undo the skynne  
 With prikyng of a nelde or a pynne.

<sup>1</sup> ciati.<sup>2</sup> imparia.<sup>3</sup> lune.<sup>4</sup> x.

## 87.

- Take woman's mylke and juce of portulake,  
 604 And therwith thou maist hele her eghen sore,  
 Or hony, myxt with salt armonyake  
 And comyn evenly, is goode therfore.  
 And yf thyne hen be lousy, there is more,  
 608 Eke luys with staphisagre and comyn  
 Igrounde in wyne and juce of soure lupyn.

Other remedies  
 for sore eyes.  
 Destroy lice with  
 stavesacre and  
 cummin ground  
 in wine and juice  
 of lupin.

## 88.

- The pokok men may rere up esily  
 Yf bestes wilde or theves hem ne greve.  
 612 Her briddes wol thai fede up besily  
 In feldes forth, and up thai wol atte eve  
 Into a tree lest thai by nyght myscheve.  
 But warre the fox, as while thai sitte on brode  
 616 To sette in an Ilande were ful goode.

The peacock eas-  
 ily reared. Be-  
 ware of the fox  
 at the time of  
 brooding.

## 89.

- And for a cok beth hennes v ynowe;  
 The Cok his eyron and his briddes hateth,  
 Until the crest upon thaire hedes growe,  
 620 And first in Feverer of love he prateth.  
 And benes bake alite his love abateth  
 Right nere adell, yf that he ete hem warme,  
 For thei wol rather his courage enarme.

The peacock  
 hates his eggs  
 and chicks until  
 their crest be  
 grown.

## 90.

- 624 The cok confesseth emynent cupide  
 When he his gemmy tail begynneth splay  
 About himself so faire on every side,  
 That never foul was in so fresh array.  
 628 A shuddering, a flusshing, and affray  
 He maketh thenne, and turneth him aboute  
 All golde begoon his tail and wynges stoute.

He confesses love  
 when he displays  
 his tail and wings.



## 91.

If her eggs are placed under another hen, the peahen will lay three times a year. Set a hen on nine eggs, four of her own and five of the peahen.

- The pohen eke excused, yf men sette  
 632 Another henne her eyron forth to brynge,  
 Wol legge in oon yere thries dewe as dette,  
 V atte the frist and IIII at efte legginge,  
 And after III or II; but for bredynge  
 636 To set an hen on eyron IX is goode,  
 IV of her kynde, and v of other bloode.

## 92.

Do this on the first of the month. On the tenth take away the four and substitute four others, and be careful to turn them.

- The first day of the moone is this to doo,  
 The x<sup>th</sup> day the IIII away betake,  
 640 And other IIII enscore her place into.  
 To tourne hem ofte also good hede thou take,  
 For she may not the turnyng undertake.  
 Yet take for that a stronge hen and a grete :  
 644 A litel hen on fewer must be sette.

## 93.

They hatch on the thirtieth day. Columella says a hen may feed twenty-five chicks.

- The xxx day goth al<sup>1</sup> out of the shelle,  
 And oon norice<sup>2</sup> may xxv lede.  
 So say not I, but so saith Columelle ;—  
 648 XV I sey suffice oon henne to fede.  
 And first for hem spring wynes white or rede,  
 On barly seede, or puls decoct and colde  
 To yeve hem frist is good and holsum holde.

## 94.

In addition to other food give them locusts without the feet for six months.

- 652 And after hacked leek or tender cheses  
 Lete fede hem with, but whey thou holde hem fro ;  
 Ek pluck away the feet and yeve hem breses ;<sup>3</sup>  
 And monethes vi it is to fede hem so ;  
 656 And after geve him barly to and to  
 Right as the list, but xxx dayes olde  
 Thai with thaire norce into the felde betolde.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> pulli.    <sup>2</sup> gallina.    <sup>3</sup> locustas.    <sup>4</sup> mandentur.

## 95.

She<sup>1</sup> nowe behinde, and nowe she goth before,  
 660 And clocketh hem, but when she fynt a corne,  
 She chicheth hem and loith it hem before,  
 Hem ledyng home atte nyght lest thai be lorne.  
 Eke hele hem of the pippe as is beforne  
 664 Of hennes taught; but when thaire crestes springe  
 As seke are thay as children in tothinge.

The care of the hen for her chicks, which, when their crestes spring, are as sick as children at teething.

## 96.

Fesanntes up to bringe is thus to doo :  
 Take noon but of oon yere; for, infecunde  
 668 Are olde; and frist in marche uppon thai goo  
 Her vyves; but the males not abounde  
 In coitu, though thai be faat and rounde;  
 A cok for hennes tweyne, and every hen  
 672 Wol ones sitte on eyron twies ten.

To bring up pheasants. Have two hens to each cock. The hen will sit on twenty eggs.

## 97.

A commune henne may weel uppon xv  
 Of hem be sette, and of her owen a fewe.  
 And change hem as before atte daies dene.  
 676 At xxx daies ende oute wol thai shewe.  
 Frist fede them daies thries v arewe  
 With barly coct and colde, and wyne besprong,  
 And after bresed whete and breses longe.

A common hen will sit upon fifteen pheasant's eggs. They hatch in thirty days. Feed them fifteen days on boiled barley sprinkled with wine; afterwards with bruised wheat and locusts.

## 98.

Annt eyron yeve hem eke, and kepe hem fro  
 The water for the pippe, and if it have hem,  
 With garlic stamped weel and tar therto  
 Her bekes froted ofte and sadde wol save hem,  
 684 Her tonnges eke right as an hen to shave hem,  
 And right as hennes heel her maladie  
 Is goode; to fatte hem eke is husbandrie.

Give them also ants' eggs. To rub their beaks with garlic and tar will cure the pip.

<sup>1</sup> gallina.



## 99.

A strike of wheat or half a strike of barley mixed with oil and made into cakes will fatten them in thirty days.

- With wheet a strike, or other half a strike  
 688 Of barly mele enoyled,<sup>1</sup> offed lite,<sup>2</sup>  
 In dayes thries ten thowe make hem slyke  
 And fatte ynough, so that her appetite  
 Be served weel, and that noon offes white  
 692 Englayme uppon the rootes of her tonnge ;  
 For that and hunger sleth thees briddes young.

## 100.

The goose is fed on grass and water. Take one male for three females. You may deplume them twice a year.

- The goos with grasse and water up is brought,  
 To plant and tree an opon foo<sup>3</sup> is she,  
 696 Her bityng harmeth corne, her donnge<sup>4</sup> is nought ;  
 Take for oon male of hem females thre,  
 And twies a yere deplumed may thai be ;  
 In sprynging tyme and harvest tyme ; eke make  
 700 For hem, yf other water wonte,<sup>5</sup> a lake.<sup>6</sup>

## 101.

Other food for geese. The skew-bald and brown are not so productive as the white, coming of the wild kind. Set them from the first of March till the longest day.

- For wonte<sup>7</sup> of grasse on trefoil<sup>8</sup> lette hem bite,  
 On gouldes<sup>9</sup> wilde,<sup>10</sup> or letuce,<sup>11</sup> grekysh hay.<sup>12</sup>  
 The skewed<sup>13</sup> goos, the brune goose as the white  
 704 Is not fecounde. And why? For as thai say  
 Oute of the kynde of wilde gees cam thay.  
 Fro Marche kalendes gees to sette on broode  
 Until the day be lengest is ful goode.

## 102.

The goose's eggs may be placed under a hen, but that they may not be injured, put nettles with them.

- 708 An hen upon thaire eyron maist thou sette,  
 As of the pocok saide is all before,  
 But lest this hennes eyron sholde ought lette,  
 Ley netteles under with, and evermore  
 712 The laughter last : unto the modres lore  
 Is to be lefte that thai may with her children  
 Laugh and be gladde, as with hem were here eldron.

<sup>1</sup> oleo sparsi.<sup>2</sup> in offulas reducti.<sup>3</sup> inimica.<sup>4</sup> stercus.<sup>5</sup> lack.<sup>6</sup> lacunam.<sup>7</sup> defectu.<sup>8</sup> trifolium.<sup>9</sup> intubis.<sup>10</sup> agrestibus.<sup>11</sup> lactuca.<sup>12</sup> græco fæno.<sup>13</sup> varii coloris.

## 103.

- Ten daies first lete hem be fedde withynne ;  
 716 And thenne, is Wedir faire, doo forth hem lede ;  
 But netles war, from hem thi briddes twynne,  
 And fatte hem xxx daies olde for nede ;  
 Atte moneths foure alle fatte thou maist hem fede,  
 720 Flour thries a day ; and lette hem not goo large ;  
 In warme and derk to clese hem I the charge.

Feed them in-  
doors for ten  
days ; then take  
them out in fine  
weather, and fat-  
ten them at thirty  
days. Enclose  
them in a warm  
and dark place.

## 104.

- Eke mylde is goode also in every mete,  
 All manner puls is goode, the fitche outetake.  
 724 Swyne heres Brustels kepe hem lest thay ete.  
 Two parties branne with flour thees Grekes take  
 With water hote comyxt ; also thai make  
 Her water thries freshed every day ;  
 728 And ones in the nyght. This is no nay.

Millet is good for  
them, and all kind  
of pulse except  
vetches.

## 105.

- Yf thou desirest that thi gees be tender ;  
 When thai in age be passed xxx daies,  
 Of figges grounde and water tempered slender  
 732 Gobbettes<sup>1</sup> yeve thi gees. <sup>2</sup>But these arayes  
 To speke of here for nought but myrth and play is ;  
 Yit as myne auctor spak, so wolde I speke,  
 Seth I translate, and loth am fro him breke.

Ground figs and  
water make geese  
fat. So says the  
Author, and the  
Translator is loth  
to break from  
him.

## 106.

- 736 This doon, is other thinges for to doo :  
 Two stewes must thou make in erthe or stoone,  
 Not fer from home, and bryng water therto  
 Of sprynge, or rayne for water foul<sup>3</sup> that oon  
 740 To swymme, also thi bestes to togoon ;  
 That other wete in hides,<sup>4</sup> yerdes drie,  
 Lupyne, and other thing for husbandrie.

Make two stewes ;  
one for water-  
fowl, the other  
to wet hides in,  
and dry twigs,  
lupins, etc.

<sup>1</sup> offulas.    <sup>2</sup> Autor loqr.    <sup>3</sup> avibus aquaticis.    <sup>4</sup> madefacias coria.

## 107.

In housing hay,  
chaff, timber, and  
reeds be careful  
against fire.

- For hay, for chaf, for tymber, and for redes  
744 Make housyng as the list; it is noo charge;<sup>1</sup>  
In drie and wyndie places there noo drede is  
Of brennyng hem, and for that alle atte large  
Away from home ordeyn hem I the charge.  
748 A fyre is foul affray in thinges drie.  
And now for dounge an other husbondrie :

## 108.

The dunghill to  
be out of sight  
and smell. Asses'  
dung is best for  
gardens, next  
sheep's, then  
goat's and neat's.

- The myddyng, sette it wete as it may rote,  
And saver nought, eke sette it oute of sight;  
752 The seed of thorn in it wol dede and dote.  
Thyne asses dounge is rathest for to dight  
A garden with; sheep dounge is next of myght;  
And after goot and neet; eke hors and mares;  
756 But dounge of swyne the werst of all thees ware is.

## 109.

Ashes are good,  
and no dung of  
fowls is so hot as  
doves except the  
quest. Dung for  
corn not to be  
more than a year  
old. Sea-slime  
good to mix with  
other manure.

- Askes beth goode, and so hoot is noo dounge  
Of foule as of the douve, a quysht outake,  
And oon-yere old is nought for herbes yonge  
760 And goode for corne; but elder thou forsake,  
Fresh dounge is best thi medes with to make;  
Seeslyme al fresshe ywesh, and slyme of floode  
With other dounge ymedled is right goode.

## 110.

Place your garden  
so that it may  
have the benefit  
of the dunghill,  
and the water  
may run off from  
it. If you have  
not a well, dig a  
tank or a stew.

- 764 Thi garden and thyne orchard, sette hem nygh.  
The garden from thi mydding softe enclyne,  
That juce of that amonge thyne herbes sigh;  
And water in sum stede away declynē.  
768 Eke yf the lacke a welle, a winche enmyne;  
And if thou may not soo, lette make a stewe  
With rayne water thyne herbes to renewe.

<sup>1</sup> non refert.

## 111.

- And yf that help it not, lete delve it depe  
 772 Three foote or foure, in wyse of pastynynge,  
 That it may in itself his moister kepe.  
 And every lande, although a man may brynge  
 With help of dongyng hit into tylling,  
 776 Yit is the chalk or claylonde for to eschew,  
 And from the rede also thi garth remewe.

Or dig the ground  
 three or four feet  
 deep. Every soil  
 may be brought  
 by manure into  
 tillage; yet chalk  
 and clay and red  
 land is to be  
 avoided.

## 112.

- Eke yf thi garth be drie in his nature,  
 Depart it, and in wynter southward delve  
 780 Hit uppe, and in the somer doo this cure,  
 Upon Septemtrion to overwhelpe  
 Hit upsodowne; thus wol hit save it selve.  
 The garth eke closed is in dyvers wyse;  
 784 Dyversed wittes dyversely devyse.

If your garden  
 be dry, divide it,  
 and in winter dig  
 the south side;  
 in summer the  
 north.

## 113.

- Hym liketh best a daubed wough, and he  
 Wol have a wall of clay and stoon, and stones  
 Withouten clay an other wol it be;  
 788 A nother with a diche aboute ygone is;  
 War that, for that the werst of everichon is.  
 That diche wol drie up thi humours of thi londe,  
 Yit yf thi garth be myree, a diche may stonde.

Different tastes  
 with respect to  
 garden walls. The  
 worst is to let a  
 ditch surround  
 your garden, un-  
 less it be miry  
 ground.

## 114.

- Oon planteth thorns, an other soueth seedes;  
 But bremble seede<sup>1</sup> and seed of houndes thorn<sup>2</sup>  
 Doo weel, and geder that as ripe as nede is;  
 With fitches flour, ywatered well beforne,  
 796 Lete medled all this seede, lest it be lorn.  
 In ropes kepe this confect meddissyng  
 Until the time of veer or of spryngyng.

Sow bramble seed  
 and hounds-thorn  
 for a good fence.  
 Keep the seed  
 mixed with flour  
 of vetches within  
 ropes until  
 spring.

<sup>1</sup> rubi, v mori, v bati.

<sup>2</sup> rubum caninum.

## 115.

Then plough a double furrow a foot deep, and inclose these ropes under light mould.

- Thenne eree a double forowe III foote a sonder,  
 800 As ferre as thou wolt close, and deep a foote ;  
 This ropes with thi seedes cloos hem under  
 Light moolde aboute, and on anoon lete wrote.  
 This doon, at twenty daies end a roote<sup>1</sup>  
 804 In erthe, a branch in aier wol reche aboute.  
 Now rayle hem, and of closure is noo doute.

## 116.

Let spring dig if autumn is to sow, and *vice versa*, so that each side may have the benefit of heat and cold.

- Lete veer goo delve, yf hervest shall go sowe ;  
 If veer shall sowe it, hervest must go delve ;  
 808 So shall her eitheres werke been overblowe  
 With colde or hootte under the signes twelve.  
 Mark oute thi tables,<sup>2</sup> ichon by hem selve,  
 Sixe foote in brede and XII in length is best  
 812 To clense and make on evry side honest.

## 117.

In wet places make the margins two feet high, in dry places only one.

- In places wete or moist make evry brynke  
 Two foote in heght, a foote in places drie,  
 And yf thyne humour from thyne herbes synke,  
 816 Dispose it soo that it from places hie  
 Descende, and doo<sup>3</sup> thi lande to fructife ;  
 And thens to an other part procede,  
 And so to every parte, as it is nede.

## 118.

Sow and graff as they do in your neighbourhood.

- 820 To sowe and graffe although I sette a tyme,  
 Yit graffe and sowe as men doo the beside ;  
 In places cold thyne hervest sede betyme<sup>4</sup>  
 Is best to haast ; in springyng seede to abyde.  
 824 In places hootte eke chaunge her either tyde.  
 To graffe and sowe in growing of the moone,  
 And kytte and mowe in wanyng is to doon.

<sup>1</sup> radix.<sup>2</sup> beddes.<sup>3</sup> faciat.<sup>4</sup> celeriter.



119.

- For blichenyng<sup>1</sup> and myst<sup>2</sup> take chaf<sup>3</sup> and raf,<sup>4</sup>  
 828 And ley it on thi lande in dyverse stedes,  
 And when thou seest the myst, lete brenne up chaf  
 And raf, eke as for hail<sup>5</sup> a russet wede is  
 To kest upon the querne,<sup>6</sup> also it nede is  
 832 All bloody axes<sup>7</sup> bere and heven<sup>8</sup> threte  
 In hardy wyse as hym to slayne or bete.

Against mildew and mist burn chaff and rubbish. Against hail, throw a russet garment upon the wind-mill, and threaten heaven with bloody axes.

120.

- Girde eke thi garth aboute in vynes white ;  
 Or, sprad the wynges oute, sette up an oule.  
 836 Whi laugh ye so ? this crafte is not so lite.  
 Or take thi spades, rake, knyf, and shovelle  
 And evry tole in beres grees defoule,  
 Eke sum have stamped oile with grees of beres  
 840 To greece her vyne-knyf for dyveres deres.

Other remedies are white vines round the garden, or an owl with outstretched wings, or to smear the tools with bear's grease.

121.

- But that a man must doo full prively,  
 That never a warkman wite, and this is goode  
 For frost, and myst, and wormes sekirly.  
 844 But as I trust in Crist that shedde his bloode  
 For us, whos tristeth this Y holde him wode.  
 Myne auctor eke, (whoo list in him travaille !)  
 Seith this prophaned thyng may nought availe.

But no one must see it done. For the Author says mostridiculously iffit be published it is of no avail.

122.

- 848 Oil dregges fresshe for gnattes and for snayles  
 Or chambre soote is goode to kest aboute ;  
 For annes eke an oules herte availe is  
 To putte upon her bedde, and alle the route  
 852 A trayne of chalk or askes holdeth oute.  
 Thi seed with juce of rucul<sup>9</sup> or syngrene<sup>10</sup>  
 To wete<sup>11</sup> up sleth the rucul, as men wene.

Oil dregs or soot good against gnats or snails; an owl's heart on their beds against ants, or chalk and ashes; juice of rocket or horse-leek against cankerworms.

<sup>1</sup> rubigine.   <sup>2</sup> nebula.   <sup>3</sup> paleas.   <sup>4</sup> purgamenta.   <sup>5</sup> grandini.   <sup>6</sup> molam.  
<sup>7</sup> cruentas secures.   <sup>8</sup> cœlum.   <sup>9</sup> eruca.   <sup>10</sup> sempervivæ.   <sup>11</sup> madefacere.

## 123.

Divers other remedies against the rucul, or cankerworm.

- Eke figtree askes oon on rucul throweth,  
 856 An other hangeth uppe or soweth squylle,<sup>1</sup>  
 The thridde among his wortes chitches soweth,  
 For wondres fele and, he saith, as to kille  
 The rucul and fele other thinges ille,  
 860 A menstruous ungerd wommon, unshod  
 Untressed eke, about to goone is goode.

## 124.

River-crabs crucified are also a remedy; also to anoint the pruning-knife with oil in which cantharides have been left to rot.

- Floode crabbes here and ther to crucifie,  
 He seth, is goode; but bestes forto sle  
 864 That dooth thi vynes harm let sle the flie,  
 The cantharide in roses that we se;  
 Put hem in oile, and roton when thai be,  
 The vyne if thou shalt kytte enointe aforn  
 868 The knyf with this; for this craft is noo scorn.

## 125.

For gnats oil-dreggs and ox-galls are good, or oil and ground ivy, or water-leeches burnt. That worms devour not thy colewort dry the seeds in the skin of tortoise, or grow mint with it.

- Oile dregges and oxe galle is goode for gnattes,  
 So that the beddes therwith thou enoynte,  
 Eke oile and yvy grounde is goode as that is,  
 872 Or waterleches brende an other point is.  
 Thi wortes that the wermes not disyoint,<sup>2</sup>  
 The seedes in a tortous<sup>3</sup> skynne<sup>4</sup> thou drie,  
 Or mynte among thi cool thou multiplie.

## 126.

Bruised vetches, rape, or henbane, mixed with vinegar, will kill the cabbage-worm. The stink of the scales of headless garlic burnt destroys caterpillars.

- Eke fitches brese, of hem thair radishsh<sup>5</sup> springeth,  
 Or rape,<sup>6</sup> or thus take juce of henbane  
 With soure aysell, and hem togeder mengeth,  
 And kest hem on your cool in every pane;  
 880 Ereither wol be worterwormes<sup>7</sup> bane.  
 Brenne her and ther the heedles garlic sceles,  
 The stynke of it for hockes<sup>8</sup> help and hele is.

<sup>1</sup> squillam.    <sup>2</sup> se destruant.    <sup>3</sup> testudinis.    <sup>4</sup> corio.    <sup>5</sup> radix.  
<sup>6</sup> rapa,    <sup>7</sup> publicū olerum (*sic*: but quære "pulices.")    <sup>8</sup> contra campas.



## 127.

- Thi vyne knyf with garlic forto frote  
 884 Is goode, eke cley<sup>1</sup> and brymstone<sup>2</sup> yf me brenne  
 About a vyne, anoon this hockes rote,  
 Or hocke in water yf men seethe, and thenne  
 About in all thi garden do it renne,  
 888 It sleth the hocke, but bring it from withoute  
 Myne auctor saith, fro sum garth nygh aboute.

Other remedies  
 against the hock  
 or caterpillar.

## 128.

- Upon the whetstoon sle the cantaride,  
 The cantaride a vyne yf she enfeste;<sup>3</sup>  
 892 And Democrite<sup>4</sup> he saith that mys betyde  
 Shal neither seede nor tree by worme, or beest,  
 Of flood, or see, x crabbes<sup>5</sup> yf thou kest  
 With water in an erthen potte ywrie<sup>6</sup>  
 896 Ten daies throuth<sup>7</sup> until the vapur die.

Slay the cantha-  
 ride on the whet-  
 stone, and De-  
 mocritus recom-  
 mends to cast ten  
 crabs with water  
 in an earthen  
 pot ten days out  
 of doors.

## 129.

- And herbe or tree to moiste in the licour  
 Iche viiith day is suffisaunt, saith he,  
 To heel and helpe hem forth in fruite and flour,  
 900 But holde aye on it holpon til thou see.  
 Pysmires yit yf thou wol make hem flee  
 Kest origane ystamped with brymstoone  
 Uppon thaire hoole, and oute thay flee anoone.

Or moisten a  
 herb or tree with  
 it every eight  
 days. To kill pis-  
 mires cast ori-  
 gane and brim-  
 stone upon their  
 holes,

## 130.

- 904 The same is doon with cokille shelles brente;  
 Eke brymstoon and galbane oute chaseth gnattes,<sup>8</sup>  
 Also the fleen<sup>9</sup> wol sleyn on thi payment  
 Oildregges ofte yspronge, eke myse and rattes  
 908 This dregges mo may sle than dooth thi cattes,  
 So it be thicke and poured in a ponne,<sup>10</sup>  
 The mous by nyghtertale on it wol fonne.

or burnt cockle-  
 shells; brimstone  
 and galbanum  
 destroys gnats;  
 oildregs poured  
 into a pan will  
 slay more rats  
 and mice than a  
 cat.

<sup>1</sup> bitumen.<sup>2</sup> sulphur.<sup>3</sup> noceat.<sup>4</sup> ille auctor.<sup>5</sup> cancos.<sup>6</sup> cooperta.<sup>7</sup> subdivo.<sup>8</sup> culices.<sup>9</sup> pulices.<sup>10</sup> patina.

## 131.

Black hellebore, mixed with bread, cheese, or flour, will kill them, as will wild cucumber and colocynth bruised; other remedies against fleas.

- Elebur blak with fatte, or brede, or chese,  
 912 Or floure comyxt and offred hem wol slen;  
 Cucumber<sup>1</sup> wilde and coloquynt<sup>2</sup> doo brese;  
 The juce will sle the myse as dyvers men  
 Have saide; A yit an other craftc sleth fleen:  
 916 Watered cucumber seede, or comyn grounde,<sup>3</sup>  
 Lupyne, or psilotre<sup>4</sup> kest on the grounde.<sup>5</sup>

## 132.

Apuleius recommends to steep all grains in ox-gall before sowing them, against field-mice, or to stop their holes with affadill.

- And for the feld mous, Apuleius<sup>6</sup>  
 Saith goode is alle his greyne in oxes galle  
 920 A man to stepe, and sowe hem thenne: eke thus  
 With affadille upclose her hooles alle;  
 Thai gnawe it oute, but dede downe shal thai falle,  
 Right forth withall thai shall it not eschewe,  
 924 The moldewarp the Grekes thus pursue:

## 133.

The Greeks perforate a nut and stuff it with brimstone, chaff, and cedria, and light it, to destroy moles.

- Thai thurle a nutte, and stuffe it so withinne  
 With brymstoon, chaf, and cedria, thees three.  
 Then alle her hooles ther the molde is ynne  
 928 Save oon, the moste, uppe stopped must thai be.  
 The fyred nuttes smolder shall thorowe fle  
 This grettest hoole, as wol the wynde him serve,  
 And either shall thees talpes voide or sterve.

## 134.

Oak-ashes will give mice the scab. Burnt hartshorn, or goats-claws, or lilies, or galbanum, will drive away adders and evil spirits (noxious vapours) by the smoke.

- Yit for the mous, kest oken askes soo  
 Aboute her hooles in it that thai may trede;  
 The scabbe anoon will ryse and hem fordoo.  
 For eddres, spirites, monstres, thyng of drede,  
 936 To make a smoke and stynke is goode in dede.  
 Brent hertshorne, or gootes cleen, or rootes  
 Of lilie brente, or galbane all this bote is.

<sup>1</sup> cucumer. <sup>2</sup> coloquintida. <sup>3</sup> tritum. <sup>4</sup> psilotrum. <sup>5</sup> terram. <sup>6</sup> ille auctor.

## 135.

- The Greek saith eke that yf a cloude arise  
 940 Of breses<sup>1</sup> smert, men muste in hous hem hide,  
 And thai wol voide. A crafte eke thai devyse  
 That, breses seyn, men fle to hous and byde  
 In hous, and as thai come, awaie thai glide.  
 944 Cocumber wilde, or sour lupyne in drestes  
 Of oil comyxt wol dryve away thees beestes.<sup>2</sup>

Greeks say that locusts will leave if men hide themselves from them. Wild cucumber, or lupines mixed with oil-dregs, will drive them away.

## 136.

- And other sayne that scorpions and thees,<sup>3</sup>  
 Yf sume of hem be brent, wol voide ichone ;  
 948 And other als seyne, hockes for to lese,<sup>4</sup>  
 Kest figtree aske on hem, and, but thai goone,  
 Oil dregges and oxe uren iliche anoon  
 Let mynge and boile, and when it coled is,  
 952 Byrayne aboute uppon thi wortes this.

Or burn some of them. To kill caterpillars, cast on them the ashes of a fig-tree, or pour on the cabbages oil-dregs and ox-urine.

## 137.

- The greek saith that a best prasocoride  
 The garth anoieth muche, and remedie  
 Is this for that, a rammes panch athide<sup>5</sup>  
 956 Alle lightly soo there as thai multiplie,  
 When Phebus chare hath goon aboute it twye,<sup>6</sup>  
 There shalt thou fynde hem heped, sle hem there  
 A twie or thrie, and thai ne shall the dere.

A ram's paunch covered up where they multiply will kill prascorides (moths) in two days.

## 138.

- 960 Yit efte for hail a crocodilles hide,  
 A see calf skynne, or of a lyonesse  
 Bere uppe aboute thi lande on evry side,  
 And whenne thou dredest hail or hevynesse  
 964 Lete honge it in thi yates or ingress<sup>7</sup>  
 Of hous or towne, or thus in thi right hande  
 A myres tortous here aboute thi lande.

The hide of a crocodile, or sea-calf, or lioness, hung on the entrance of a house or town, will prevent hail, or a marsh-tortoise carried about the fields in the right hand.

<sup>1</sup> locustas.<sup>2</sup> locustas.<sup>3</sup> locustas.<sup>4</sup> perdere.<sup>5</sup> operire.<sup>6</sup> post duos dies.<sup>7</sup> ingressus.

## 139.

But it must be borne upright, and you must go back as you came, and leave it on its back. This keeps off mischief of clouds.

- But bere it bolt upright, and tourne agayne  
 968 Right as thou went, and ley her downe upright,  
 And undersette her crooked bakke, that mayne<sup>1</sup>  
 Her lacke agayne to tourne herself downeright.  
 This (is) a crafte of witte, a thyng of myght,  
 972 For all the lande that thou haste goon aboute  
 For cloudes wick is save, this is noo doute.

## 140.

Others take the shape of a dark cloud in a mirror, and thus either remove the harm, or double another's terror.

- When other seen derk cloudes over hove,  
 The shappe of it thai take in a myrroure,  
 976 And outhter thus from hem his harme thai shove,  
 Or to sum other doubleth his terroure ;  
 Amydde a vyne another thyng socoure,  
 For every mychief is a see calf hide  
 980 Aboute a quyk calf gridde on evry side.

## 141.

Steep seeds in ground cucumber roots. The skull of an ass or mare will cause fertility.

- Thi seedes with cocumber rootes grounde  
 Lete stepe, and save of evry mysse thai are ;  
 An other thinge that lightly may be founde,  
 984 The calvair of an horsed<sup>2</sup> asse or mare,  
 Sette that uppe : that wol make all fecundare  
 On every side as ferre as it may se.  
 Thus saithe the booke, and thus I trowe it be.

*De area.*

## 142.

Let the threshing-floor be near, for convenience of carriage, and against theft. Let the floor be of flint, or hewn stone, or water mixed with earth and trodden flat.

- Thi thresshing floor be not ferre of awaie,  
 For beryng and for steling, as the gise is  
 Of servauntes ; of flynt eke, if thou may,  
 This floor thou make, or hewen stoones besides,  
 992 Or water myxt with grounde, the thridde avis is,  
 Upshette aboute, and trampled with catell  
 Maade playne and dried after, wol do well.

<sup>1</sup> vigour.

<sup>2</sup> non virginis.

## 143.

- And nygh it make a place high, plain, and pure,  
 996 When nede is therto cave upon thi corne,  
 This wol availle, and make it longe endure.  
 Then after to thi berne it may be borne.  
 Eke, lest thi greyne in shoures sholde be lorne,  
 1000 Right hoolsum is to have an hous besyde,  
 That for a shoure in that it myght abide.

Make also a place to cave (?) the corn upon before it is taken to the barn. It is also good to have a house for the grain in case of showers.

## 144.

- But make it high, on everie half perflable,  
 Ferre fro thi garth, thyne orchard, and thi vynes;  
 1004 For, right as chaf and dounge is profitable  
 On rootes, and upbryngeth brede and wynes;  
 Right so the same upon the top a pynne is,  
 The floures and the buddes wol thai drie,  
 1008 And bore hem through, and make hem so to die.

This house to be open on every side, and far from the garden and vineyard: for straw and chaff, which would benefit the roots, would damage the flowers and buds.

*De apium castris.*

## 145.

- The Bee-yerd be not ferre, but faire asyde  
 Gladsum, secrete, and hooite, alle from the wynde,  
 Square, and so bigge into hit that no thef stride.  
 1012 Thaire floures in coloures or her kynde  
 In busshes, treen, and herbes thai may finde;  
 Herbe origane, and tyme, and violette,  
 Eke affadille and savery therby sette.

Place for the bee-yard. Plants proper for bees.

## 146.

- 1016 And curiage, and gladiol the longe,  
 Eke amarac, and other fresshed floures,  
 Rosmary, yvy, rose, and lily spronge  
 In busshes, eke the blossom greet socond is.  
 1020 Of evry tree thaire swetnesse in the floure is,  
 Ook fold and birche, eke terebynite, and lynde  
 But Utree,<sup>1</sup> that is nought, leve it behynde.

Other plants, shrubs, and trees which may be allowed to grow near the hive. The yew to be avoided.

<sup>1</sup> *Vel taxus.*

## 147.

Tyme, tymbra, peleton are best; next is origane; then rosemary and savory. Plant trees on the north side, and bushes all about;

- Of tyme is wex and hony maade swetest,  
 1024 Of tymbra, peleton; and origon  
 Is next to that; and after hem is best  
 Of rosmary, and savery, thenne is noone  
 So goode as thai, but rustik swete echoon.  
 1028 Septemtrion sette treen upon his syde,  
 And bushes aboute under the walle devyde.

## 148.

and herbs. Let there be a brook, or a well, and place boughs so that the bees may drink, but remove all bad smells, andadders and fowls.

- And after bushhes herbes in the playne,  
 A sobre brook amyde, or elles a welle  
 1032 With pulles<sup>1</sup> faire, and bowes or it trayne  
 So langh and rare on hem that bees may dwelle  
 And drynke ynough, but ferre awaie propelle  
 Horrend odoure of kychen, bath, gutters;  
 1036 Eddres to sleyn and foules oute to fere is.

## 149.

The bee-keeper must be clean. Dung and burnt crabs be kept away. Places which make an echo are bad, and so is spurge.

- The keper pure and chaste and with hem ofte,  
 His hyves havynge redy forto take  
 His swarmes yonge, and sette hem faire on lofte.  
 1040 The smell of dounge and crabbes brende aslake  
 Away from hem; and places that wol make  
 A voice ayein as ofte as men wol calle  
 Is nought for hem, eke nought is titunalle.<sup>2</sup>

## 150.

Lampwort and other bitter herbs injurious. Make the hives of thin rind, canes, or willow twigs. Have no potter's hives.

- 1044 This thapsia,<sup>3</sup> this wermoot, and elebre,  
 Cucumber wild, and every bitter kynde  
 Of herbe is nought for hem, as hem is lever  
 Lete make her hyves all of thynner rynde,  
 1048 It is not angry hoot, nor colde unkynde.  
 Take ferules eke, or saly twygges take  
 Ye may, but potters hyves thou forsake.

<sup>1</sup> lacunas.<sup>2</sup> spurge.<sup>3</sup> lampwort.



## 151.

- Or make an hyve of bordes like a stonde,<sup>1</sup>  
 1052 For that is goode, or hewe an holowe tree,  
 And therof make hem hyves into stonde,  
 But III foote high on stulpes must ther be  
 A floor for hem, wel whited thou it se,  
 1056 So made that lysardes may not ascende,  
 Ne wicked worme this catell forto offende.

Boards in the shape of a cup, or a hollow tree, good for hives. Place them on a stand three feet high. Let the floor be whited to keep off lizards and worms.

## 152.

- Thyne hyves heer thou sette a lite asonder,  
 Her entre tourne it faire upon the southe ;  
 1060 No larger than a bee may trede in under.  
 Wickettes two or three thou make hem couthe,  
 That yf a wicked worme oon holes mouthe  
 Besiege or stoppe, an other open be,  
 1064 And from the wicked worme thus save thi bee.

Turn the entrance to the south, no larger than a bee. Let there be two or three openings.

## 153.

- To bey thi been beholde hem riche and fulle,  
 Or preve hem by thaire murmure magnitude,  
 Or se the swarme and carie hem yf thou wolle  
 1068 By myght upon thi bak, hem softe enclude,  
 And towarde nyght hir yates thou reclude.  
 But bey hem not too ferre oute from thyne eire,  
 For change of ayer may putte hem in dispaire.

Directions for buying bees.

## 154.

- 1072 Thre daies thenne it is to taken hede  
 Yf alle the swarme oute atte the yates goo,  
 And if thai doo, then it is forto drede  
 Lest thai purposos in haast to ben agoo.  
 1076 Yit wene men that they wol not do soo  
 Aboute her hoole an heifer<sup>2</sup> calves<sup>3</sup> thoste<sup>4</sup>  
 So that thou cleme,<sup>5</sup> and this litel coste.

If all the swarm go out in three days, there is reason to fear they mean to be off. Prevent this by daubing the dung of a heifer.

<sup>1</sup> cupe.<sup>2</sup> vituli.<sup>3</sup> progeniti.<sup>4</sup> stercus.<sup>5</sup> allinas.



*De balneis.*

## 155.

The husbandman will think of his bath for health and pleasure. Let it look toward the south and south-west.

- It is not strange, if water wol suffice,  
 1080 An husbonde on his baathe to be bethought ;  
 For therof may plesaunce and helthe aryse.  
 Towarde the sonne on drie it must be wrought,  
 Southwest and southe the sonnes<sup>1</sup> ynne be brought,  
 1084 That alle the day it may be warme and light ;  
 The celles suspensures thus thou dight :

## 156.

Floor to be two feet thick, inclining gently towards the furnace, on pillars made of tiles two feet and a half high.

- First floore it ii foote thicke, enclynninge softe  
 The forneis warde, so that the flamme upbende  
 1088 The celles forto chere and chaufe olofte ;  
 And piles<sup>2</sup> maade of tiles must ascende  
 Two foote and half, and two foote wide attende  
 Hem forto sette, and upon hem thou sprede  
 1092 A marble floor, or tyle it yit for nede.

## 157.

An apparatus to supply the bath with hot and cold water, called *Miliarium*, made of lead, with a brass bottom. The cells to be fifteen feet long and ten broad.

- A myliair of lede, the bothom brasse  
 Anende the feetes sette it so withoute  
 The fourneis, and the fire ther undre passe.  
 1096 A conduite cold into it bringe aboute,  
 Make pipes water warme inwarde to spoute,  
 The celles square oblonge as x in brede,  
 As for xv in length is oute to sprede.

## 158.

Greater heat in a narrow place. Seats to be formed *ad libitum*. Light from the north in summer, from the south in winter. Let the wash from the bath go through the garden.

- 1100 For hete in streite is gretter then in large ;  
 But seetes make yfourmed as the list.  
 The somer celles lightes thou enlarge  
 Upon the north, but winter celles wist<sup>3</sup>  
 1104 From north ; the southern light is best, as wist<sup>4</sup>  
 Is well ; and all the wesshe oute of thi bathes  
 The garden thorowe to go therto no scathe is.

<sup>1</sup> lightes.<sup>2</sup> pilæ.<sup>3</sup> quatis.<sup>4</sup> *Vel satum* (sic.)

## 159.

- The chambres in the bathes may be wrought  
 1108 As cisterne is, but wol be well the stronger,  
 And other waies fele, yf thai besought,  
 As clene as it, but thai be yit unstronger.  
 Thi winter hous to sette eke studie lenger  
 1112 Uppon thi bathe; for lo the groundes made,  
 And hete of it thi winter house wol glade.

*De malthis calidariis vel frigidariis.*

## 160.

- Convenient it is to knowe, of bathes  
 While speche is made, what malthes hoothe and colde  
 1116 Are able, ther as chynyng clifte or scathe is  
 To make it hoole, and water well to holde.  
 For bathes hoothe ammonyake is tolde  
 Right goode with brymstone resolute ypitte<sup>1</sup>  
 1120 Aboute in evry chynyng, clifte, or slitte.

Remedies against  
 chinks in baths.  
 A cement, or  
 malthe, of ammo-  
 niac with dis-  
 solved brimstone  
 good for hot  
 baths.

## 161.

- Or thus: hardde pitche, and wex, take even weight,  
 And herdde<sup>2</sup> with pix liquide herto eche<sup>3</sup>  
 An halvendele, and grounden shelles dight  
 1124 With flour of lyme: al thees comixt wol deche<sup>4</sup>  
 Every defaute, and all the woundes leche.  
 While wex, hardde, pitch, remysse ammonyake,  
 Thees three comixt therefore is goode to take.

Or equal quanti-  
 ties of hard pitch  
 and wax, with  
 tow and liqud  
 pitch one-half,  
 and ground shells  
 mixed with flour  
 of lime. Or wax,  
 tow, and pow-  
 dered ammoniac.

## 162.

- Or thus: ammonyak remysse, and figges  
 With pix liquide and herdde<sup>5</sup> sore ygrounde  
 To cleme upon right suffisiannntly bigg is;  
 Or floure of lyme in oil, yf thou confounde  
 1132 And helde it in, upheleth it by grounde,<sup>6</sup>  
 But kepe it drie awhile, eke boles<sup>7</sup> bloode  
 With oil and floure of lyme admyxt is goode.

Or daub the  
 chink with pow-  
 dered ammoniac,  
 figs, liquid pitch,  
 and tow ground  
 up together. Or  
 bullock's blood,  
 oil, and flour of  
 lime.

<sup>1</sup> positum.<sup>2</sup> stuppam.<sup>3</sup> appone.<sup>4</sup> claudere.<sup>5</sup> stupa.<sup>6</sup> fundum.<sup>7</sup> tauri.

## 163.

Or oyster shells  
ground with hard  
pitch and figs.  
For a cold ce-  
ment, ox-blood  
with pitch and  
cinders, or sifted  
ashes and melted  
tallow.

- Eke oister shelles drie and alle to grounde<sup>1</sup>  
 1136 With harde pitche and with fygges doth the same;  
 But malthes colde in other crafte thou founde,  
 Ox bloode with pitche and synder alle to frame,  
 And make it like a salve, and overflame<sup>2</sup>  
 1140 Iche hoole and chene, or siften askes clene  
 And sevum molton helde in evry chene.

*De pistrino.*

## 164.

If you have  
abundance of  
water, make it  
turn your mill  
and spare your  
horse and ox for  
the plough.

- And yf thi water come in abundance,  
 As moche as may thi bathes overflowe,  
 1144 Thi bakhous therwith all thou maist avance,  
 A water mylle herwith thou maist avowe  
 To make, in sparing beestes that shal plowe,  
 As hors and ox, and so with litel care  
 1148 Shal water cornes grynde and beestes spare.

## 165.

Tools to be got  
ready: great and  
little plough, the  
mattock, axe,  
pickaxe, sawlong  
and short, knives,  
scythes, and  
sickles.

- Make redie nowe iche nedeful instrument,  
 Lete se the litel plough, the large also,  
 The rigges forto enhance, and uppe to hent  
 1152 Ther as the lande is moist, yit toles moo  
 The mattok, twyble, picoys, forth to goo,  
 The sawes longe and shortte, eke knyves crooked  
 For vyne and bough with sithes, sicles hocked,

## 166.

Sharp-backed  
scythes, little  
crooked knives,  
hooks, bills, rakes,  
crooks, adzes,  
pitchforks, and  
double-bitted  
axes.

- 1156 And croked sithes kene upon the bake,  
 Showe forth also the cannibe<sup>3</sup> knyves lite  
 In plantes yonge a branch awaie to take,  
 The hokes that the fern awaie shall bite,  
 1160 And billes all thees brerers up to smyte,  
 Set rakes, crookes, adses, and bycornes,  
 And double bited axes for thees thornes.

<sup>1</sup> tusæ.<sup>2</sup> alline.<sup>3</sup> curvos.

167.

Here must be markyng yrons for oure beestes,  
 1164 And toles forto geldde, and clype, and shere;  
 Eke lether cotes us to were honest is,  
 So thair cuculle aboute oure broles<sup>1</sup> were,<sup>2</sup>  
 And bootes, cocurs, myttens, mot we were:<sup>3</sup>  
 1168 For husbondes and hunters all this goode is;  
 For thai mot walk in breres and in woodes.

Irons to mark, geld, clip, and shear animals; also leathern coats with hoods to wear over the head, boots, leggings, and mittens. These last are good for husbandmen, who must walk in briars and woods.

Palladii primus liber explicit: assit ut unus  
 Alpha vocatus et a det mihi Christus homo!

<sup>1</sup> capita.<sup>2</sup> *Vel* est.<sup>3</sup> uti.

# JANYVEER.

## BOOK THE SECOND.

### *Ablaqueacion of vines.*

#### 1.

Ablaqueacion, or excodication, *i.e.* removing the earth from the root of vines, to be done in January.

Atte Jannerie ablaqueacion  
The vynes axe in places temperate ;  
Italiens excodication

- 4 Hit calle : and it is hem to desolate  
Of erthe, and all from every roote abate.  
Thus, delves made, on hem shall weete and heete,  
Thai two dooth all engendre grapes greete.

#### 2.

Now is time to clean the meadows, and call off the beasts from them. Fat and dry land to be ploughed up. Slacken the yoke at the end of the furrow to cool the oxen's neck. Do not let them draw by the horn.

- 8 In places glade and lene, in places drie,  
The medes elensed tyme is now to make,  
And beestes from nowe forth from hem to crie ;  
The feeldes faate and drie, on hem to wake  
12 And breke<sup>1</sup> hem up, but at the wending<sup>2</sup> slake  
The yoke, thyne oxen neckes forto cole :  
But drawing by the horne is noo goode scole.

#### 3.

Let there be no *balk*, *i.e.*, land left unploughed. Break the clods, and thrust a rod frequently through the furrows transversely, to see if the ploughman has done his work.

- The balke, that thai calle, unered lande<sup>3</sup>  
16 And overheled, beholde that there be noon ;  
The cloddes malled be with mannes hande.  
To wite if alle be well, thyselv allone  
Transversall thourgh the forowes everichone  
20 Lette<sup>4</sup> rush a rodde,<sup>5</sup> and make hem ofte this went,  
And thi ploughmen wol not be negligent.

<sup>1</sup> proscindere.    <sup>2</sup> versuram.    <sup>3</sup> inaratam terram.    <sup>4</sup> ponas.    <sup>5</sup> perticam.

## 4.

- The fenny feeld it is not forto plowe,  
 Lest all the yere it after be to tough  
 24 To plowe, eke, as men saith, noo thing wol growe  
 Thre yere on landes drier then ynough  
 And rayne betwet, so turne upp with the plough.  
 Demene it in the meene of moist and drie,  
 28 Eke sowe it so, and it wol multiplie.

Fenny land not to be ploughed up. Nothing will grow for three yearson landover dry ploughed up after rain. It should be neither too moist nor too dry.

## 5.

- Atte Janus mones Idus temporate  
 Grounde is to sowe in barly galatike,  
 viii bussshels seede an acre lande is atte ;  
 32 But first se that the winter have be like.<sup>1</sup>  
 Now chiches, sowe in fatte and moist londe, like<sup>2</sup>  
 Thre strike an acre seede, yit ofte it faileth ;  
 So weete or heete in flouring it availleth.

At the Ides (*middle*) of January, sow Galatian barley in a temperate soil, eight bushels to an acre, after a mild winter. Chichlings in rich moist land require three strikes to an acre.

## 6.

- 36 And when this Janus xxv daies  
 Is olde, is best thi fitches forto sowe  
 Ffor seede but not for fodder, for noo nay is  
 That<sup>3</sup> snailes rather lette hem forto growe.  
 40 vii bushels on an acre londe bestowe  
 When all the dewe is off, in houres warme,  
 And hele<sup>4</sup> hem lest the nyghtes weete hem harme.

About the 25th of January sow vetches for seed, but not for fodder, seven bushels to an acre, in warm weather, when the dew is off the ground. Cover them at night.

## 7.

- Ffeyngrek to have of seede is to be sowe  
 44 In Ytalie ene in this Janes ende ;  
 vii strike upon an acre is to throwe,  
 But plowed thynne and smale is to commende.  
 Ffor fyngers foure if lower thou descende  
 48 Upp may it not: for thi with plowes light  
 Sum eree and sowe and rake it with forth right.

Fenegreek to be sown at the end of January, seven strikes to an acre, ploughed in thin and shallow, for if you descend more than four fingers it will not grow.

<sup>1</sup> placida, clemens.<sup>2</sup> lætantur.<sup>3</sup> quin.<sup>4</sup> opi.



## 8.

Sow also tares at the end of January, five strikes to an acre.  
Weed corn on sunny days without frost. But some say this will uncover and hurt the root.

- Also the tares in this Janes ende  
Is goode to sowe in places drie and leene,  
52 v strike upon an acre is to spende.  
This mone, in sunny daies and serene  
Withouten frost, thi cornes, weede hem clene.  
Yit wol this werk the roote, as sum men telle,  
56 Unhele,<sup>1</sup> or kirve, and colde it after quelle.

## 9.

When the wheat has four leaves, and barley five, and when pulse and beans are four fingers high, weed them. The lupin requires no weeding.

- When wheet is quaterfoile and barly v,  
And puls and beenes fingers foure ascende  
Aboven erthe, it is to weede hem blyve ;  
60 The lupinge is noo wedyng on to spende,  
Withouten helpe himself it will defende  
From wedes alle ; it rootes hath but oon,  
And yf me wede it slayne it is anoon.

## 10.

Beans to be weeded twice. One will yield a strike. Corn not to be weeded when dry, for fear of mildew, but barley may.

- 64 Thi bene yweeded twyes wol availle,  
To wol it fructifie in grettest wyse ;  
Of oon to have a strike is goode travaille ;  
Myne auctor saithe therto the wol arise.  
68 To wede eke cornes drie is noo goode gyse,  
Ffor blichenyng after that werk is drede,  
Yit barly drie it harmeth not to wede.

## 11.

Three methods of *pastining*, or preparing land for vines: digging, ploughing, and ditching.

- This moone is goode to make in pastynyng,  
72 That may be maade dyvers in wyses thre,  
In delvyng alle, or plowing, or dicheinge.  
Thi lande unclene alle dolven uppe mot be,  
Of rootes, fern, and weed, to make it free ;  
76 But yf thi lande be leys clene of weedes,  
With diche or forowe to pastyne it noo drede is.

<sup>1</sup> detegere.

## 12.

- The forowe is best ille humour oute to wyse  
 Elonge eke as the liketh best thi lande,  
 80 Two foote and half the brede is to devyse.  
 Then yf the vyne is dight with mannes hond,  
 Two foote and half ther must unereed stond ;  
 But otherwyse if vynes shall be plowed,  
 84 Ffeet v or vi of leye is hem allowed.

Two feet and a half to be left between the furrows, if the land is dug by the hand; but if it be ploughed, five or six feet is to be left fallow.

## 13.

- Two foote and half in brede and three in lenght,  
 Yf diches plese, hem make, and three feet deep ;  
 With mannes hande to till, or oxen strenght ;  
 88 Thyne enterspace in oon maner thou kepe,  
 But lest the scions<sup>1</sup> crokedly up creep  
 And harmed be whenne yrons depe synke,  
 Pare all the diches even plaine the brinke.

Ditches to be two feet and a half broad, and three feet long, and three feet deep. The space between to be uniform, and the edges of the ditches to be cut even.

## 14.

- 92 The first is goode, two foote and half, or three  
 Feet depe to turne up all ; but diligent  
 Thou be lest balkes underclosed be.  
 The wardeyne with his rodde experient  
 96 May be therof thourgh putting every went.  
 Eke heep uppe everie roote of ferne and brieres,  
 And everie weed, as used everi where is.

Dig to the depth of two feet and a half or three feet, and leave no balks. The foreman should ascertain this by thrusting his rod through every went, *i.e.*, space dug.

## 15.

- The tables for thi vynes maist thou make  
 100 Herafter as the list, or as thi lande  
 Wol axe. An acre all hool may thou take,  
 Or half an acre well therin may stande,  
 Eke of the thridde part it may be fonde,  
 104 The fourthe part an acre wol be square :  
 In londes mesuring yit craftes are.

The beds for the vines according to pleasure or the nature of the ground, to be an acre, or half, or third, or fourth part. Artifices in land-measuring.

<sup>1</sup> sarmenta.

For a bed of an acre square, measure 180ft. long, as many wide.

## 16.

- Of pastyniug thus mesure every side  
 A table square an acre lande to holde,  
 108 Ffeet scores nyne<sup>1</sup> in lenght as feele in wyde,  
 Let square it so, theroute of may be tolde  
 Of squares x feet wyde, who so beholde,  
 CCC square<sup>2</sup> of x and twyes twelve.<sup>3</sup>  
 112 The nomber wol thyne acre<sup>4</sup> overwhelue.

Whatever the space to be prepared for vines, measure out ten squares of eighteen for an acre.

## 17.

- This nomber what the liketh to pastyne  
 Dissensseth alle decempedes<sup>5</sup> xviii.  
 Renomber hem, but tymes twyos nyde<sup>6</sup> (nyne)  
 116 Decempedes, therof ther shall be seen  
 CCC IIII & III and xvii<sup>no</sup> (*v. cccxxiv*).  
 As was before ; iche acre oute thou trace  
 In this maner of large or litel space.

The proper soil for vineyards is the mean between soft and hard, rich and poor, high and low, wet and dry; neither bitter nor salt.

## 18.

- 120 Thi vynes soile be not to molsh nor hardde,  
 But sumdel molsh, neither to fatte ne leene,<sup>7</sup>  
 But so wel fatte ; nor pitche it not downwarde,  
 Nor splatte it not to flatte, but sumwhat lene ;<sup>8</sup>  
 124 Of drie and weete also kepe it the meene.  
 In bitter soil or salt sette I noo vynes ;  
 In soiles so corrupt full sory wyne is.

The climate also should be rather warm than cold, and rather dry than wet. Vines fear winds. New soil and woodland is best for vines, the worst place is an old vineyard.

## 19.

- The meane is best thyne aier to qualifie,  
 128 Yit sumdel warme is better thenne to cold.  
 Thenne ayer all weete is better sumdel drie,  
 But vynes fer<sup>9</sup> of wynde and stormes cold,  
 And erthe and namely woode lande best is hold  
 132 For pastyniug, and werst is holden there  
 As sumtyme olde vynyerdes were.

<sup>1</sup> centum octoginta.

<sup>2</sup> decempede.

<sup>3</sup> xxiv.

<sup>4</sup> jugerum.

<sup>5</sup> squares of x foote.

<sup>6</sup> xviii.

<sup>7</sup> exile.

<sup>8</sup> inclined.

<sup>9</sup> formidant.

## 20.

- Yit if thou tille it of necessitee,  
 Lette exercise and eree it ofte aforne,  
 136 That rootes olde and drosse out clensted be  
 And every filthe<sup>1</sup> oute of this feeld be torne,  
 So vynes yonge in it ther shall be borne.  
 Ragstoon and thinges hardde in colde and hete  
 140 Relaxed bereth vyneyerdes grete.

If necessity require an old vineyard to be taken into use again, the things that must be attended to.

## 21.

- Molsh cley and stany lande, and stering stones  
 Commyxt with moold and flynt that erthe is under,  
 Of cold and moist conservatour flyntstone is,  
 144 The rootes and the sonne it hath asonder,<sup>2</sup>  
 Eke places unto whome from hilles sonder<sup>3</sup>  
 The landes sweete, and valeys that the flood  
 Upfilleth,—all that is for vynes good.

Loose clay, stony land, and loose stones mixed with mould, underground flint, and places into which hills descend, and valleys filled with water, are all good for vines.

## 22.

- 148 Lande argillose, and not cley by it selve,  
 Ys commodiouse; and there as wretched greves  
 Soure<sup>4</sup> lande to weete or salt is, never delve,  
 And alwey thristy<sup>5</sup> drie land in repreve is.  
 152 Undounded sleek wol make hem lene, as preve is;  
 In reed erthe eke a vyne is harde to take,  
 Though afterwarde sumdele therin is wake.

Clayey land, not clay itself, is advantageous; but never dig where there are wretched groves, or sour, wet, or salt land. Thirsty, dry land is also in disrepute; undunged sleek is known to make vines lean; in red earth they do not thrive at first.

## 23.

- But this lande is full wicked to be wrought,  
 156 To hardde in heete, and over softe in weete.  
 Now spek of goode lande, levyng that is nought,  
 As welny rare attemporanntly mete,<sup>6</sup>  
 The mydday sonne eke stande it with to mete  
 160 In places cold, and to septemtrioun  
 In places hote enelyne it sumwhat doune.

Red earth very troublesome to work, being too hard in heat and too soft in wet. Good land is somewhat loose, but in the mean. In cold places let it look to the south, in warm places let it incline towards the north.

<sup>1</sup> squalor. <sup>2</sup> ab invicem. <sup>3</sup> separantur. <sup>4</sup> amara. <sup>5</sup> siticulosus. <sup>6</sup> mediocris.

In cool (tepid) places let it incline towards the east; but if the east or south wind annoy, turn them (the vineyards) south-west or west. Remove all obstructions of roots, and tread it down to get rid of weeds. Vine-land in the plain to be two-and-a-half feet deep, on a declivity three feet, on a hill four.

Rank land is best two-and-a-half feet deep, a valley two feet. Vines prove best if set immediately after the spade or plough, ere they become firm or tough. So says the Author from his own experience.

Plant lettuces in January or December, to be transplanted in February; or sow in February and transplant in April. They may be planted all through the year in fertile land, rank, and dunged, but they must be cut even, and manured with liquid.

When set, uncover them and manure. They prefer moist, and long (!) land. Weeds must be wrung up by the hand, and those that stand thinnest are largest. Or slit the leaves when grown, and press them down with a shell or a clod.

## 24.

- In places cole<sup>1</sup> enclayne it on the est,  
 Yf Est or southeryn wyndes nought enaye,  
 164 And yf thai doo, turne hem southwest or west  
 Impedimentes rootes oute thou trie,  
 And tradde it so that wicked herbes die.  
 Two foote and half the feeld, and three the cleves,  
 168 And IIII an hille pastyned deepe to cheve is.

## 25.

- Rong<sup>2</sup> lande a foote and half, a valey twey  
 Ffeet deep is atte the best, experte ynough  
 Am I that vynes preveth best if thai  
 172 Be sette anoon after the spade or plough,  
 Ar then the lande be wexen sadde or tough.  
 That this is goode whether me plowe or delve  
 Myne auctour saithe he sawe the preef himselve.

## 26.

- 176 Letuce is to be sette in Janyveer,  
 Or December, the plantes to revieve  
 In ffeverer; either in ffeveryere  
 Let sowe and in Aprill her plantes meve.  
 180 Eke sowe hem alle the yere weel wol thai preve  
 In ronke and douted fertil lande, but sette  
 Hem not but even kytte and dounge ywette

## 27.

- Sette if thai be, lette bare hem, yeve hem dounge;  
 184 Moist douted londe and long hem liketh best.  
 The weedes with an hande must uppe be wronge,  
 And thai that thynnest standeth beth gladdest.  
 Or slitte her leves growen so wel prest,  
 188 And with a shelle or a hutte<sup>3</sup> adoune hem presse,<sup>4</sup>  
 And thai wol glade and fate under this presse.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> tepidis.<sup>2</sup> uliginosa.<sup>3</sup> gleba.<sup>4</sup> preme. - <sup>5</sup> prelo.

## 28.

- Thai wol be white, as men suppose, yf ye  
 Amonge hem gravel springe, and in the foiles  
 192 Gravel be bounde, eke suche her seede may be  
 Thai wexeth hardde, and sumtyme on the soile is  
 It longe, or on the tyme; eke every foile is  
 Maade tender twyes if it be transplaunted.  
 196 Now commeth a crafte is worthi to been haunted.

It is thought that sprinkling gravel amongst them makes them white. They are sometimes hard through the fault of the soil or the season, but every leaf is made tender if transplanted.

## 29.

- In letuce herbes umbigoon wol growe  
 But ye must take a bay<sup>1</sup> of gootes dounge,<sup>2</sup>  
 And with a nal as craftely as ye mowe  
 200 So make it holowe, and putte in seedes yonge  
 Basilicon, radish, and rucul stronge,  
 Letuce and cresse. and dounge weel this bay<sup>3</sup>  
 Do sette it in as fyne lande as ye may.

Herbs will grow amongst lettuces, if you hollow a bay of goat's dung with a nail, and put in it young seed: basilicon, radish, rocket, lettuce, and cress, and set this bay well dunge in fine land.

## 30.

- 204 The raphe is roote, alle other in letuce  
 Upgoothe and all on high thai wol devyde  
 Yche herbe in his coloure, odour, and juce.  
 Here is an heelful thing, a wonder wride;  
 208 Yit odir men in other crafte abyde,  
 As for the same a letuce uppe thai plucke  
 And from his roote ich foile awaie thai crucke.

Rape is a root, the rest grow with the letuce, and when out of the ground they will each preserve its own colour, odour, and juce. This is useful and wide-spread, yet others devise differently: they pluck a letuce and tear away every leaf from the root,

## 31.

- And pricke her place, and sette in hem thees sedes,  
 212 The raphe outake, and lappe it faire in dounge  
 And sette it uppe, thai goo iche as her seede is,  
 And letuce in thair leves umbiyonge.<sup>4</sup>  
 O blessed God! that nature is so stronge.  
 216 Letuce of lac derivyed is perchance;  
 Ffor mylk it hath or yeveth abundaunce.

and prick their place and set these seeds in it, except rape, and lap it in dung, and plant it; each grows according to its seed, and surrounds the letuce. Wonderful is the power of nature. Letuce is derived from lac, milk.

<sup>1</sup> bacham.<sup>2</sup> caprini stercoris.<sup>3</sup> bacham.<sup>4</sup> ambint.



Cresses may be sown anywhere, at any time, in any air; they require no dunging, they like moisture, but can do without it. Treat rocket, colewort, garlic, and ulpic in the same way.

Service trees to be sown in January, February, or March, in cold soil; in October or November in a warm, so that their apples may soon ripen in the nursery.

It is found good to plant them in November in hot land, at the end of March in cold, in February in temperate soil. Hilly, moist land, almost cold, is their choice. Where they grow thick the land must be rich.

The large plants require a deeper trench. They grow more for being shaken by winds. If red hairy worms feed within the pith, take some of them and burn them without hurting the tree, and they will either die or not stay.

## 32.

- Now cresses sowe, and sette hem when the list;  
Of places, aier, or houer have thai noo doubtte.  
220 Douncing thai noon desire, and though hem list  
Humor, thai axe it not, eke greet and stoute  
With letuce up thai goo, and all the route  
Of rucul, serve it like this, cool also,  
224 Garlic, ulpik, eke sowe hem nowe both two.

## 33.

- In Jane, in ffeveryere, and Marche in cold  
Erthe, October and November in hooote  
Erthe, is setting of serves noble holde,  
228 So that thair apples riped with footthoote<sup>1</sup>  
The semynaire be sette in, eke I wote  
Myself expert of apples trees have growe  
Right faire, and brought uppe fruytes right ynowe.

## 34.

- 232 Atte November to plannte hem in hooote londe  
In thende of March in colde in Janyver is  
And ffeveryer in temper lande fonde  
Right goode, and hilly moist lande colde welner is  
236 Thaire love, and fattest lande her grettest chere is.  
Eke ther as serves feirest and thickest  
Uppe springe is certayne preef of lande fattest.

## 35.

- The planntes bigge<sup>2</sup> a depper delf desireth,  
240 And larger space, as wynde may hem to shake,  
That greteth hem eke as the caas requireth;  
Yf hery wormes reede her festes make  
Inwith the pith, unhurt the tree thou take  
244 Oute sum of hem, and brenne hem nygh beside,  
And either wol thai die or nought abyde.

<sup>1</sup> e vestigio.<sup>2</sup> robusti.

## 36.

- Yf thai nyl bere, a wegge<sup>1</sup> oute of a bronde  
 Ywrought dryve in the roote, or sumdel froo  
 248 Let diche and fild with asshen let it stonde,  
 Eke graffe hem in Aprill is goode to doo  
 In white thorne, in hemself, in quynce also,  
 In trunke or rynde<sup>2</sup>: her fruyte eke yf thou wolle  
 252 Have kepte, a party hardde thou must hem pulle.

If it will not bear, drive a wedge wrought out of a fire-brand into the root, or ditch it, or heap up ashes round it. Graft them in April on white-thorn, or on themselves, or quince, on the trunk or rind. If you wish them to keep gather them partly hard.

## 37.

- And whan thai softe hem, putte in puttes lite  
 Of erthe, and cley her mouthes, sette hem depe  
 Two foote and under sonne as thai delite,  
 256 And tradde hem fast above, and lete hem slepe ;  
 Eke slitte and sonne-dried thou maist hem kepe,  
 And when the list in water hote revire<sup>3</sup>  
 Thai wol, and taste even as the list desire.

When soft put them in small earthen pots, clay them over, and tread them down in a hole two foot deep. You may keep them slit and sun-dried, and their flavour will revive in hot water.

## 38.

- 260 Sum have hem greene ypuld, and stoon and alle  
 Thai honge hem uppe in place opake<sup>4</sup> and drie  
 And wyne mellite, as saide is, save hem shall ;  
 Aysell and wyne eke oute of hem men trie,  
 264 As oute of peres but if bookes lie.  
 Thyne almand tree thou sette in Jannyver ;  
 And yet as goode for that is Feveryere.

Some pull them green and hang them, stones and all, in a dark, dry place. They are said to make a sweet wine, also they produce vinegar and wine, unless books lie. Almonds may be set in January or February, but

## 39.

- In October and November thai sette  
 268 Hem there as lande is drie as well the seedes  
 As scions from the grettest roote ysette ;  
 But for this tree the semynair in dede is  
 To delve a foote and half depe wherin need is  
 272 An handfull depe, two feet to sette asonder ;  
 Eke south and sonne is goode to sette hem under.

in dry places in October or November set the seed or scion from the largest root. Dig the seed-bed a-foot-and-a-half deep, set them a handbreadth deep, two feet asunder, towards the south.

<sup>1</sup> cuneum.<sup>2</sup> cortice.<sup>3</sup> revirere.<sup>4</sup> derk.

## 40.

They love chalky, hard, dry, soil, and a hot climate; as they ripen quickly, transplant a few young plants; leave as many as your land will hold. Set only large new ones, and remove them in February.

- The felde calculose, eke harde and drie  
 Thai love, and hattest ayer, forthi<sup>1</sup> thai ripe  
 276 And floureth with; eke of the yonge oute trie  
 Oon here, oon there, and elles where hem dripe.  
 Let stand as feel as may thi lande begripe.  
 Sette eke noon almondes but greet and newe,  
 280 And hem is best in Feveryere remewe.

## 41.

Steep them in mead a day before setting, but water it well. Some keep them three nights in liquid manure; the fourth night they are steeped in mead and set in the seed-bed.

- A day afore her setting, hem to stepe  
 In meeth is goode, but watter it wel for this.  
 Muche hony might hem harme, and sum hem kepe  
 284 Three nyght in molton<sup>2</sup> dounge, and doo not mys;  
 The III<sup>th</sup> nyght in meeth is stepped is;  
 Thenne is it in the semynair ysowe  
 Or sette in goode tyme up shall it growe.

## 42.

Water them every month three times in drought; dig, and weed, and dung them. Plant them twenty, or at least fifteen feet apart. In November cut off the dry, superfluous boughs.

- 288 And watter hem every moon in drouhtes thrie,  
 Eke delve hem alle aboute and weede hem clene,  
 Dounge eke thi semynair to multiplie  
 Hem in, but plante hem twenty foote atween,  
 292 Or at the leest asonder hem xv<sup>ne</sup>.  
 In November kytte of the bowes drie,  
 Superfluent, and thicke, eke utter trie.

## 43.

If beasts bite them they will be bitter. Dig not round them when they flower. They are fair when fertile, and when they are barren drive a pin of a firebrand through the root, or insert a flintstone so that the bark may grow over it.

- Yf beestes bite hem, bitter wol thai be,  
 296 But mylge<sup>3</sup> hem not in tymes when thai floure,  
 For therof wol anoone the blossom fle,  
 Her fertile age is faire, and for the honoure  
 The bareyne with a firebronde pyn socoure,  
 300 Dryve in the bored roote, or a flynte stoon  
 So doo that him the bark may overgoone.

<sup>1</sup> quia.

<sup>2</sup> liquide.

<sup>3</sup> circumfode.

## 44.

- In places colde if frottes be to doute,  
 As Marcial saith, this is remedie.  
 304 Or flouring tyme her rootes bare aboute  
 To make, and stoones white accompanye  
 With gravell to this roote forto plie ;  
 And whenne that burgyne oute wel like to preve,  
 308 Thees stones and gravel me may remeve.

If there be fear of frosts, Marcial says, make their roots bare before flowering, and apply white stones and gravel to the root, and when they blossom remove the stones or gravel.

## 45.

- He saith also thaire tender fruite to make  
 Or then thai floure, alle bare hem atte the roote,  
 Warne wates certayne daies on hem slake,  
 312 And bitter yf thai be, this be thaire boote :—  
 Three fringers from the stocke the lande remote  
 Lete make a cave, evel humor oute to sweete,  
 And this wol oute of bitter make hem swete.

He also says, to make them tender, some days before they flower, let them all have warm water poured on their roots; and if they are bitter, make a cave three fingers from the stock, for the evil humours to sweat into.

## 46.

- 316 Or bored through the stocke, an honyed pynne  
 Dryve in, or daube her roote in swyne dounge.  
 But whenne thair fruyte is ripe, as take it ynne,  
 And that is when thaire huske is drie and clonge ;  
 320 Withouten care a man may kepe hem longe ;  
 And yf thaire huske of easily nyl goone,  
 Ley hem in chaf, and it wol of anoone.

Or drive a wedge smeared with honny through the stock, or daub the root with swine's dung. Take in the fruit when ripe, *i.e.*, when the husk is dry and sere. If the husk will not come off easily, lay them in chaff.

## 47.

- Weshe hem in see licoure whenne thai be elene,  
 324 Or water salt, and white thai longe endure.  
 In December, or Janyveer demeane,  
 Or Feveryere in cold londe, a mesure  
 To graffe an almont tree whoos graffes pure  
 328 Oute of the toppe, eke graffe in stocke or rynde  
 In peches, and eke in thaire propere kynde.

Washing them in sea-water or brine makes them white. Graft almonds in December or January, but in cold lands in February, whose grafts take from the top. Graft them in the stock or rind on peaches or other almonds.

Greeks say we may make almonds grow inscribed with letters by taking out the kernel and writing on it, and then closing it in clay and swine's dung, and replacing it. The walnut is planted in January.

They love hills, and cold stony land with moisture; they live also in temperate places. Sow them in the same manner as almonds. In November dry them in the sun. In January and February it saves time to steep them one day before they are put in the ground.

Sow them transversely, one side in the ground to look towards the north. Put a stone on a tile under the root, that it may not go down a mere stalk, but may spread. They are more luxuriant transplanted.

Transplant in hot lands at three, in cold at two, years old,

Leaving the root uncut, though in other trees we cut it; we must set one plant in ox-dung and ashes therewith to separate the heat of the dung, lest it burn. The ashes will fret the tender plant, or Immensity will bring forth abundance from small conceit.

## 48.

- This Greekes sayne : almonndes me may make  
 With lettres growe, her shelles to disclose  
 332 And write upon the cornel hool outetake  
 Or this or that, and faire aboute it close  
 In cley and swynes dounge and so repose,  
 And in thaire fruyte thi lettres wol be clere.  
 336 The nutte is to be sette in Janyveer.

## 49.

- Moist, hilly, cold, and stony lande thai love,  
 With humoure eke thai lyve in tempre stedes.  
 Eke sette hem so and thenne, as saide above  
 340 Of the almonndes is, in November eke nede is  
 To sunne and drie hem sumdel, also spede is  
 In Janyver and fferyer to steepe  
 Hem oon day into lande or then thei crepe.

## 50.

- 344 Sette hem transverse oon syde intort the grounde,  
 But sette thaire tree, to looke on the Aquylone;  
 A stoon or tyle under the roote enrounde,  
 That it goo nought douneright a stalke alloone  
 348 But sprede aboute; eke gladder be ther noone  
 Then thai transplanted ofte, at three yere old  
 In hote lande hem transplaunte, at tweyne in cold.

## 51.

- Thaire roote uncutte, yf other treen me cutte,  
 352 Oon plante in oon oxe dounge is doune to sette,  
 And askes with, the heete a part to putte  
 Of dounge indoon, lest it adure<sup>1</sup> and lette.  
 This aske in tender rynde a tree wol frette,  
 356 As men beleve, or fruytes densitee  
 Fforth brynge on smal conceyve<sup>2</sup> immensitee.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> brenne.<sup>2</sup> creature.<sup>3</sup> supple Dei,



## 52.

- In delves<sup>1</sup> deepe is sette thair appetite  
 Thaire magnitude a larger lande requireth.  
 360 Eke to noo tree thaire dropping is delite,  
 Her brere thorne and her owne kynde it ireth<sup>2</sup>  
 And in thaire age a mylging<sup>3</sup> thay desireth,  
 Lest thai therein all hoore yberded goo ;  
 364 And chanel eke thaire tunicke unto the too.

They like deep holes on account of their size, and their dropping is favourable to no tree, even of their own kind. They require milging (digging) in their old age, lest they become gray-bearded. Make a groove in them from top to bottom.

## 53.

- The bonfice of sonne and wynde wol harde<sup>4</sup>  
 Hem sure ynough that were in way to dede.  
 And yf thi nutte is knotty or to harde,  
 368 To slitte his rynde evel humours oute to lede,  
 The rootes forto croppe eke sum men rede.<sup>5</sup>  
 A stake of boxe do thorough this bored roote  
 An yren nayle or topton : here is boote.

Sun and wind will harden those that were near dying. If the nut be too hard, slit its rind. Some advise to cut the root, and drive a stake of box through it, or an iron or copper nail.

## 54.

- And yf thou wilt have nuttes tarentyne,  
 Ffor antes<sup>6</sup> lappe a kynrel save in wolle,  
 And in thi semynary it recline ;  
 Eke chaunge a beryng nuttree if thou wolle  
 376 Into that kynde, as wete it atte the fulle  
 Thrie every moone a yere in lie<sup>7</sup> allone,  
 And tarentyne his nuttes wex ichone.

For Tarentine nuts wrap a kernel in wool against ants, and lay it into the seed-bed. To change a bearing tree into that kind, wet it thrice every month for a whole year in lye.

## 55.

- And when thaire huske agooth hem thai beth ripe,  
 380 Eke so thai must be sette, and hem to kepe  
 Lete close hem in a barel or a pipe  
 Made of thaire owen tree, or lette hem slepe  
 In greet, or chaf, or oynyons yf thai wepe,  
 384 Ffor thai thaire bittre soure wol mortifie,  
 Or kepe hem in her owen leves drie.

When the husks drop, they are ripe: then set them. Keep them in a barrel made of their own wood, or in sand, or chaff, or onions, if they be sour; or in their own leaves.

<sup>1</sup> scrobibus.<sup>2</sup> irritat.<sup>3</sup> gremii fossuram.<sup>4</sup> durescere.<sup>5</sup> consulunt.<sup>6</sup> formicas.<sup>7</sup> lixivo.



Martial says that nuts placed green without shells in honey remain green, and a drink made of this liquor will cure the veins and gums. Graft them on plums, or on themselves, or on crabs in January.

- 56.
- And Marcial saithe nuttes shelled greene,  
 As greene, in hony putte, aier endure,  
 388 And drinke of this licoure wol cure up clene  
 The pipes and the gomes, as is sure  
 This Marcial expert upon this cure.  
 In plomtree, in thayme self, in crabbe tree  
 392 At Janyveer ygrafted may thai be.

Now graft tubers on quinces, and sow peach-stones; now almonds and plums will take a peach-graft. It may be grafted also on damsons, and on the vine called *præcoqua*. Now graft cherries, wild peaches, and plums before they produce gum.

- 57.
- Nowe tuberes in quynces may me graffe,  
 Nowe sette in peches boon,<sup>1</sup> now almourde tree  
 And plomtrees wol conceyve a peches graffe,<sup>2</sup>  
 396 In damacene eke grafted may it be,  
 In præcoqua the vyne eke men it se.  
 Nowe chiritree to graffe, and peches wilde  
 And plumtree eree in gumme it goo with childe.

Columella says this is the time to mark lambs and other beasts, to make sauces of rape, and to keep the *echinus*, or urchin-fish, and lard and bacon in just confection.

- 58.
- 400 And nowe is tyme, as telleth Columelle,  
 The lambes, and the beestes more and lesse  
 To marke, and rapes make wele to smelle  
 In condyment is nowe the tyme expresse.  
 404 Echinus, erchon fissan is, as I gesse;  
 This fissan, and lardde, and fitches salt to kepe  
 In just confection now taketh kepe.

In January oil of myrtle-berries is made in this manner: take an ounce of leaves, a pound of oil, and shake an ounce of berries in half a pint of old wine, and make it all boil at once. The wine prevents the leaves from burning away before boiling.

- 59.
- In Janus oil confecte of myrtes bay is  
 408 In this maner: an unce of foiles take,  
 A pounde of oyle, and x unce of this bay is,  
 In half a sexter aged wyne do shake,  
 And alle this thing to boile atte ones make.  
 412 This wyne is in this werk lest foiles drie  
 This boyling wolde eschewe, and brenne or frie.

<sup>1</sup> stoon.

<sup>2</sup> surculum.

## 60.

- Now myrtite wyne is made of myrtes bayes,  
 Three sexter baies broke in x of wyne  
 416 That aged is so staped xix dayes,  
 Wrynge oute the myrte and clense it, put therein  
 A scriple of foil and half a scriple of fyn  
 Saffron; to this x pounce of hony sweete  
 420 And best, this wol be plesaunt drynke and sete.

Myrtle wine is made by breaking three sextarii of berries in ten of old wine. After steeping nineteen days, strain off the myrtle, and put in a scruple of leaves, and half a scruple of fine saffron; add ten pounds of best honey.

## 61.

- Of laures bay an oil is now confecte:  
 Take of the laures bayes feel and greeke  
 And ripe, in sething water hem dejecte,  
 424 So lette hem sething longe tyme swete,  
 And after that the swymming oil doo gete  
 Into sum thing with fetheres faire and clene,  
 And in sum goodly vessel it demene.

To make laurel-oil: take several large, ripe, laurel-berries; throw them into boiling water; after long boiling, collect with a feather the oil swimming on the surface.

## 62.

- 428 Oil lentiscyne is made in this manere:  
 Lentiskes greynes feeles and ripe aslepe  
 Thou bryng a day and nyght to heet yfere;  
 The honging in a basket lete hem wepe,  
 432 But in some honest thyng thaire teres kepe,  
 As oil lauryne is lentiscyne of take,  
 Whoos vigour hoot water must underslake.

Lentiseck (mastick) oil is made by letting several ripe lentisks heat a day and a night; then let them hang and drip into a basket; catch the drippings, and mix with hot water.

## 63.

- Now hennes legge upon<sup>1</sup> thaire wynter rest;  
 436 Nowe forto hatche are hennes obroode;<sup>2</sup>  
 Nowe make is to falle in season best  
 Ffor pale, or hegge, or house, or shippe in floode.  
 In olde eke of this moone is this most goode.  
 440 This moon and December wer oon in space  
 Of houres in myne auctours tyme and place.

Now hens lay and brood. Now is the best time to fall timber, at the end of the month. In the Author's time and place the hours of this month and December were equal.

<sup>1</sup> after.

<sup>2</sup> incubare.

60.

The length of the shadow of the hours of the civil day on the Roman sun-dial in January.

The firste houre XXIX foote is fixe,  
 XIX<sup>ne</sup> an other houre, and thries v  
 444 The thridde houre is, the fourthe is twies vi;  
 The fifte is x, the sixte is ix asblyve,  
 The vii as v, and viii as iv<sup>3</sup> upthryve,<sup>3</sup>  
 As iii is nyne, as ii is ten,<sup>4</sup> the forme<sup>5</sup>  
 448 Thelleveth<sup>6</sup> is with,<sup>7</sup> let Pallady say for me.

<sup>1</sup> xii.<sup>2</sup> sc. xii.<sup>3</sup> crescere.<sup>4</sup> sc. xix.<sup>5</sup> sc. prima hora.<sup>6</sup> sc. xi.<sup>7</sup> xxix.

# FFEBERYERE.

## BOOK THE THIRD.

*De pratis servandis et letamine saturandis.*

ON MANURING MEADOWS AND PLOUGHING HILLS.

1.

Atte ffeveryere in places temperate  
The medes forto kepe is to begynne,  
And fede hem that be lene at poire astate  
4 With dung, as Luna gynneth wex and wyne<sup>1</sup>  
Upon the nyght; eke never gretter wyne<sup>2</sup>  
Is to the graffe; and ley it on the syde  
Above, all thourgh that juce of it may glyde.<sup>3</sup>

In temperate places the meadows are to be kept clear in February; and lean, poor land is to be manured at the rise of the moon.

*De proscindendis collibus.*

2.

8 Atte places warme, in daies lithe and drie,  
Ys nowe the hilly landes uppe to eree,  
Trymenstre seede in erthe is nowe to strie;<sup>4</sup>  
Now wold also thi puls be sowen there  
12 As thynne, and resolute, and fatte it were;  
And namely drie. And whi? Lest luxurie  
And humour excessyve go make it die.

Now is the time to plough up hilly land in warm places, and to sow all three-monthly seed and pulse in thin, loose, rich, dry soil.

3.

Thay may be sowe until the moone be  
16 Atte daies XII; and forto make hem greet  
And uppe anoon, comyxt thou must hem se  
With drie dounge, and therin lette hem sweet  
Till daies foure: as for au acre mete  
20 A strike of hem. It shall be so sufficed.  
And chiches sowe afore as I devysed.

Let them sweat in dry dung for four days, and sow a strike of them for an acre. Also sow chichlings as before directed.

<sup>1</sup> *Vel* lucrari.

<sup>2</sup> *Vel* commoduum.

<sup>3</sup> slyde.

<sup>4</sup> *Vel* seminare.

*De serendo canabo.*

## 4.

At the end of the month sowe hemp, six seeds in a square foot. Now land that is destined for *medica*, or clover (of which I will inform you at sowing time) is to be diligently ploughed, harrowed, and cleared of stones.

- Last in this moone eke Hemp is to be sowe  
 In dounded, fatty, playne, weet, and depe lande ;  
 24 A foote of square in sixe sedes may growe.  
 Nowe londe, that medycyne is fore yfond,  
 (Wherof atte sowyng hem to understande  
 I wol ye doo) ye must it plowe eftesones,  
 28 Eke diligently clodde<sup>1</sup> it, pyke oute stones.

## 5.

By the first of March, in soil prepared in garden-fashion, let the flowers spread in ten-foot beds to the length of fifty feet for convenience of weeding and watering. Dress it with dung, and keep it so until April.

- In Marche kalendes in the soile ydight  
 In gardyn wyse is floures forth to sprede  
 X foote, and stretche hem L feet forth right,  
 32 Ffrom either syde all easely to weede,  
 And watter it as ofte as it is nede.  
 This land thus sette, old dounge is it<sup>2</sup> to serve  
 And greythed thus till Aprill to reserve.

*De heruo, de curandis vitibus et arboribus.*

## 6.

Tares sown in March might make beasts mad. Brine cast upon the roots will not injure vines, as some suppose, but make them fruitful.

- 36 Yit in this moone is forto sowe tares  
 And not in March, lest thay ennoie thi beestes,  
 Thi oxen might be woode therof as hares.  
 Now olde bryne atte tree and vyne a feest is,  
 40 Uppon thaire root as ofte as eree it kest is.  
 Sum men suppose bryne hem sholde appeire,  
 But it wol make her fruytes feel and feir.

## 7.

Cast olive-dregs amongst the trees, especially olives, in cold days, ere the heat arrives. Sow Galatian barley about the first of March in cold land, and it will grow white and firm.

- Oyl dregges fresshe is profitable holde  
 44 To kest amonge, and rathest in olyve ;  
 But this a man must doo in dayes colde,  
 Or thenne the fervour hoothe on hem aryve.  
 Now barley Galatyk is forto thryve,  
 48 Abouten Marche kalendes yf me sowe  
 It in cold londe, white and sadde wol it growe.

<sup>1</sup> *Vel occa.*<sup>2</sup> *Vel with.*

## 8.

- This moone eke alle the soiles pastynate  
 With vynes wolde be filde, whose goode nature  
 52 No lande nor ayer forsaketh, so thaire state  
 Be shaped in convenient mesure.  
 The vyne in playne is sette that may endure  
 Eke myst and frost, but sette in hilles hie  
 56 That wyndes may endure and dayes drie.

Any soil properly prepared may in this month receive vines. Plant the vine in the plain that may endure mist and frost, on hills that which may endure winds and drought.

## 9.

- Sette in the fertil feild smale and fecounde,  
 The sadde and beryng vynes in the lene,<sup>1</sup>  
 The bowy<sup>2</sup> bigge in densed erthe abounde,  
 60 And sonnest ripe in cloudy cold demeene,  
 Or hardde graped stormes to sustene ;  
 The moist in hoot, the tough in wyndy londe,  
 And vyne it drie, in rayne it may not stonde.

Set in rich soil the small and fruitful; in poor land the firm and bearing; the branching in dense earth; the early-ripening in cold, misty ground, or those which have hard pips. Plant the moist in hot land, the tough in windy, and in dry those which cannot stand the rain.

## 10.

- 64 And shortte to sai,—se the profession  
 Of every vyne, and wherin thai myscheve  
 As counter it by goode discrecion.  
 In lande plesaunt and serenous thai cheve,  
 68 In every kynde as easy is to preve.  
 The vynes' kyndes is not forto telle :  
 To number hem therefore y nyl not dwelle.

In short, note the character of every vine, and encounter its defects by good discretion. It is easy to prove that they prosper in an appropriate and serene soil. I will not attempt to number them.

## 11.

- But knowe is this that grapes faire and greet  
 72 Pypnyed hardde and drie it is to take  
 Unto the borde; and tender grapes weete  
 That savour best and sonnest wolde asslake  
 And dwyne away, of hem thi wynes make.  
 76 The place chaungeth kynde of sum vynes.  
 Vyne Amynee hath ever fairest wynes.

Fair, large grapes, with hard, dry pips, are best for the table; but tender, succulent grapes of good flavour, and that soonest fade, are best to make wine. Vines are changed by site. Aminæan make best wine.

<sup>1</sup> sc. lande.

<sup>2</sup> frondosas.



They are always good, but endure heat better than cold; and after being in fat land, they will not hold on in lean without dung. There are two kinds—

greater and less. The lesser decays sooner, and has cleansmall knots, and little grains. When alone it requires a moderate soil; when trained to a tree it requires a rich one.

It despises wind and rain; but the greater sort is often killed in blossoming. Apianian vines are also excellent. It is sufficient to mention these. A knowing man adopts things proved, and will see that the land to which vines are transplanted does not differ too much from the original soil.

So they will preserve their merits. And always change from poor land to rich, not the contrary. Take scions from the middle, not too high nor too low.

Take them at the fifth or sixth knot from the old wood; so they will not degenerate. Take them from a vine of decided fertility.

## 12.

- Thai change not, but better hoothe then colde  
 Thai may abyde; and after fatte, in leene,  
 80 But douncing helpe hem well, thai nyl uot holde.  
 Two kyndes are of hem, a more and meene.<sup>1</sup>  
 This meene effloureth sone, and knotteth clene  
 And smale, eke greyneth lite; in meene londe  
 84 Allone, and with a tree fatte must it stonde.

## 13.

- This smaller vyne eke hateth wynde and rayne;  
 The grettest of this Vynes Amynee  
 In blossomyng or flowryng ofte is slayne.  
 88 Vyne Apianes profitable be.  
 Suffice it forto name up thees three.  
 A witty man taketh proved thinge, and change  
 He maketh, that lande from lande be not to strange.

## 14.

- 92 Suche erthe as thai come oute of sette hem too,  
 And in thaire merites thai wol abyde.  
 And vyne or tree to change yf thou wolt doo,  
 From leene land to fatte thou must hem gide.  
 96 From fatte to leene is nought; lette that crafte slyde.  
 Scions to sette oute of the myddel trie,  
 And neither of to lowe nor of to hie.

## 15.

- Take hem that gemmes<sup>2</sup> v or vi ascende  
 100 Ffro the elder brannche; and yf thou take hem soo,  
 Withouten change himself thai wol extende;  
 A vyne abundant eke thou take hem froo,  
 And take not hem that bere a grape or two,  
 104 But hem that kneeleth down for ubertee.  
 Oon bough may better thenne an other be.

<sup>1</sup> sc. minor.<sup>2</sup> sc. knottes.

## 16.

- And this a signe is of fertilitiee :  
 In places hardde yf fruytes multiplie,  
 108 Iche bough eke from roote uptrailed be  
 With fruyte; and thoo lete marke and signifie  
 Atte setting tyme oute forto trie.  
 But see that ther be noon olde upon the ende,  
 112 Ffor it wol roote, and alle corrupte and shende.

It is a sign of fertility when fruit multiplies out of hard soil, and each bough rises from the root with fruit. Try to signify this by marks at the time of planting. But see that none of the old wood be left upon the cutting, for it would rot and injure all.

## 17.

- The squorges<sup>1</sup> hie and graffes from the folde,  
 Though thai wol growe, and scions pampinary<sup>2</sup>  
 With fruyte, for fruytfull lete hem not be told,  
 116 Ffor thai from fruyte to barynesse wol vary  
 Whenne thai be sette, and then hem wol thou wary.  
 But writhe not the hede of the sarment,  
 Whenne it is sette, nor doo it noo turment.

Fold from thee (i.e. reject) the top shoots and grafts, and let not leafy scions be considered fruitful; for they will degenerate, and you will curse them. Do not bend the head of a cutting.

## 18.

- 120 And vynes wolde be sette in plesaunt dayes  
 And warme, unbrenned in sonnes or wynde  
 As cutte and sette; or if thai have delaies,  
 So save hem moist that thai may kepe her kynde.  
 124 While spryngyng tyme endureth have in mynde  
 In places colde and moist and fatte by wette  
 With shoures often vynes forto sette.

Plant vines on fine warm days, before they are burned by sun or wind. If there be delay in planting them keep them moist. During spring bear in mind to plant vines in cold, moist, rich places.

## 19.

- The scions shall be sette a cubit longe;  
 128 And there as lande is fatte doo sette hem wide.  
 And thicke and leene lands so that amonge  
 Hem in thi pastinated lande devyde  
 Three foote of open lande on everie syde;  
 132 So shall thou in acre tabul mette  
 MMM and LX scions sette.

The scions to be a cubit in length. Where the soil is fat set them wide apart. In lean land leave an open space of three feet on every side. So in a bed which measures an acre you will plant 3060 scions.

<sup>1</sup> flagilla.<sup>2</sup> foliosi.

## 20.

If they be planted two-feet-and-a-half asunder, 5006—24 cuttings will fill up an acre. And whether you plough or dig your land, extend a line over and along the space reserved, and put a stick where each vine is to be.

- Two foote and halfe if thai be sette atwynne,  
 V<sup>M</sup> 6 save twyes twelve
- 136 Sarmentes wol fille up the lande withinne  
 An acre table tilled by it selve :  
 And wethir thou thi landes eree or delve,  
 Overward and afterlonge extende a lyne,
- 140 And putte a sticke in place of every vyne.

## 21.

Then lay down the scions and insert one in the place of every stick. If all the vines were of one sort, a bad year might destroy all. So take care to have four or five good vines, each sort by itself.

- Then kest adoune the scions here and there,  
 And ympe in oon in every stickes place.  
 Oon maner vyne yf alle thi landes bere,
- 144 A wicked yere myght come and alle difface ;  
 So dyvers vynes sette in divers space,  
 And vynes goode of iv or v have mynde,  
 And severed by hemself sette everie kynde.

## 22.

Graft old vines bed by bed. Thus the early ripe grapes may yield us their fruit easily in the bed, and thus there will be better wine and business, as experienced tillers know.

- 148 Thi vynes olde eke graffe hem table mele ;<sup>1</sup>  
 It wol be faire, it wol be profitable,  
 Thus easely thaire fruytes may me dele  
 The rathest riping grapes in thaire table,
- 152 That other may come after as thai able ;  
 Thus better vyne and besinesse  
 Shall be as knoweth tilliers expresse.

## 23.

This is the rule where land is dug or ploughed, and not where it is trenched. There let cuttings stand in the four corners, and if the land be lean, Columella says, gladden it with rich earth from elsewhere.

- But this in pastynyng and ereed londe
- 156 Is rewle, and not there as be delves made.  
 Sarmentes there in angles IIII stonde,  
 And, as saith Columelle, it is to glade  
 Hem, if the londe be leene in every slade,
- 160 With fatte erthe, yf me fetche it elleswhere  
 Ffro places ferre or nygh, and brynge it there.

<sup>1</sup> tabillatim.

## 24.

- Wyndraf<sup>1</sup> is goode also comixt with dounge,  
 But yf thou sette a plant or a slevyng,  
 164 Put in a litel moisty molde amonge,  
 But doo noo cley therto for anything.  
 Two gemmes<sup>2</sup> upon erthe eke forto springe  
 To leve(s) is goode; the sonner wol thai take.  
 168 Nowe cometh a crafte arbustes<sup>3</sup> forto make.

*De arbustis, vitibus et plantis arborum vitiferarum.*

## 25.

- That yf the list to have a grove of vynes,  
 Lete plantes in the seminarie sette,  
 But trie hem oute of it that gentil vine is.  
 172 And whenne thai roote and wexe a litel grete,  
 To stande aboute her tree lete hem be sette.  
 The semynair is even dolven londe  
 Two foote and half deepe planntes in to stande.

## 26.

- 176 In that thi scions or thi planntes may  
 Be sette a little asonder, gemmes<sup>4</sup> three  
 Of scions under moolde is sette alway.  
 And yeres two whenne that thai rooted be,  
 180 Translate hem be thai scions, be thai tree.  
 The scabby braunches and the wexed rootes  
 To cut away for dyvers harmes boote is.

## 27.

- Two scions in oon diche<sup>5</sup> it is to sette  
 184 That neither oth'r touch a sounder soo  
 Thaire growing forto encumb'r or to lette,  
 But faire up by the sydes lette hem goo.  
 The first yere fille it not, as saith Mago,<sup>6</sup>  
 188 But fille it full uppe at the yer(d)es end;  
 The depper wol the roote of hem descende.

Grape-skins may be mixed with the dung. Put a little damp mould with a set or cutting, but no clay. It is good to leave two buds to sprout. Now we speak of groves.

If you wish to have a grove of vines, set plants in a seed-bed, but choose them from a generous vine, and when they have grown a little, let them be planted out so as to stand near the tree which is to support them. The seed-bed is land dug evenly to the depth of 2½ feet.

In it place your scions or plants with a small space between. The scions should have three buds under ground. Transplant scions and trees two years after striking root. It is beneficial against divers harms to cut away scabby branches and enlarged roots.

In one trench place two scions so that they do not touch each other, but let them be close to the sides of the trench. Mago advises not to fill it up the first year, but fill it up at the year's end.

<sup>1</sup> vinacea.    <sup>2</sup> knottes.    <sup>3</sup> arbusta.    <sup>4</sup> jointes.    <sup>5</sup> Sc. delve.

<sup>6</sup> ille auctor.

## 28.

But this is convenient in hot land, not in cold. There moisture will rot the plants: and there I advise to cover the roots. Choose for planting the ash, poplar and elm.

- But this is in hoote lande convenient  
 And not in colde, thair moist wol purifie; (putrify)  
 192 The rootes hele hem there is myn entente.  
 And planntes forto sette also thou trie.  
 Asshe, popler, elm, thoo three wol multiplie,  
 As semeth me, in every maid lande.  
 196 Yit Columelle is so not understande.

## 29.

Their plants should be set in this month near your vine, and in corn-land an elm should be 40 feet away from another. But in poor land plant them 20 feet apart.

- Her plantes in this moone it is to sette  
 Not ferre thy vyne, and in thi felde for corne  
 If thai be sette, a xl foote of mette  
 200 Iche elme away from oth'r must be borne.  
 So may thou sowe, and not thi seede be lorne,  
 In landes fatte; and yf thi lande be leene,  
 Thenne sette hem not but xx<sup>ti</sup> foote atwene.

## 30.

A scion should be six feet from its tree, lest the tree grow and oppress it. It should be kept from beastes by a ditch. The vine must be fastened to a tree. A better plan is to make a skep (or basket) a foot wide, or somewhat less.

- 204 A scion sette it vi feet from the tree,  
 Lest that the tree encrece, and it oppresse,  
 From beestes kept with dichyng must it be;  
 The vyne eke to the tree with bondes dresse.  
 208 A bettir crafte is for this besinesse  
 Lette make a skeppe of twygge a foote in brede,  
 And sumdel lesse alle though it be, noo drede.

## 31.

Bring this near the tree to which vines are tied; make a hole in the bottom, that a scion may be trained through it; fasten this skep to the tree, and fill it with quick mould, and wrap the scion in it.

- This bring unto the tree with vynes spredde,  
 212 And thorowe the bothom therof make a gappe,  
 That thorowe that gappe a scion may be ledde.  
 This (s)keppe unto the tree thou bynde and happe,  
 And fille it with quyk moolde, and therin wrappe  
 216 This scion in the skeppe a lite ywounde<sup>1</sup>  
 Or writhed in this litel skeppe grounde.

<sup>1</sup> *Vel* intortum.



32.

- Within a yer weel rooted wol it be  
 In with this skeppe, under whoos bothom sholde  
 220 Hit be so kytted and borne unto the tree  
 Ther it shal growe, and set it faire in moolde,  
 The skeppe and all,—so wol it take and holde,  
 Withouten doute, as fele as er the list.  
 224 Doo serve hem thus, and in thaire growyng triste.

Within a year it will be rooted within the skep, from under which it should be cut and taken to the tree where it is to grow. Setskep and all in the ground, and doubtless it will take, and bear as many vines as you like.

*De vineis provincialibus.*

33.

- Provincial of is dyvers kynde of vynys :  
 The best is like a bosshe ythied breefe.  
 Till it be stronge, susteigned first this vyne is,  
 228 And stronge allone it stonte in his bonechief,  
 Next it beth borne up vynes best of preef,  
 Upbounde, orbicular, and turnede rounde,  
 And last is it that streght lithe on the grounde,

Provincial vines are of divers kinds. The best is where the vine is like a bush with a short thigh. This vine is supported till it be strong, and when strong it stands alone. Next are vines tied up on canes and circular. Last are those that lie on the ground.

*De putandis vineis communibus et humilibus.*

34.

- 232 In landes temperate and sumdel cold  
 Good tyme is nowe the vynes kitte to be.  
 And there thai multiplie manyfold,  
 Thoo vynes that Septentrion dothe se  
 236 To kutte in springing tyme ains the ;  
 That oth(e)r part that loketh on the sonne  
 To cutte in hervest newe is not begonne,

In temperate and cold lands it is now time to prune vines. But where there are several, cut in spring those that look towards the north; in autumn those that look southward.

35.

- And strength allway the theigh in the kyttling.  
 240 Two hardness in oon vyne is not to make.  
 The crooked, febul, fatte, and mys growing,  
 And eke the greyne branche away thou take.  
 The lower branche in goodly place awake.  
 244 Let suffre that a gemme or two extende,  
 The vynes to repaire or forto amende.

Always strengthen the thigh. Keep not two arms (*duramenta*) in one vine. Take out crooked, feeble, fat, misshapen, green branches. Allow the lower branch, growing in a good soil, to extend a bud or two to repair the vine.



In mild places they may be high; on lean lands, or hot, steep, stormy places, low. In rich soils there is no need of more than two branches to each arm. It is profitable to judge a vine's strength, — what will make it stand or fall.

It is enough for the high and fruitful vine to spread into eight branches. Let nothing grow about its thigh, unless the vineyard require to be restored. If the stock be hollow, cut off the dead wood. Oil-dregs will heal the wound effectually.

Take away the torn and hanging bark, and there will be fewer dregs in the wine. Take away the moss also, and if you have to cut the hard wood, let the wound lean downward obliquely and be round. Cut off dry, scabby, and old claws (roots).

Vines four feet high may have four arms: a lean one may have one branch on each arm, a fat one two. But if you train them all on one side, they will die like a thing struck by lightning. Do away, therefore, with that feeble husbandry.

## 36.

- In easy places hier may thai traile,  
 In lene, or hooete, declyne, or stormy stedys  
 248 Lete hem be lowe; also this wol advaile.  
 In place fatte of iche an arm no nede is  
 Of branche moo than two. Also it spede is  
 To deme upon the bygnesse of the vyne,  
 252 As what wol make it stande, and what declyne.

## 37.

- The vyne hie and of fecunditee  
 In brannches viii ynough is to dilate,  
 Aboute his thegh<sup>1</sup> lette noo thing growing be,  
 256 But yf it axe to be revocate,  
 And yf the stok be holgh or concavate,  
 Purge of the dede, oildregges on the wounde  
 With erthe ydoon wol helē it uppe by grounde.

## 38.

- 260 And take awaie the torne and honging rynde,  
 The dregges wol the fewer be by grounde,  
 The mosse awaie doo that where ye fynde,  
 And in the harde if that thou make a wounde,  
 264 Adounewarde sumdel lenyng must it rounde,  
 The clawes drie and scabbed olde busely  
 Kytte all away, and kepe up that is wely.

## 39.

- And if thi vynes footes iv ascende,  
 268 Thenne armes iv is goode forth forto streyne,  
 Yf it be lene in iche an arme extende,  
 A branche, if it be fatte, extend up tweyne.  
 But alle oute of oon syde if thou hem treyne,  
 272 As thing with leyt<sup>2</sup> forsmitten, wol thai die,  
 For thi doo way that feble husbandrie.

<sup>1</sup> *Vel crus.*<sup>2</sup> *fulgure.*

## 40.

- Upon the harde, or on the toppe ne leve<sup>1</sup>  
 Thi scions. Whi? for that is to feconde.  
 276 The toppe with litel fruyt wol all for leve.<sup>2</sup>  
 Amyddes wol the best scions be founde.  
 A lite above his gemme eke make the wounde,  
 And turne it from the gemme in caas it wepe;  
 280 The turnyng may the teres under drepe.

Do not leave the scions on the hard wood or on the top; for that will furnish the top with little fruit, or cover all with leaves. Scions are best in the middle. Make the wound a little above the bud, and turn it away from the bud, that the tears may drip under it.

*De putacione arbusti.*

## 41.

- The vyne ysette into the tree to growe,  
 His first matier at the thridde or secounde,  
 Gemme is to cutte, and everie yere alowe  
 284 It up to encrece, and wyne forto abounde,  
 Yf thou wolt have on bowes hem fecounde.  
 But fewer forto have and gretter wyne  
 Into thi trees toppe lede uppe thi vyne.

Prune the new wood at the first or second bud. But to have fewer but larger grapes, lead up the vine to the tree's top.

## 42.

- 288 In bigger bowes fele, and fainter fewe  
 Branches doo traile, and cutte hem bei this reason:  
 To that the grapes were uppon by rewe  
 The forme yere, now cutte hem this season.  
 292 The rainal from the fressher bough to lesen  
 Ys goode, and everie yere hem forto unbinde  
 Is comforte and refressing to thaire kynde.

The branches that bore the former year ought to be cut the succeeding season. It refreshes the vines to unbind them every year.

## 43.

- And make the tree that euerie bough extende  
 296 By oth'r forth as lyne leide be lyne.  
 An elm in fatte lande viii feet may ascende,  
 In lene lande atte vii him declyne.  
 In dewy, clowdy lande thi tree for vyne  
 300 Kytte it that est and west his bowes ronne.  
 The vyne sides bete uppon the sonne.

Let not one bough be led in the line of another. An elm may be eight feet in rich land, seven in poor. In damp land let the branches of the tree for vines be trained east and west, and the sides of the vine be towards the sun.

<sup>1</sup> *Vel dimittas.*<sup>2</sup> *Vel pampinare.*

Let not the vine grow too thick. If one tree fail rear up another. On hilly ground make them low; in plain and rank land they may be higher. Let there be no hard shreds.

- 44.
- To thicke upon the tree doo not the vyne,  
 And yf oon faille, up reree an oth'r tree;  
 304 And make hem lough in cleves that declyne,  
 In plaine or ronke lande hier may thai be,  
 But bondes harde in vyne is not to se.  
 Do bondes softe and esy forto were  
 308 Theron, lest bondes harde it kerbe or tere.

*De putacione provincialium vitium.*

To vines dight in provincial fashion, which stand up like a bush, leave four arms, and as many shoots as possible. Cut in the ordinary form those which are borne on canes in a circle. Leave two buds the first year on vines which lie straight (unsupported) on the ground.

- 45.
- A dight vyne in provinciale manere,  
 That like a bosshe upstonte, IIII armes make,  
 And brannches leve on hem as thai may bere.  
 312 The vyne orbiculer with canne or stake  
 Upborne, in commune fourme her cuttyng take.  
 The streight vyne on the grounde gemmes twoo  
 The frist yere leef, and after mo and moo.

*De novellæ putacione.*

Columella would have a young vine after the first year formed to one wood; and not, according to others, cut down at the end of the second year, so that it either dies or becomes leafy. Better leave a bud or two, especially in large vines.

- 46.
- A novel vyne, as telleth Columelle,  
 After the formest yere to oon matiere  
 (The) fourme is goode, and not as othør telle,  
 The seconnde yer to kyttte of alle yfere,  
 320 That thai or dede, or pampinary, were:  
 But better is to lette a gemme or twoo.  
 In bigger vynes rather this is do.

Support them with canes or stakes, and after three years give them strong wood. At four years, in strong land, they take three woods. The loppings, and briars and roots and all impediments, should be taken immediately out of the way of the digger.

- 47.
- Ffirst helpe hem uppe with canne and litel stakes,  
 324 And yeve hem streng yeres after three.  
 At yeres IIII uppe IIII matiers takes  
 On hem, alle ronk yf that the landes be.  
 The brannches eke kitte of fro vyne or tree,  
 328 And brere, and roote, and alle impediment  
 In haast is from the delver to been hent.

*De propaginibus.*

48.

- Nowe husbandrie his olde vynes plecheth.<sup>1</sup>  
 The long endured, olde, for freeten vyne  
 332 Is not to helpe, as Columelle techeth,  
 To delve it under alle, but to reclayne  
 It like abowe, and under lande it myne.  
 Ffor, as he saithe, the cors I delve in grounde,  
 336 The rootes wol abounde and alle confounde.

Now vines are to be propagated. Old, hard, worn out vines are not benefitted, says Columella, by digging them all in, but by bending them like a bow, and burying the ends in the ground: for, he says, if the stock be dug in, there will be too many roots.

49.

- He saithe also that after yeres tweyne  
 This bowes into branches wol abounde.  
 But tiliers upon this thing compleyne:  
 340 That if me cutte hem after the secounde  
 Wynter, thai wol be seke and in the grounde  
 Her rootes faile, and sodainly thai die.  
 Ffor graffyng now cometh crafty husbandrie.

These bows, he says, in two years will grow into branches. But tillers complain that if they be cut down after the second winter they will besickly and their roots will die.

*De insitionibus.*

50.

- 344 As in this moone in places warm and glade  
 Thi graffyng goode it is to solemnyse,  
 Three maner graffynges may be made,  
 An tweyne of hem is now to do the gyse,  
 348 In somer doon the thridde hath his devyse,  
 Oon in the stok, oon graffeth under rynde;  
 Emplastering an other dothe in kynde.

There are three modes of grafting, two of which are to be done now; the third in summer. Some graft on the stock, some under the bark, others by plastering.

51.

- Thus graffe under the rynde a bough or tree,  
 352 There cicatrice is noon but plaine and clene.  
 So sawe it that the bark unbreded be,  
 And smothe it after with thi knyves kene.  
 A wegge of boone or yron putte bytwene  
 356 The bark and tree welnygh iii fingers depe  
 Avisily, the rynde unhurte to kepe.

Graft under the bark where there is no scar or mark, saw it without bruising the bark, and smooth it with a sharp knife, put a wedge of bone or iron between the bark and the tree three fingers deep, with care, to keep the bark unhurt.

<sup>1</sup> propagat.

Take out the wedge and slip in the graft, one half being cut, and the pith and the bark being whole on the other half, and it is its nature to rise over the head of the tree two hand-breadths.

52.

- Oute with this wegge, in with a graffe anoon,  
That oon half cutte, the pith hool and the rynde  
360 Upon that other half, and uppe to goon  
Ouer the hede two handbrede is his kynde.  
With risshes and with stren me must hem bynde,  
And III or IIII, as wol thi stok suffice,  
364 Asondered fyngers IIII is to devyse.

Let the graff be a handbreadth above the clay and moss. Others bind it tight and sharpen it.

53.

- Do clay uppon, and mose it alle aboute,  
And bynde it to so that the graffe stonde  
An handbrede up the messe and clay withoute.  
368 And other bynde it straitly with sum bonnde,  
And in the cloven hedes forto stonde,  
Thai graffes doon on either side & shave  
Sharppe as a wegge, her pith so that thai save.

54.

There must be a wedge, which, pulled out, the earth will ching (qy. *cling*) to the graft.

- 372 A wegge in it there must be put aforne,  
That, it, puld oute, the tree theron may chinge.  
This either crafte for springing tyme is borne,  
And worcheth while the moone is in springinge,  
376 Whenne graffes gynneth swelle in burgynyng.  
Ffertil and frisshe eke knotty sprongen newe  
Thi graffes be, so that estwarde thai grewe.

55.

A graft to be as large as the little finger, with several buds, cut from a young tree near the ground.

- The graffes be thi litel finger g(r)ette,  
380 And forked as with forkes oon or two  
With gemmes fele aboute on hem ysette.  
The yonger tree the better wol it doo.  
But nygh the grounde it must be cutte, and so  
384 Sette in the graffe atwixe his tree and rinde,  
And as is taught afore, is it to bynde.

## 56.

- Ane other take a graffe of that greetnesse  
 As is the stocke, that thai wol frist devyde.  
 388 This graffe unto that wol thai shappe and dresse  
 That bark with bark acorde on either side.  
 They cley and bynde it wel, but forto abyde  
 And growe it helpeth wel to doo goode lande  
 392 The stock aboute, until the graffe upstande.

Others make the bark of the graft correspond with the bark of the tree.

## 57.

- A diligent husbonde enformed me,  
 That doutlesse every graffyng wol comprende.  
 Untempered lyme yf with the graffes be  
 396 Put in the plagés there thai shall descende,  
 He saide her either sappe wol condescende  
 Unto that mene, and glewe hemself yfere  
 In mariage ymixt as though thai were.

A skilful husbandman told me every graft would take if untempered lime were put in the wound.

## 58.

- 400 Of emplastryng is after in his moone.  
 Eke Columelle hath told an other crafte  
 To graffe; unto the pith it is to doone,  
 A tree to bore and se nothing be lefte  
 404 Inwith this bore, and thenne a graffes shafte  
 Of vyne or tree with gemmes oon or two  
 By even mete unto that bore ydoo.

Of plaistering it will be spoken afterwards in the proper month. Columella has another method.

## 59.

- With clay and mosse it cloos advysely.  
 408 Thus in an elm a man may graffe a vyne.  
 A Spaniald taught me wonder gisily  
 To graffe, and bade me theron not divyne.  
 In peches it was preved tymes ix<sup>ne</sup>,  
 412 As forto take an arme greet withi bough  
 Two cubette longe or more and sadde ynough.

A Spaniard taught me a strange mode, which, he said, I might be sure of, as he had tried it often. Taking a branch of willow,



## 60.

he said, I must bore it in the middle, and cut a peach plant where it grew, and put the two ends of it into the bore, and clay and moss, and bind it.

- He saide amyddes thorowe I must it bore,<sup>1</sup>  
 And ther it growed croppe a plante of peche,  
 416 And there uppon let slippe adowne that bore<sup>2</sup>  
 That either hede into the lande forth reche.  
 Bende as a bowe, or vynes that men pleche,  
 And cleme it, mose it, bynde it softe aboute.  
 420 Quod he thus wol it growe it is noo doute.

## 61.

After a year the two will unite, and fruit without stones will grow on it. The willow loves moisture and to make other trees fruitful.

- A yere agoone, thai two wol joine as oon.  
 Thenne cutte away the roote under the bowe,  
 And ley goode erthe on everie side, and on  
 424 Withouten bones fruyt theron wol growe.  
 In places moist and ronke is moost to trowe  
 Upon this crafte: for withi loveth wete,  
 And children on an oth'r tree to gete.

## 62.

Olive yards to be made this month in temperate places.

- 428 This moone in places temperate olyve  
 In pastyne, or in tables brinckes sette,  
 Or in thaire groundes, beth to growe and thrive.  
 And oute of thi pastyne if thai be fette,  
 432 The hed and everie bough or smal or grette  
 Kitte of; a cubit and an handful longe  
 Thai must be sette if they shal have noo wronge.

## 63.

Cut off every dry part and cover the heads with clay or moss, and bind them. Let the same side turn towards the south as did before.

- Shouve a stake afore, and in doo kest  
 436 Sum barly seede, and kitte of everie drie,  
 Her hedes and mose, and bind hem fest.  
 The same side uppon the south to wrie,  
 As dede before, is holden husbondrie.  
 440 Let sette hem feete a sonder thries v,<sup>3</sup>  
 Or twies x,<sup>4</sup> as best is hem to thrive.

<sup>1</sup> penetrare.

<sup>2</sup> foramen.

<sup>3</sup> xv.

<sup>4</sup> xx.

## 64.

- Plucke uppe iche weede aboute, at everie reyne  
 Do delve up smal the moolde of every roote,  
 444 Let mynge it wel, and putte it on ayeine,  
 And more a litel herre upon it wrote.  
 But in his place if thou wolt have him soote,  
 Lande, mixt with cley, or sondly cley, fatte sonde,  
 448 Lande thicke and quicke, is goode in hem to stonde.

Whenever it rains dig up the mould at the roots. Mix it well, and put it on again, and heap it a little higher.

## 65.

- The potter's clay, the wlonk,<sup>1</sup> or sondy lene,  
 And naked cley nys nought; for, though it take,  
 It wol not cleve; eke there as ook hath bene  
 452 Or crabtree, the olyves it forsake.  
 The rootes wol thaire oile or slen or slake.  
 Northwarde of fervent grounde, southward of colde,  
 And enter both of hilly lande thai wolde.

Potter's clay, and marshy or sandy soil is useless, and where oak or crab trees have been. Olives prefer ground between north and south.

## 66.

- Her baies names :—oon is Pausia,  
 An other Orchas, then is Radius,  
 Licinia, Sergy, Comminia,  
 And many moo calde oth'r way then thus,  
 460 Whoos names shal unwritten be for us.  
 Oil Pausia, while it is greene, is best,  
 But sone in age it is corrupt and lest.

Pausia, Orchis, Radius. Sergia, Comminia, etc., names of olive berries.

## 67.

- Licinia her oil is best atte alle,  
 464 But Sergia hath moost in quanitee.  
 Suffice of hem to saie in general,  
 The grettest for the borde preserved be,  
 The smallest for thine oil ykepte thou se.  
 468 There corne is, sette hem xv foote atwene,  
 And xxv there as lande is lene.

Let the larger berries be kept for table, the smaller for oil.

<sup>1</sup> uliginosa.

Place them  
W.S.W. in  
trenches dug 3ft.  
deep. If there  
are no beasts, let  
the plants scarce  
appear above  
ground, but let  
them be higher  
where beasts arc.

- 68.
- And West Southweste hem forto order best is,  
In delves drie and footes IIII depe  
472 Idolve; and if the place is saaf for bestes  
Unneth oute of the lande thou lete hem crepe.  
And elles herree hem selven forto kepe  
Ffrom bestes byte, and ther as wanteth stonys.  
476 Cley mixt with donnge in settyn with hem doon is.

In dry places,  
where there are  
plants, plant  
boughs of olive  
five or six feet  
long, and trans-  
plant in five years.

- 69.
- There raynes faile, and lande is over drie,  
And nedeth to be wette and bere olyve,  
And plannte is noon hem with to multiplie,  
480 Lette sette into thi semynary blyve  
Olyves bowes VI feet longe or V.  
And V yere olde transplante hem in this moone  
To places colde, as best it is to doone.

Many have taken  
young olives from  
woods or deserts,  
and planted them  
a cubit long.

- 70.
- 484 I knowe hem that have take olyves yonge,  
This wey<sup>1</sup> is light and more utilitee,  
In wodes or desertes uppe yspronge,  
Kitte and sette a cubit long to be,  
488 And plantes fele have spronge of suche a tree.  
But in the semynairie moost thai roote  
With donnge and moolde admixt unto thaire roote.

*De pomiferis arboribus in generali.*

We shall speak  
by and bye of  
every kind of  
apple-tree. Land  
that is good for  
vines is good for  
them. Save top  
and bottom in  
setting them.

- 71.
- Now appultreen towarde Septentrion  
492 In pastyne is the season to dispose,  
That by and by shal of be saide ichone.  
Lande that is goode for vynes may be chose  
As goode for hem: but xxx<sup>ti</sup> footes pose  
496 Iche order of from other: croppe and tail  
To save in setting hem is thyne advail.

<sup>1</sup> interpositio.

72.

- Yeve every kynde an order by him selve,  
 Lest myghti treen the smal downe oppresse ;  
 500 And as the plantes growed, so thou delve  
 Hem uppe, and so to stand ayeine hem dresse ;  
 Ffrom clif to playne, from lene unto fatnesse,  
 Ffrom dried lande to moiste is hem to bringe.  
 504 Transplant hem so, and sone up wol thai springe.

Plant trees of the same kind by themselves. Transplant them in the same direction as they stood.

73.

- The stocke, if thou wolt set it, doo to stonde  
 Three foote in heght, and plantes forto sette  
 Tweyne in oon delve is not to take on honde  
 508 Ffor wormes, and lest either oth'r lette.  
 In places drie also thai must be wette.  
 Yit Columelle he saithe of seedes sowe  
 Or nuttes wol best bering treen up growe.

Let the stock be 3ft. high. Do not set two plants in one hole. Columella says nuts grow best from seed.

*De vitibus et plantis circumfodiendis.*

74.

- 512 Nowe by the see coste and in hoothe countree  
 The vynes delve or cree, as is to doon,  
 Now staked and upbounden wol thai be.  
 Olyves nowe and oth'r treen ichone  
 516 Do dounge hem in decresinge of the moone,  
 The gretter tree, the gretter quantitee  
 Therof, and half so moche a litel tree.

Now dig or plough round vines by the sea-coast, and dung vines at the waning of the moon.

75.

- Ffrist from the roote abate of alle the moolde  
 520 And mynge it weel with dounge, and kest it on  
 Ayaine. Eke in the seminary sholde  
 The plantes now be mylged everichone,  
 And branches now superfluent of gone,  
 524 And rootes smale of noon utilitee  
 Cutte of for lettyng of fertilittee.

The plants in the nursery should now be dug about, and superfluous branches and useless roots cut off to avoid hindering fertility.

## 76.

Rose-beds to be made this month with sets. The seeds are little berries like pears, which are brown when ripe.

- This moone is eke the rosaries to make  
 With setes,<sup>1</sup> or me may here sedes sowe.  
 528 The floure me with the roos is not to take  
 But baies, that as litel peres growe;  
 By broune coloure and softenesse is to knowe  
 Yf thai be ripe. Eke now is to repare  
 532 Rosaries olde, and drynesse of to pare.

## 77.

Dig round them, and if they are thin, plant more.

- Nowe unbydelve<sup>2</sup> hem, and if thai be rare,  
 Me may hem thicke, enducyng planntes moo,  
 With crafte eke roses erly riped are.  
 536 Tweyne handbrede of aboute her rootes doo  
 A delvyng make, and every day thereto  
 Doo water warme. Now hilly bulbes sowe  
 Or sette, and wede hem that of rather growe.

## 78.

Be careful to weed them. Separate small bulbs from the mother-plant.

- 540 In wedyng hem thou must be diligent  
 Ffor hurtyng of her bulbe, or of her eye.  
 But bulbes smale uppe from her moder hent  
 Let putte in oth'r lande to multiplie.  
 544 The violet to plannte is nowe to trie.  
 Now saffron bulbes beth to sette or sowe,  
 Or subtillie to delve, if that thai growe.

## 79.

Sow linseed in rich land ten bushels to an acre; and place reeds in shallow holes half a foot apart.

- Nowe sum in soile ydounded lynseede sowe,  
 548 X bussshels serveth for an acre lande.  
 Fful subtil flaxe and smal therof wol growe,  
 And also thicke and longe as it may stande.  
 Cannetes<sup>3</sup> nowe with craftes may be fande.  
 552 In delves breef this cannes eyon doo,  
 And iche half a foote his felawe froo.

<sup>1</sup> plantas.

<sup>2</sup> circumfodias.

<sup>3</sup> canneta.

## 80.

- In places drie and hooete me must assigne  
 Hem mooldes moist, and ther as it is colde.  
 556 To weete is nought; to drie is nought; benynynge  
 Is goode, so that the towne water doune folde  
 Streght hem amonge. Sperages seede eke holde  
 Is goode hem with, with hem to springe.  
 560 Ffor cannes and sperage have oon tillynge.

Give them a moist  
 mould, not too  
 wet nor too dry,  
 but benign.  
 Sprinkle aspara-  
 gus seed amongst  
 them.

## 81.

- Cannetes olde eke tyme is nowe to wede,  
 And of to kytte it that thaire roote uneseth,  
 And hem that rote or crokydly procede.  
 564 The barein eyles canne also displeseth.  
 Nowe wylous, busshes, bromes, thing that eseth  
 Let plannte; and nowe of mirte and laures baies  
 To make or tile a seminary day is.<sup>1</sup>

Weed and cut off  
 obstructions  
 from the root, and  
 remove the eye-  
 less plants. Plant  
 willows, etc., for  
 their service.  
 Make or till beds  
 of myrtle.

*De Ortis et diversis herbis.*

## 82.

- 568 And atte this moones Idus is goode houre  
 To make a gardaine hegge, as is beforne  
 Itought, when the was saide in fitches floure  
 The seede to keepe of brere and houndes thorne.  
 572 Ffor hegges made of it shall not be torne.  
 The Greek saithe of scions of fatty brere  
 As vynes sette, an hegge a man may rere.

Make garden  
 hedges in the  
 middle of March,  
 as you were told  
 to keep the seed  
 of briar and  
 hound'sthorn in  
 flour of vetches.  
 Sow lettuce to  
 plant out in April.

## 83.

- But everie day me must it delve and weete  
 576 Until it take. Eke letuce is nowe sowe,  
 In Aprill it to plannte in other lete.  
 Nowe trefull, cresse, and coriander growe,  
 Nowe popy seede in grounde is goode to throwe.  
 580 Nowe savery seede in fatte undounged londe  
 Dooth weel, and nygh the see best wol it stonde.

Trefoil, cress, co-  
 riander, poppy,  
 and savoury to be  
 sown now.

<sup>1</sup> tempus est.



## 84.

Onions may be sown in spring or autumn. Grown from seed they will have a small body and great head.

- Smal onyons be with it, or by hem selve  
 I sowe ; eke hem in veer and in harvest  
 584 Thai sowe, whoos seede in moolde if that me delve,  
 The body smal, the hede wol be grettest.  
 But onyons as for seede to sette is best.  
 The hede wol dwyne awaie as it wolde die,  
 588 The croppe encrece, and seedes multiplie.

## 85.

Weeds and roots to be taken carefully out of an onion bed. Sown at the new moon they will belarge, at the full moon small and bitter.

- Ffate lande ydounded moist and wel ywrought  
 Onyons desire. In it lete beddes make  
 Iche herbe and roote oute of it fetely sought.  
 592 A plesaunte day and clere to sowe in take,  
 And grettest wol the growyng moone hem make  
 And sweet ynough ; the wanyng of the moone  
 Wol make hem smale and bitter everichoone.

## 86.

Pluck off the leaves from the top to make their heads swell. If you wish for seeds prop them up. When ripe they become black.

- Let hem be thynne ynough, and weede hem ofte,  
 And if the list her hedes forto swelle,  
 Plucke of the foiles alle aboute on lofte.  
 So wol the juce inwith her hedes dwelle,  
 600 And thai that shall of seedes bere a belle,  
 Let raile hem uppe, and when thaire seedes blake,  
 That thai be ripe of that a signe is take.

## 87.

Dill may now be sown in any climate. Water it in dry weather, but weed it seldom. Some think that no bird will harm it.

- Half drie up plucke hem, in the sonne hem drie.  
 604 Now dile in places colde is goode to sowe,  
 Hit may with everie ayer under the skye.  
 Gladder it is there warmer wyndes blowe,  
 And water hem yf shoures be to slowe.  
 608 But wede hem seld. Eke sum have this bileve,  
 That bare ylefts there shall noo foul<sup>1</sup> it greve.

<sup>1</sup> avis.

## 88.

- Senvey lete sowe it nowe, and cool sede bothe,  
 And when the list, weelwrought fatte lande thai love,  
 612 And sondy cley gravelous thai lothe.  
 But yf it reyned day and nyght above  
 Ther may noo wether harme hem, nor remove.  
 But sette hem southwarde sonner wol thai preve,  
 616 Septentrion wol make hem latter cheve.

Sow mustard and colewort in rich land, not sandy. No rain will injure them. A south aspect brings them sooner than a northern.

## 89.

- But there<sup>1</sup> thai wol be greet and savoure well.  
 The clyf thai love and fatte ydounded londe,  
 And weded well it mot ben everidell,  
 620 Eke sumdel ferre asonder must thai stonde.  
 To make hem hoor as frost eke crafte is fonde :  
 Let grounden glasse goo sifte on hem aboute,  
 When thaire trefoil or quaterfoil is oute.

They like hills and rich land, but it must be always well weeded. To make them white, sift ground glass on them when they have three or four leaves.

## 90.

- 624 This wol hem make in vigoure long dwelle,  
 And forto seethe eke tender wol thai be.  
 To holde hem grene, eke chargeth Columelle  
 Thaire rootes in see froth wrapped to se,  
 628 And therwithall of dounge a quantitee.  
 And sette hem greet aparty, for though longe  
 Or then thai taked be, thai wol be stronge.

Columella would wrap their roots in sea-weed to keep them green. Set them far apart, that though it be long ere they take root, they may be stronger.

## 91.

- In winter sette hem in a warme day ;  
 632 In summer whenne the sonne gothe to rest ;  
 And hele her lande the wyder wol thai splay.  
 Oold brassic seede to rape eschaungeth fest.  
 And nygh this moones Idus eke is best  
 636 Sponge of Sperage or newe of seedes fourme,  
 Or olde as newe me may sette and refourme.

They will spread more widely if you cover them. Old cabbage seed turns to rape. In the middle of March sow spungy roots of asparagus, or make new beds of seed.

<sup>1</sup> in Septentrion.

## 92.

Asparagus seeds  
will multiply  
where every-  
thing else dies.  
Burn them every  
year in bundles  
(scopes).

- Me semeth this is good and profitable.  
Wild asperages rootes many trie  
640 Into erthe ytilde, or stony lande is able  
Ynough for hem : for thai wol multiplie  
There as all other treen and herbes deye,  
And every yere in scopes hem to brenne,  
644 And thicker, gretter, swetter wol up renne.

## 93.

Mallow, mint,  
fennel, and pars-  
nips sown or  
planted this  
month.

- Nowe malowe is sowe, and myntes plannte or roote<sup>1</sup>  
In places moist, or water nygh is sowe.  
Nowe dounge fatte lande axeth thai to roote;<sup>2</sup>  
648 So it be gladde; eke fenel wol up growe,  
So it be gladde;—in stony lande ythrowe  
Persnepes sede; or planntes fatte and rare  
Pastyned depe ysette in this moone are.

## 94.

Marjoram, and  
chervil, and bete  
to be sown: the  
last to be trans-  
planted when it  
has four or five  
leaves.

- 652 Nowe cunula is sowe and hath culture  
As onyons or garlec, and now cerfoil<sup>3</sup>  
After this moones Idus doo thi cure  
To sowe in fatte and moist ydounge soil.  
656 Nowe betes sowe, and synk or quaterfoil  
Transplannte, and somer thorough hem me sowe,  
In fatte lande moist ydounge wol thai growe.

## 95.

Make the roots  
feast on dung.  
To make leeks  
frough (or ten-  
der) cut off the  
blades as they re-  
main two months  
in their bed.

- The rootes wolde in dounge ydipped be,  
660 And delve hem ofte, and make hem feeste of dounge,  
And now thi leek ysowen is to se.  
To make hem frough, kytte of the blades longe  
Right as thai growyng beth ii monethes yonge,  
664 And right ther in her beddes leve hem dwelle.  
Yet oth'wise enfourmeth Columelle.

<sup>1</sup> radicem.

<sup>2</sup> radicare.

<sup>3</sup> cerefolium.

## 96.

- And when ye plannte it, dounge and water doo  
 Therto; but heded yf thou list it have,  
 668 In veer lete sowe, in October goo too  
 And transplannte it; fatte londes wol it crave,  
 Plaine, dolven deep and dounge best it save;  
 And weede it ofte. Eke thicke ysowe is frough,  
 672 And rare ysowe is heded greet and tough.

To make them grow to head, sow in spring, and transplant in October,

## 97.

- A finger greet is rounde ynough to sette,  
 And in the myddes cut of every blade;  
 The rootes eke cutte and umbiwette  
 676 With dounge is goode her sprynging forto glade.  
 An hand asonder sette hem with thi spade.  
 And whenne thai rooteth, raise hem with thi hande,  
 That thai suspense a partie so may stande.

when they are an inch round. Saturate the roots all round with dung, and loosen the ground with a spade, and set them a span apart.

## 98.

- 680 So wol thou finde a space under thaire roote  
 And heded full, eke forto make hem greet,  
 Doo seedes fele yfere, and thai wol roote  
 Yfere, and in oon body wol thai greet,  
 684 And rape seed into thaire hedes geet.  
 All yronles wol make hem growe faste,  
 And ofte ydoon, the faster wol thai haste.

Plant many seeds together, and they will grow into one root together. They will grow faster if no iron be used.

## 99.

- The chibol now, ther as cannetes growe,  
 688 His eyen<sup>1</sup> sowe of cutte as is the reed,<sup>2</sup>  
 All softly in the dolven lande hem throwe,  
 And sowe hem by a lyne other a threed.  
 Three feet to stande a sonder is her speed.  
 692 The bulbes of calcases setting sone  
 In landes moiste and fatte is goode this moone.

The chibol (inula) is grown from eyes cut off. The bulbs of the Colocasia (Egyptian bean) to be planted this month.

<sup>1</sup> oculos.

<sup>2</sup> calamus.

## 100.

They grow best near a well. They last almost for ever if defended from cold. Cummin and anise to be sown now.

- Thai sette nought by the ayres qualitee,  
 And gladde be thai to stande aboute awelle  
 696 That humour ever may thaire boteler be.  
 Ffrom hem yf thou defende eke coldes felle  
 In thaire growyng almost they ever dwelle.  
 Nowe comyn and aneyse is fatte ysowe  
 700 In dounded lande and weeded wel to growe.

*De diversis arboribus in pomario.*

## 101.

The pear-tree to be planted in cold places in February; in a warmer soil in November.

- The peretree plannte is sette in places cold  
 Atte ffeveryere, and there as is a warmer ayer  
 In Novemb'r; and then eke goode is holde  
 704 To graffe hem thir moist erthe is her goode leire;  
 So shall the fruyte be greet, and floures feire.  
 Thai in such erthe as vynes love abounde,  
 Ffatte lande maketh mighty treen and right fecounde.

## 102.

A stony pear is said to change its flavour if it be grafted into generous land. It is a chance if you obtain a tree from a plant.

- 708 A stannry<sup>1</sup> pere is saide to chantage is mete  
 In easy lande ygraffed if he be:  
 Hit is but happe of plannte a tree to gete.  
 And if thou wilt take of a gentil tree  
 712 Not wilde atte alle withoute asperitee,  
 When it is two yere olde or iii, to thrive,  
 Goode is to sette it as men sette olyve.

## 103.

Pears will also grow from seed. We need not despair though nature be slow. To her eternity delay is not tedious.

- But sette hem rooted wel in delves wyde  
 716 III foote or iii in heght, and cropped feire,  
 With cley and mosse her hedes hode and hide.  
 Eke seedes sowen peres wol repire.  
 Nature such it is not to dispriere  
 720 Late yf she be: for targyng may not be  
 Ffastidiose in her eternitee.

<sup>1</sup> lapidosum.

## 104.

- But longe it is a man theron to dwelle.  
 Thaire noblesse eke thai wol departe froo.  
 724 Therefore is better doo as I wol telle :  
 In Novemb'r the wilde tree to doo  
 Be graffed first sette and rooted to,  
 In delves large ynough and dolven deep,  
 728 That rootes easily may under creep.

But rather than wait so long it is better to graft them on wild trees in November.

## 105.

- Do graffe hem in hemsself, and thai wol be  
 Tender and sweete; eke thai may not endure.  
 And if me graffe hem in an other tree,  
 732 The lenger wol thai last in lesse cure.  
 And xxx<sup>ti</sup> foote asonder for lesure  
 Is hem to sette. Eke humour is availle  
 To hem, and delve hem ofte is goode travaille.

If grafted on their own stocks they will be tender and sweet, but will not keep. Grafted on another tree they will last longer. To dig them often is so good,

## 106.

- 736 It is so goode that in the blossomyng  
 She wol not lese a floure that forth is brought.  
 The delver is to help her with delvyng,  
 And every oth'r yere she wolde be wrought  
 740 With spade, and dounge is therto to be sought.  
 Oxe dounge about her rootes yf that me trete,  
 The pomes sadde and brawny wol it gete.

that a tree so managed will not lose a flower in blossoming. If ox-dung be spread about the roots, the fruits will be firm and strong.

## 107.

- And sum also dooth askes with this dounge.  
 744 Thai seyne therof ther wol goode taste arise.  
 The kynde of hem to telle it is to longe,  
 While thaire tillinge is not in dyvers gise.  
 The peretree seek is heled in this wyse.  
 748 Let make it bare, and bore it thorowe the roote,  
 And drive a pyne therein wol doon it boote.

Some mix ashes therewith to improve the flavour. It is too long to toll their varieties. A sick pear-tree should have it roots bared, be bored through, and have a pin driven in.



## 108.

Another cure is to bore the stock and drive in it a pin made of a brand, or, failing that, of an oak, and there will be no worms if bullock's gall be poured upon the roots.  
To prevent their blossoming too long,

- Or elles thus: let bore it thorowe the stook,  
And doo therin a pynne made of a bronde,  
752 And if the wanteth that, take of an ooke,  
And wormes wol ther noon in it be fonde,  
Yf ofte uppon the rootes as thai stonde  
The boles galle enfused be; and more  
756 Ffor blossomyng to longe is herof lore.

## 109.

pour wine-dreggs three days on the roots of the trees.

- Of wynes olde it is to take dregges,  
The dregges must be newe, and daies three  
Infounde hem on thi trees feet and legges,  
760 So wol the blossom parte from the tree.  
And lapidose if that thi peres be  
Let voide all erthe and stones from the roote,  
And sifte in oth'r erthe: and this is boote.

## 110.

Graft pears in February and March, as shewn before.  
Grafting may be done, according to Virgil, on the melo (apple), almond and thorn, fold (mountain ash), ash, etc.

- 764 But wete it ofte and longe, or this is nought.  
To graffe is goode in Marche and ffeveryere.  
Howe forto graffe afore is must be sought  
In rinde and stok for graffing the manere.  
768 Ther is also grafting in trees sere,  
As melo, almonde, and thorn, as saith Virgile,  
<sup>1</sup>Foolde, ashes, quynce, and ponyk cleef his stile.

## 111.

The pear-tree to be grafted before the longest day must be a year old, and first remove the stalks and leaves.

- The peretree graffe ygraffed forto be  
772 Er thenne the day be lengest oon yere olde  
Must been, and or me sette him in the tree  
The tendron and the leves of thou folde.  
But when the daies gynneth shortte and colde,  
776 Then graffe hem that the tender croppes bere,  
And grafting is for every manner pere.

<sup>1</sup> Orno, fraxino, cydonis, punico finde lignum.

## 112.

- To make a savery pere and weel smellinge  
 In daies feire and wanyng of the moone,  
 780 From xxii dayes olde wanyng  
 Till dayes viii with hande it is to doone  
 That fruyt be puled, and of oon kynde aloone  
 From vii unto x, from ii til v,  
 784 Thees houres 6 outetake thi peres blyve.

Pears for preserving are to be gathered by hand from the 22nd to the 8th, all of one sort, and between the hours of 7 and 10, and 2 and 5. Take out your pears these six hours.

## 113.

- So thai be drie, and not caduc and harde,  
 And hool, and sumdel greene, and then hem doo  
 In sum vessel pitched wel upwarde.  
 788 The bothom doo this vessel closed soo.  
 And where a place is with a brooke through goo,  
 Continully there hide hem in the grounde.  
 For peres yit an other crafte is founde.

Place them dry, hard, sound, and greenish in a pitched vessel, and keep them underground near a running stream.

## 114.

- As forto pulle hem hardde of flessch and skynne  
 And keep hem uppe: but when thai gynneth softe,  
 Let take an erthen potte, and putte hem ynne,  
 And pitche it fast, and cley it wel clofte,  
 796 And delve it under moolde, in with thi crofte  
 There as the sunne all day uppon it shyne.  
 And sum in wheete or chaff wol hem reclyne.

Another plan is to gather them hard, and keep them till they become soft; then put them in a pan well pitched, and clay it at the top, and bury it within your garden.

## 115.

- And other take hem tough and fast encloos  
 800 Hem in a potte ypitched or with cley  
 Ystopped fast, and in the sonde dispose  
 It in the sonne, and other men wol ley  
 Her peres tough in hony so that they  
 804 Ne touche not, eke peres men divide  
 And pike away the greyne of every syde.

Others lay them in sand in the sun; others put them in honey, slicing the pears and taking out pips.

Others put them into salt water which has been boiled and skimmed, and then lay them in a pitched pot. Or macerate them a day and a night in salt water, and keep in bragot, wine, or mead.

## 116.

- And piked so in sonnes hem they drie.  
 Oon boileth water salt and skommeth clene,  
 808 Therinto colde his peres wol he trie,  
 Then into a pitched potte he wol hem glene;  
 Or salt water oon day and nyght hem lene,<sup>1</sup>  
 Then fresshe water two daies on hem steep,  
 812 In bragot then or wyne or meeth hem kepe.

Pear - wine is made by straining them through a fine sack. Summer will make it sour. Winter will harden it and make it keep. Vinegar is made of ripe pears kept in heaps for three days.

## 117.

- Of peres wyne is made, if thai be grounde  
 And thorough a rare saak with fors ywronge.  
 Yit somer wol it soure and so confounde,  
 816 And winter wol endure and kepe it longe.  
 Of peres soure and wilde it is noo wronge  
 Aysell to bringe, all ripe yf that thai be  
 Ytake and kepte uphed daies three.

## 118.

- 820 Then in a vessel se that thai be doo,  
 And water with of rayne or of the welle,  
 Then hele it feire, or se that it be soo,  
 And xxx daies therin lette hem dwelle.  
 824 Now aisel take unto thine use, or selle.  
 But se what quantitee therof thou take  
 With water up the summe ayenie thou make.

## 119.

To make castimomial liquor: take ripe pears, whole, with salt, place them in clean jars, or suspend them after three months in earthen pots well pitched.

- And make liquamen castimomiall  
 828 Of peres thus: take peres right mature  
 And with hool salt, and hem [and] fleshhe and all,  
 When thai been resolute, in stondes peres (pure)  
 Or erthen pottes pitched save and sure,  
 832 And after III monethes do hem suspende,  
 And right goode licoure of hem wol descende.

<sup>1</sup> macerant.

## 120.

- His taste is goode, and whitisse his coloure.  
 Ffor that when salt and it is doon yfere,  
 836 A blakkishe wyne commixt it dothe socoure.  
 And in the moones of Marche and ffeveryere  
 The meles graffed beth, but there as clere  
 Is aier, and hoote, and drie. It may be doo  
 840 In October and November also.

To improve the colour, when the salt is mixed with it, add black wine. Graft apples in February and March.

## 121.

- Her kyndes forto write I wol not waste.  
 Fatte lande thai love, and moiste in nature.  
 In cley, or in gravel men mosten haaste  
 844 To water hem ofte; in hilles is to cure  
 To set hem on the Southe if thai shall ure.  
 Thai growe also in places colde, if the aier  
 Be sumdel warme and helping to thair laier.

Men must water them in clay or gravel. In hills it is best if they use to set them on the south.

## 122.

- 848 Also thai growe in places hardde and wete,  
 And wormy wol thai be in drie and lene;  
 And hem to graff as peres me may trete.  
 The plough or spade aboute hem be not sene,  
 852 Fforthi the bette in medes may thai bene.  
 And dounge, alle though thai noon or litel crave,  
 Yit gladly wol thai take, and gladly have.

In dry, lean soil, apples become wormy. Not allowing spade or plough, they do better in meadows.

## 123.

- And namely askes medled therwith alle  
 856 Thai loveth, eke to dwell in region  
 There as the heet is neith'r greet ne small,  
 Eke thai be apte unto putacion  
 Of bowes drie or foule elacion.  
 860 This tree is olde anoon, and in his age  
 He goothe oute of his kynde into dotage.

They like ashes mixed with dung, also a temperate climate, and the cutting off of boughs which are dry or of foul growth. The tree soon grows old.

## 124.

To prevent apples falling, cleave the root. To prevent their rotting, touch them with the gall of a newt. Worms in apples are killed by a mixture of swines dung with ox-gall.

- Caduce if that the fruyte be, cleef the roote,  
 And putte in hit a stoone, and it wol dwelle.  
 864 For rotyng of the croppe the galle is boote  
 To touch hem with of neutes grene, eke quelle  
 Her wormes thus: take swynes dounge, and melle  
 It with uryne of man or oxes galle,  
 868 And meles wormes this wol sleen hem alle.

## 125.

Or strap them off with a strap of brass, and plaister dung, upon the wound.

- Yf wormes feel upon hem be withoute  
 A strape of braas let strape hem of therwith,  
 And cleme upon the wounde oxe dounge aboute ;  
 872 And ovre thicke yf that the fruytes beth,  
 Plucke of the feble fruyte, as reason seth,  
 Hem to discharge, and juce it then wol dresse  
 It into thayme that are of gentilnesse.

## 126.

Graft apples on pears, plums, apple-trees, service-trees, willows, etc. Keep them in a dark place out of the wind, and put straw upon the crate under them with a little space between the heaps.

- 876 In peretree, thorn, in plumme, and apple tree  
 In serve, and peche, in plane and popule,  
 In wylous may this meles grafted be,  
 But trie hem wel that shal be kept over yere ;  
 880 Let ley hem derk as wynde may not come nere.  
 And do feire stree upon thaire fleyke<sup>1</sup> hem under  
 On hepes save a litel space asonder.

## 127.

Different persons keep them in different ways. Stick the stalks in clay, and lay them on a floor strowed with chaff.

- These heepes must me nowe and nowe devide.  
 884 Yit beth ther dyvers folk sayen dyvers wyse.  
 And oon in pitched pottes wol hem hyde,  
 And other hath of cley an oth'r gyse.  
 Yit hath the thridde of hem a fresshe devyse.  
 888 Oonly the litel feet<sup>2</sup> to cleme in cley  
 And on a floor with chaf bystrowed ley.

<sup>1</sup> crate.

<sup>2</sup> pediculos.

## 128.

- And theruppon thai cover hem with stre.  
 The meles rounde, ycalde orbiculer,  
 892 Withouten care a yere may keped be.  
 And other drenche hem in the water clere  
 Of cisterne, or of wynche yclosed nere,  
 In erthen pottes pitched atte the fulle,  
 896 And other meles wol with handes pulle,

Apples called orbicular keep well for a year. Others preserve them in water; and others pick the apples by hand,

## 129.

- And dippe her litel feet<sup>1</sup> in pitche alle warme,  
 And so in order ley hem on a table,  
 And nuttre leves under wol not harme.  
 900 Eke populer or fir is profitable  
 To make and ley among hem scobes able,  
 And let her petifeet dounwarde be wende,  
 And touche hem not until thai shal be spende.

and dip the stalks in warm pitch, and lay them under the leaves of the nut-tree, or shavings (scobes) of fir or poplar.

## 130.

- 904 Aisel and wyne of meles me may make  
 As is above enfourmed of the pere.  
 To graffe a quynce is dyvers tyme ytake.  
 Thaire planntes I have sayen in Ytail here  
 908 The Citee nygh ysette in ffeveryere,  
 Or of the fronnte of Marche in dounged moolde,  
 So that thai rooted were, and right wel holde.

I have seen plants of the quince in Italy, near the city, set in February.

## 131.

- Holde have thai so that in the yere secounde  
 912 Ffruyt have thai hadde yf that me sette hem greet,  
 In thende of Octob'r thai wol abounde,  
 Or sone in Novemb'r yf that me trete  
 Hem into place of drynesse and of hete.  
 916 But ther as drie it is thay must be wette.  
 Thai love in colde and moist eke to be sette.

They have borne fruit in the second year. Where it is dry they must have moisture.

<sup>1</sup> pediculos.



## 132.

They bear quickly in temperate places on hills and plains. Men graft from their tops and their stock, but that work seldom avails.

- Thai bere anoon in places temperate,  
And forth thai come in cleves and in planys.  
920 Thai love lande devexe and inclinate.  
Men graffeth of thaire toppes and thair tranys;  
That werk or seelde availle, or sone yslayne is.  
And wide hem so that though the wynd hem shake,  
924 Noo droop of oon until an other take.

## 133.

Add ashes and chalk to large plants. Constant moisture will enlarge them.

- Yf thai be smale sette, helpe hem with dounge,  
Yf thai be greet, askes and shalkes do to.<sup>1</sup>  
Atte ones serve hem thus in all yere longe.  
928 Eterne<sup>2</sup> humour wol greet hem, and also  
Hit wol hem ripe sone, and yf thaire no  
Reyne be, me muste hem wete and umbydelve,  
That doon, let God therwith alone him selve.

## 134.

Unless they are dug at the right time, otherwise we shall get no fruit. I promise you I have proved that if they are cut they will be free from vice.

- 932 Atte Marche or Feveryere in landes colde,  
Atte Octob'r or Novemb'r in hete,  
But thai be delven aboute as thai wolde,  
Other me shal of hem noo fruytes gete,  
936 Or oute of kynde; also that I you hete<sup>3</sup>  
Y preved have, ykette if that thai be,  
Thai wol been oute of vice in libertee.

## 135.

If the tree be sick, pour on the roots oil-dregs mixed with water in equal quantities. Or resin mixed with tar doth boot (good).

- The tree is seek, oildregges watermynge  
940 Yliche of either, helde it to the roote.  
Or let quyk lyme with chalk resolvng synge,  
Or resyne<sup>4</sup> mixt with taar<sup>5</sup> that is so soote.  
Ennointe aboute of this, for this doothe boothe.  
944 Or make the rootes bare, and ley aroute  
Of quynces to, to go the roote aboute.

<sup>1</sup> misce.<sup>2</sup> continuus.<sup>3</sup> promitto.<sup>4</sup> resina.<sup>5</sup> pice liquida.

## 136.

- Do this from yere to yere, and thai be saf  
 Ffor vice; eke ther ayeine thai nyl not dure.  
 948 In ffeveryere this quynces is to graffe,  
 The rynde as in the stok is not so sure  
 Hem into graffe, and graffing to assure  
 In hem of everie fruyte, punyk<sup>1</sup> and serve<sup>2</sup>  
 952 And appletreen eke best for hem thai serve.

It will, on the other hand, prevent their enduring long.

## 137.

- Thaire yonge treen, ther juce is, in the rynde  
 Is goode to graffe, and old if that thai be,  
 To graffe atte the roote it is her kynde  
 956 Ther as the soil as well the bark as tree  
 Hath benefited with humyditee.  
 Hem ripe ypulde men kepe in dyvers wise.  
 And first of tiles tweyne is oon devyse:

Graft young trees in the bark, old ones at the root. There are divers ways of keeping them: first between two tiles

## 138.

- Do hem betwene, and cley it every side,  
 Or in defrute or passe. Sethe hem feire  
 The grettest wol an other out devyde,  
 And in figtrees leves many a peire<sup>3</sup>  
 964 He wolde do folde of hem, so nyl thai peire.<sup>4</sup>  
 An other wol in places drie enclude  
 Hem, and the wynde and aiers bothe exclude.

covered with clay and laid in *defrutum* or *passum*. Others wrap many pairs of them in fig-leaves.

## 139.

- He wol with iver<sup>5</sup> or with reed<sup>6</sup> devyde  
 968 Hem uppon IIII, and take away the core,  
 And into a potful hony let hem slide:  
 He dothe hem hool in hony lesse and more.  
 But ripe ynongh beth best this keping fore.  
 972 And sum in mylde,<sup>7</sup> and sum ychaved deep,  
 And sum in swete wynes wol hem kepe.

Another will divide them into four parts with ivory or cane, and put them into a pot full of honey. Some keep them in millet or chaff.

<sup>1</sup> punici. <sup>2</sup> sorbi. <sup>3</sup> paria. <sup>4</sup> perire. <sup>5</sup> ebore. <sup>6</sup> canna. <sup>7</sup> milio.

140.

Another encloses them in a tun with must. Now and in November transplant carob-trees.

Oon with his muste hem closeth in the tonne;  
 An oth'r saithe that in a panne all newe  
 976 Doo hem with dried cley and thai be wonne.  
 Nowe and in Novemb'r is to renewe  
 The Siliqua<sup>1</sup> in planntes and seedes trewe.  
 Hit loveth places nygh the See syde,  
 980 And places hardde and drie, eke feeldes wyde.'

141.

Plant their stems in large trenches.

The fruit keeps long if spread in large layers.

Experte am I that thai in places warme  
 Wol best abounde ywattered if thai be,  
 Thaire palmes forto sette it dooth (a)noon harme,  
 984 But delves large ynough for hem thou se.  
 Now graffe hem in the plumme<sup>2</sup> and almond tree.  
 This fruyt is longe ykepte withouten drede,  
 In fleykes feire yf that men list hem sprede.

142.

Mulberries grown from seed, but more quickly from truncheons.

988 Molberytree wol growe uppe of his seede,  
 But bough and fruyte wol turne oute of his kynde.  
 The crophe or talions to graffe is speed,  
 But talions<sup>3</sup> the better me shall finde  
 992 On eith'r half made smothe, unhurt the rynde  
 As in a graffe, and umbigoone with dounge.  
 And se that thai been ichone oo<sup>4</sup> foote longe.

143.

Here, *i.e.* in Italy, graft mulberries in March. In warmer places in October or November.

To sette hem first make redy place, and when  
 996 Me setteth hem mynge askes with the moolde,  
 And handbrede in the lande be hidde, and then  
 Saye God save all! In Marche and nowe thai wolde  
 Be grafted here, and ferther froo the colde  
 1000 In thende of Octob'r, or in the toppe<sup>5</sup>  
 Of Novemb'r in the lande is hem to stoppe.

<sup>1</sup> a maner tree.

<sup>2</sup> pruno.

<sup>3</sup> talias.

<sup>4</sup> Orig. *sesquipedalibus*.

<sup>5</sup> initio.

## 144.

- Hit loveth places hoote and ful of sande  
 And nygh the see, not stony lande, ne cley.  
 1004 Unneth in it thai take a foote to stande,  
 Much humour dooth hem woo, but glad be they  
 With delvyng ofte and douncing, soothe to sey.  
 And after yeres three the drosse and drie  
 1008 Doo kitte it of, and thai wol multiplie.

Mulberries scarcely take root in clay. After three years cut off the dross and dry wood.

## 145.

- In Octob'r or Novemb'r lette sette  
 The planntes bigge; and, tender yf thai be,  
 This Feveryere and Marche is for hem bette.  
 1012 Thaire delves deep and rowme asonder the,  
 That shades<sup>1</sup> stretche not froo tree to tree.  
 Eke as me saithe thai wol be faire, and bringe  
 Up fruite ynough by connyng of boring.

February and March are better for weak plants. Make the holes deep and a space between that the shade of one stretch not to another, bore them through

## 146.

- 1016 Let bore hem thorough the bodie here and there,  
 And putte in everie hole a wegge or pynne,  
 A birchen here, a terebynten there.  
 And whenne kalende of Octob'r cometh inne,  
 1020 Make bare his rootes right unto the skynne.  
 Old wynes dregges fresshe on hem infounde,  
 And thai wol be the fressher and fecounde.

the stocks, and put a wedge or pin in every hole. Pour fresh dregs of old wine on the roots.

## 147.

- In figtree, in hemsself under the rynde  
 1024 Me may hem graffe, and in an elm thai take;  
 But in this Elm thai greteth<sup>2</sup> oute of kynde.  
 A walnuttree thaire nuttes nowe wol make,  
 Two finger deep in erthe is hem to stake.  
 1028 Experte am I thaire planntes best to growe,  
 But sette hem nowe, eke now thaire nuttes sowe.

Grafts take on the elm, but grow overlarge. Nuts will now grow into a walnuttree, but I know from experience that plants are best.

<sup>1</sup> umbre.<sup>2</sup> grandescunt.

## 148.

Wet, lean land is best for them. They ripen about the nones of July. Now plant kernels of myx (qy. damsons) in a pot, as many as may sprout.

- Weet, colde, and lenyssh, sandy lande is best  
 Ffor hem, and thai been ripe atte Jules nonys.<sup>1</sup>  
 1032 Now curnels of myxe it is to kest  
 In moulde in sum vessell so feel atte onys  
 As wel may spire, and when thaire spir up goone is,  
 Warme aier, molsh lande, and humour moderate,  
 1036 Let plannte hem ther, and uppe gothe thair astate.

## 149.

Graft them in March on thorn or service-tree. It is beneficial to plant and graft the mastick.

- He may ont graffe atte Marche in thorn and serve.<sup>2</sup>  
 Eke tuberes nowe sowe and graffe, and nowe  
 The benes hardde of mastic tree wol serve<sup>3</sup>  
 1040 Ysowe. Eke hem to plannte and graffe is prow.<sup>4</sup>  
 The meddeler to graffe eke tolde is howe.  
 Now plummes bones and figges are  
 In tempre land ysette a party rare.

## 150.

Almonds are sown early in temperate soil; later in cold. They are to be grafted before the buds germinate.

- 1044 Nowe serve<sup>5</sup> is sette, almonnde in lande is sowe,  
 Eke rathe in tempre lande, late in chillyng.<sup>6</sup>  
 Men graffe hem nowe thaire graffes buddes<sup>7</sup> ungrowe;  
 And now pistace<sup>8</sup> hath planntyng or graffinge,  
 1048 Chastene also; juglande in lande now spryng.  
 Eke graffe hem nowe, now for pynappultree  
 The colde or weetisse<sup>9</sup> lande most sowen be.

*De educatione porcorum.*

## 151.

The best boars for breeming are great-bodied, ample, wide, round, with large hips and white bellies, etc.

- Nowe bores<sup>10</sup> gladly brymmeth. Chese a bore  
 1052 Greet bodied, side, and wyde, eke rather rounde  
 Then long, eke hipped greet, and wombed hoor,  
 And huge-snouted, shorte, his necke abounde  
 With fattes<sup>11</sup> feel, his stoness greet and sounde.  
 1056 And from oon yere until he come atte fyve  
 He wol do well ynough, and often wyve.

<sup>1</sup> nonas.    <sup>2</sup> sorbo.    <sup>3</sup> servrie.    <sup>4</sup> utile.    <sup>5</sup> sorbus.    <sup>6</sup> frigido.  
<sup>7</sup> germinibus.    <sup>8</sup> pistacia.    <sup>9</sup> humecto.    <sup>10</sup> verres.    <sup>11</sup> glandulis.

## 152.

- The sowes is to chese of longest syde,<sup>1</sup>  
 In other thinges take her like a boore  
 1060 So thai be wombed wel, dependannt, syde,<sup>2</sup>  
 That likely is for greet and mighty stoore.  
 The hered blake in cold countree, the hoore  
 And every hewe<sup>3</sup> to have in places warme  
 1064 Is indistinctly good, and may not harme.

The sows should be large-bellied, pendent, vast; the black-haired in cold countries; white and all colours thrive in warm places.

## 153.

- The femal shal til vii yere suffice  
 To bere, and oon yere olde she wol conceyve,  
 And, monethes iii ydone, it is thaire gise  
 1068 To pigge, and in this point thay nyl deceyve.  
 Thees if me spende, or mynt<sup>4</sup> for them receyve,  
 The sonner wol they brymme ayeine and brynge  
 Forth pigges moo. Now herbes for hem springe.

The sow breeds from two to seven years of age. They litter after four months. If you eat or sell the pigs, the sooner will they breem again.

## 154.

- 1072 A man may have hem in every lande,  
 But bette in myri feeldes then in dri,  
 And moost thaire fructifying wodes stande,  
 Wherof sum fruyte wol targe<sup>5</sup> and sum wol hie.<sup>6</sup>  
 1076 Eke lande is goode ther herbes multiplie.  
 The rootes eke of rede<sup>7</sup> and risshe thay ete.  
 When winter sleeth thaire fedyng, yeve hem meete.

They do better in miry land, especially where woods are, some of whose fruit remains, some hastens to fall.

## 155.

- Mast, chastene, yeve hem pugges of thi corne;  
 1080 Hem that beth melch in veer nouvelles grene  
 Beth nought to feede; her cotes<sup>8</sup> make beforne  
 Under sum porche, and parte hem so betwene  
 That every stye<sup>9</sup> a moder wol sustene,  
 1084 That with her wombe her pigges doth from cold;  
 But make it that me may on hem behold.

Give them mast, chesnuts, and refuse of corn. Young plants that are milky in spring are injurious. Make their sties beforehand.

<sup>1</sup> latus.    <sup>2</sup> profunde.    <sup>3</sup> color.    <sup>4</sup> monetam.    <sup>5</sup> tardare.  
<sup>6</sup> festinare.    <sup>7</sup> cannarum.    <sup>8</sup> aras.    <sup>9</sup> ara.



156.

Let the wine herd  
set to the number.  
Columella says  
eight. I say six.  
I have seen too  
many weaken or  
kill the sow.

- Thy swon<sup>1</sup> may se thaire nomb'r and up save  
The oppressed pigge; and viii wol Columelle  
1088 A soowe up bryng. I saie vi is to have  
Ynough, and that is over spende or selle.  
Ffele I have seyn<sup>2</sup> thair dammes feynt or quelle.  
Thi vyne swyne wol delve after vyndage,<sup>3</sup>  
1092 As diligent as delvers for thaire wages.

*De vino myrtite.*

157.

To make myrtite  
wine, mix six  
sectarii of wine  
with five pounds  
of myrtle-berries.  
Add a basket of  
palms and five  
pounds of honey.

- Sone in this moone eke myrtite is to make  
Sex sester old wyne do to mirtes bayes  
V ponde, and hem togeder alle to shake,  
1096 And shake hem daily xxii daies;  
A skeppe of palme thenne after to surtray is.  
This wyne v ponde of fyne hony therto  
Ystamped wel let mynge, and it is doo.

*De vite tiriaca.*

158.

Wine, vinegar, or  
grape from the  
tiriac vine is a  
remedy against  
the bite of any  
beast. Make a  
slit three inches  
deep in the end  
of the scions, and  
pick out the pith.

- 1100 Vyntariake is also nowe to make.  
What goode dooth it? His wyne, aysel, or grape,  
Or rynde<sup>4</sup> of his scions yf that me take,  
The bite of every beest me shall escape.  
1104 And such a crafte to make it is noo jape.  
Three fingers deep the scions must be slitte  
In thende, and pike oute alle the pith of it.

159.

Fill it with fine  
tiriac, tie it up  
again, and plant  
it. Others put  
them in a bulb  
of squill.

- In stede of that fille it with fyne tiriake;  
1108 To bynde it faire ayein be diligent  
And sette it. God save alle! yet oth'r take  
Her scions fild with this medicament,  
And hem to sette as for this same entent,  
1112 Iche of hem doo thay in a bulbe of squyle,  
And sette in this maner thay doth not ille.

<sup>1</sup> suilous.<sup>2</sup> vidi.<sup>3</sup> vindemiam.<sup>4</sup> cutem.

## 160.

- Tyriake is hald<sup>1</sup> of sum on vynes rootes  
 And dooth ful wel. A scion of hem take  
 1116 And sette hath not that myght, therin noo boote is  
 As in the moder was, until me make  
 Hit right as she was made. Also Tyriake  
 Ys goode to take, and when this wyne olde  
 1120 Helde on thaire rootes ofte, and thai wol holde.

Some pour tiriak upon the root of a vine. A scion taken and planted has not the same virtue as the parent stock.

*De uva sine granis.*

## 161.

- Ungreynd<sup>2</sup> grape in high jocunditee  
 Me may suppe of as saunez impediment  
 And all oon wyne: this Greek auctoritee  
 1124 So maketh to crafte nature a succedent.  
 That shall be sette is taken the sarment,<sup>3</sup>  
 As moche as shalle stande in the lande they cleve,  
 And clene away the pithe of it they streve.<sup>4</sup>

Grapes without stones may be eaten *sans* impediment, as if all wine. Thus nature is made to follow art. The cutting that shall be planted is cleft, and the pith is taken out.

## 162.

- 1128 And diligent thai shave hem every side,  
 And joine ayein the legges so departed,  
 And bynde hem so that thay may not devyde.  
 With paper best and leest are thai coated.  
 1132 Nowe softe in lande wel moist thai must be darterd,<sup>5</sup>  
 Sum eke hem sette inwith a bulbe of squylle  
 That maketh iche sette, thai sayen, to take atte wille.

The separated parts are united with papyrus, and planted in a moist soil.

## 163.

- And other, in the vynes kitting seson,  
 1136 Wol trie oute high sarmentes fertilest  
 And cleve hem not, but use anoth'r reson:  
 Until a reed for turnyng bounden fest  
 Thai bore oute the pithe, and in is kest  
 1140 This opium Quyrynaik: the Greek  
 So nameth it; so doth myne auctor eke.

Others choose the most fruitful cuttings, and, without cleaving them, bind them unto a reed to prevent turning, and put in what the Greeks call opium *Cyrynæcum*.

<sup>1</sup> effunditur.<sup>2</sup> uva sine granis.<sup>3</sup> Or scion.<sup>4</sup> radunt.<sup>5</sup> ponantur.

## 164.

Dilute this opium  
in water till it be  
like new wine.  
The pomegranate  
and cherry may  
be treated in the  
same way.

- In water first this opium relent  
Of sape until it have similitude,  
1144 Until the budde oute springe of this sarment  
Iche viii day this thing thai este include.  
The pomgarnad wol not this crafte exclude,  
As Grekes seyen, the same in Chiritree,  
1148 Yf it wol serve, assayed may it be.

*De vite nimis lacrimosa.*

## 165.

A vine that weeps  
the Greeks rend  
in the stock, and  
if it still denies  
its fruit, they  
take away the  
largest root and  
pour on oil-dregs,  
and pour vinegar  
underneath.

- As vynes that forwepe and turne away  
Ffrom fruyte the Grekes wol the stok to tere<sup>1</sup>  
And make a wound, and yit if thai withnay  
1152 Her fruyt, the fattest roote away thai tere,<sup>2</sup>  
Oildregges salt til half decocte on there  
Thourgh colde is doon and alle aboute this wounde,  
And aisel kene is underkest in grounde.

*De Mirtite confecto.*

## 166.

Take myrtle-ber-  
ries ripe, dried in  
the shade, and  
pounded; cover  
them all close.

- 1156 Mirtite a Greek comaundeth thus to make :  
The mirtes baies ripe, and shadowe drie,  
And stamped, unces viii it is to take  
And honge hem in the wyne vessell and wrie  
1160 Alle cloos, and longe in it lette hem defie.  
Then take hem oute and spende of it. Also  
With baies ripe ypuld thus other do :

## 167.

Others pluck off  
the berries in dry  
places on dry  
days, and tread  
or press them,  
and add eight  
*cotulas* to an *am-  
phora* of wine.  
Useful as a medi-  
cine where styp-  
tics stop emis-  
sion of blood, and  
in dysentery.

- Thai plucke of driest place in daies drie,  
1164 And trede, or press hem faire. Of that thei doo  
VIII cotuls in a steine<sup>3</sup> of wynes trie.  
This wyne alle medycyne is take unto  
Ther stiptik stont ejectyng bloode, and wo  
1168 Of wombe or of stomak this wol declyne.<sup>4</sup>  
Dissenterik hath eke this medycyne.

<sup>1</sup> lacerant.    <sup>2</sup> trahunt.    <sup>3</sup> amphora.    <sup>4</sup> sle.

*De condito vel absinthio vel rosato vel violatio.*

168.

Absinthiate, rosate, or violate,

To make a vyne is crafte doon to nature.

1172 Sarmentes (scions) of some gentil vyne ytake

And pocion forsayne in sum mesure

Half full be doon, quyk erthe among undure<sup>1</sup>As lie<sup>2</sup> is made, and when thai gynneth sprynge

1176 Sette hem as other vynes and uppe brynge.

To give a vine  
the flavour of  
absynth, roses,  
or violets, take  
generous scions  
and add the afore-  
said potion, and  
crumble quick  
earth amongst it.

<sup>1</sup> resolve.<sup>2</sup> lixivium.

# MARTIUS.

## BOOK THE FOURTH.

*De putandis vineis, inserendis et pangendis.*

### 1.

In cold places prune vines until the bud's appearance is suspected; and now is time to graft them when a thick humour distils from them.

- At Marche's moone in countree that is colde  
Putacion hath his solempnitee.  
At large of it in fferyere is tolde,  
4 Suspecte until thaire gemmes gynne be.  
Nowe is it tyme hem graffed forto se;  
Ffor nowe this vynes, whoso taketh kepe,  
Not wattery but thicke humours wepe.

### 2.

The stems on which you graft are to be solid, not old, nor rent; the grafts solid, buddy, and round. Cut them to the length of two inches, but do not lay bare the pith.

- 8 The trunkes sadde in humour that abounde  
Unolde, unrende, ygrafted let hem be  
With graffes sadde y-gemmed thicke and rounde.  
Three eyen is ynough for oon to see.  
12 Two fynger longe let sloute away the tree;  
But save uppon that other half the rynde.  
Men saithe the pith to bare<sup>1</sup> is not thaire kynde.

### 3.

Unite the parts carefully, and let the lowest eye fit close to the stem, and bind it with a willow twig, then cover it with clay mixed with chaff, and protect them from sun and wind.

- But flesh to flesh and skyn to skyn is doo,  
16 Right to the trunke is sette his lowest eye;<sup>2</sup>  
But sette him that he loke awaie therfroo,  
And softe a saly twygge aboute him plie.  
Then uppon that with chaved cley it wrie,<sup>3</sup>  
20 Ffor sonne and wynde hem make a tegument,  
Lest thai in this<sup>4</sup> be shake, in that<sup>5</sup> tobrent.

<sup>1</sup> nudare.

<sup>2</sup> oculus.

<sup>3</sup> operias.

<sup>4</sup> vento.

<sup>5</sup> sole.

## 4.

- Whenne tyme is hoothe, putte on hem softe at eve  
 Goode water ofte, that thai may ete and drynke,  
 24 And bolde hem uppon hoothe that myght hem greve.  
 When that thaire een gynneth forto unwynk<sup>1</sup>  
 And thai to brannche, into the lande let synk  
 A reede right by, and bynde in mariage  
 28 Hem to, lest wynde offende her tender age.

Water them in heat to make them bold. When they begin to germinate, stick a reed close to them and tie them to it.

## 5.

- Yit must it be dissolved ever amonge  
 Oute of this bonde, lest it adolent  
 Be letted to encrece and wex stronge.  
 32 And he<sup>2</sup> to delve aboute is diligent,  
 And nygh the roote ingraffeth his sarment,  
 And moolde anoon on every syde it hepeth,  
 This roote and moolde as nors and moder keepeth.

But it must be loosened now and then, lest, when grown up, it be prevented from increasing. Some graft their cuttings near the root, and heap mould around them.

## 6.

- 36 An other saithe thaire graffing nygh the grounde  
 Is best, ther esily thai comprehende ;  
 And preve eke alle the crafte it wol confounde  
 To graffe in hem that over hie ascende.  
 40 Til equinox thaire setting is not spende  
 In forowe,<sup>3</sup> in delf,<sup>4</sup> in pastyne,<sup>5</sup> as before,  
 Is in this booke of vynes taught the lore.

Others say vines should be grafted near the ground, for so they take readily, but it ruins all to graft them high. Till the equinox they may set in furrows, holes, or beds.

*De pratis purgandis.*

## 7.

- Nowe is it tyme in places that beth colde  
 44 The medes forto clense, and hem to kepe.  
 In places warme eke nowe is holsom holde  
 The landes fatte and hilles under crepe  
 As with the plough ; but eree hem not to depe.  
 48 Bernetes that beth made in Janyveer  
 Goode tyme it is forto repete hem heer.

In cold places now clean the meadows, and in warm places plough fat lands and hills. Repeat the dressing of fallows that were made in January.

<sup>1</sup> aperire.<sup>2</sup> aliquis.<sup>3</sup> sulco.<sup>4</sup> scrobe.<sup>5</sup> pastino.



*De panico et milio serendo.*

8.

Sow panic and millet in dry loose land. They will grow in gravel if the earth and air be moist. Five sextarii of seed enough for an acre.

- Panyk and mylde in hoote and drie is sowe  
As nowe. Light, resolute lande thai desire.  
52 Sone thai forsake a gravell wol thai growe;  
But moist bothe erthe and ayer thai ther require,  
Land argillose<sup>1</sup> or drie hem sleth for yre,  
And weede hem wel, let noo wēede in hem stande:  
56 V sexter shall suffice an acre lande.

*De cicere serendo.*

9.

Both kinds of vetch to be sown this month. It comes up in two days. Keep a bushel of seed for an acre. That sown in autumn is ripe first.

- Her either chiche<sup>2</sup> is sown in this moone,  
Ther aier is moist, and lande is ronke and stepe;  
But daies tweyne, and uppe it crepeth sone.  
60 Three busschel for an acre lande let kepe.  
The Greek saithe, yf lukewarm hem bywepe,  
Thai wol be greet; and nygh the see to growe  
Thai love, and first is ripe in hervest sowe.

*De canabo; de cicera.*

10.

Hemp may be sown till the equinox. In February is taught the manner how. Sow black tares, like peas, after one or two ploughings, three or four bushels to an acre.

- 64 Til equinoxe is hemp ysowe as nowe.  
What lande is beste for it and seedes geson<sup>3</sup>  
To sowe in ffeveryere is reson howe.  
Nowe cicera the blake is sowe in season  
68 On erthes<sup>4</sup> tweyne or oon sowe hem as peson,  
With IIII or III busschel, other with tweyne  
Of hem an acre lande me may byspreyne.<sup>5</sup>

*De novellis pulverandis vitibus fodiendis.*

11.

The earth about young vines to be kept fine and loose till the first of October, to kill weeds and prevent the ground from suffocating the young plants.

- Now pulverised beth this vynes yonge,  
72 And so forth til Calendes evermore  
Of October, to sley the weeddes spronge,  
And lest the land the vynes over sore  
Constreyne; eke weeddes rootes uppe be tore.  
76 Nowe vynes is to delve in places colde,  
And stakes make, and bynde hem uppe to holde.

<sup>1</sup> cleyi.<sup>2</sup> cicier.<sup>3</sup> rara.<sup>4</sup> aracionibus.<sup>5</sup> seminare.

## 12.

- And swathe<sup>1</sup> a tender vyne in bondes softe ;  
 Ffor bonde to hardde wol holde it in distresse ;  
 80 A sadder vyne a bigger stake olofte  
 Mot holde ; a lighter vyne is with a lesse  
 Stakyng upholde. And whi? For hevynesse  
 Of shade eke sette hem of tort<sup>2</sup> Aquilone.  
 84 An hande or half a foote is goode to done.

And swathe a young vine with soft bands; for too hard a one will distress it. Place the stake (a large one for a strong vine, a smaller for a weak one) towards the North, a hand's breadth or half a foot from the vine, not to shade it.

## 13.

- Eke sum her aged vynes wol repaire  
 And trunke hem of alle hie above grounde.  
 Unconnyngly thai do, right as thai are.  
 88 The Sonne and dewe goothe doune into thaire wounde  
 That is so wyde, and rotyng it confounde.  
 A better way for hem I wol declare :  
 Ablaquiate hem deep, or make hem bare.

Some to renew their old vines cut them off high above the ground; but a better plan is to loosen the earth from the root.

## 14.

- 92 A lite over the knotte inwith the lande  
 Hem kitte and wrie, and save hem so for drede  
 Of colde or hote; but deep yf that it stande  
 And gentil be, doo this. Or thus I rede  
 96 You doo: with gentil graffes hem to sede.  
 Alle this in places hote first in this moone,  
 In places colde is after Idus doone.

Cut them a little over the knot, under the ground, for fear of cold or heat, but only when it is deep and of a good sort. Otherwise, I advise you to graft them with generous cuttings. In warm places this is to be done in the beginning of March, in cold places in the middle of the month.

## 15.

- And umbydelve<sup>3</sup> a drie or seekle<sup>4</sup> vyne,  
 100 Putte aske of ooke or vyne aysel amonge,  
 And poure upon the roote, and olde bryne.  
 Or graffe hem lowe, and douncing make hem stronge.  
 On vynes hurte doo goote or shepes dounge,  
 104 And plaister it with moolde, eke in the roote  
 Relented dounge yputte on dothe it boote.

Dig about a sickly vine, and pour upon the root ashes of oak or vine mixed with vinegar and brine. Or graft them low down and strengthen them with dung. Put goat's or sheep's dung upon a vine that has been injured; if the root is hurt, liquid dung will do it good.

<sup>1</sup> liga.<sup>2</sup> versus.<sup>3</sup> circumfodias.<sup>4</sup> egram.

*De oleis amurca sanandis, seminariis et rosariis.*

16.

Pour oil-dregs upon the root of unhealthy olives. Apply four or six *congiis* of it to large trees.

- Olyves nowe that oute of helthes dwelle  
Oyldregges salt effunde uppon the roote.  
108 Ffor grettest treen, as telleth Columelle,  
VI Congeus or iv of it ymmote.<sup>1</sup>  
Two basketfull of bene chaf doth boote,  
As other seyne, to grettest treen, and olde  
112 Bryne on hem to kest is weel with holde.

17.

If the oleaster be barren, take two boughs of a fruitful tree from the south side; force them through the tree by two holes; cut them off close, and add chaff and clay.

- A mortar fast is made aboute the tree,  
The rootes hidde, and moste in places drie;  
And bareyne yf thyne oliaster be,  
116 Take bowes tweyne of treen that fructifie,  
But southwarde of the tree theese bowes trie,  
And streyne hem throwe the tree by bores two,  
And kytte hem by; do chaved cley therto.

18.

If they are too fat drive a stake into the root. Now weed corn again, if it be the custom. Make a seminary of berries and seed, and rose-beds, early in the month.

- 120 Or dryve inne elm, or ook, or elles stonys  
And plaster hem. To fatte yf that thai be,  
A stake anon into her rootes doone is.  
Nowe cornes weded efte is goode to se  
124 Yf it be the use, and frigiditee.  
Of seede and baies make the seminary;  
Sone in this moone eke make uppe the rosary.

*De Carduo.*

19.

Now sow the teasele in dunged, loose land, at the waxing of the moon, half a foot asunder.

- The garden nowe to tiller is best begynne.  
128 The tasul nowe in dogged lande is sowe  
And resolute. In fatte beste uppe thai wynne.  
The molde,<sup>2</sup> and other suche as diggeth lowe,  
Anoie hem not, in harde lande yf thai growe;  
132 To sowe hem in the waxing of the moone,  
And half a foote asonder is to doon.

<sup>1</sup> imoveas.<sup>2</sup> talpa.

## 20.

- The tasul seede ynverse is not to sette,  
 Lest crooked, feint, and hardde of it ascende.
- 136 Sette hem not deep; oonly three fyngers mette  
 On hem; unto the yoint in lande descende,  
 And hele<sup>1</sup> hem light; eke weede hem ofte anende.  
 Until the plannte uppe gete and bygly sprynge;
- 140 And yeve hem in the heete a waterynge.

Do not set the teasle-seed inverse, nor more than three inches deep. Let the teasle sink in the ground to the joint. Cover them lightly, weed them constantly, and water them.

## 21.

- Breke of the seedes toppe, and thai wol be  
 Withoute thorn; her seede yf me reclyne  
 In baume, or nard, or opi,<sup>2</sup> daies thre,
- 144 Or juce of roose, eith'r in mastycyne,  
 Or madefie it so in oil lauryne,  
 Let drie hem sowe, hem up by oon assent  
 Thai wol and have odoure like her unguent.

If you break off the points of the seed, they will bear no thorn. Steep the seeds three days in balm, or nard, or opium, or rose-water, or oil of mastic, or laurel, and sow them dry; they will soon grow, and have that odour.

## 22.

- 148 And yerely from the codde away let take  
 The planntes, lest thaire moder fainted be.  
 In other place a borde<sup>3</sup> of hem let make,  
 But sumdel of the roote on hem thou see,
- 152 And hem that shall of seede purvey the  
 Pulle every blake awaie that thou may finde,  
 And wrie hem with a shelle other a rynde.

Take the plants every year from the stock, lest it be weakened. Remove them with a part of the root. Among those that are to supply you with seed let there be none black.

## 23.

- Ffor sonne or rayne the seede is wont to sle.
- 156 Ffor moldewarpes cattes is to kepe,  
 To ligge in waite to touche with her cle.  
 A wesel tame have sum men ther thai crepe,  
 Hem forto take. An oth'r sumdel deep
- 160 Have caves made, and thay, for ferde of sonne  
 On hem let inne, anoon away beth ronne.

Sun or rain will kill them. Cats are to be kept against moles. Some keep a tame weasel in their haunts. Some make holes, and they run away for fear of the sun let in upon them.

<sup>1</sup> operias.<sup>2</sup> opio.<sup>3</sup> a bedde.

## 24.

Some fill their holes with red lead and cucumber-juice. Others lay a gren (or snare) to catch them. Now is the time to sow garlic, etc.

- Her holes oon wel filleth uppe with wilde  
Cucumb'r juce, and dothe with alle rubrike.
- 164 A green<sup>1</sup> an oth'r hath for hem ytilde ;  
To take hem therwithal is not unlike.  
Garlic, cunel, eke onyons and ulpike<sup>2</sup>  
Nowe sette in places colde, senvey and dyle,<sup>3</sup>
- 168 Eke wortes nowe to sowe is grettest skyle.

## 25.

Now sow hollyhocks, armorace (or wild radish), organ, leeks, bete, lettuce, capers, savory, colocasias, cresses, endive, and radishes.

- Now holyhocke is sowe and armorace,  
Or arborace that wilde raves<sup>4</sup> are,  
And origon nowe plannte him in his place ;
- 172 Now lekes, betes, letuce, and capare,  
Savery, colcase, and cresses ; noo man spare  
This golde outhr raves<sup>5</sup> forto sowe ;  
And bless it ; trust in God that alle shal growe.

## 26.

Now sow melon-seede two foote apart in prepared ground, but steep the seed three days in milk or mead, and set them when dry. Keep them in rose-leaves to make them odorous.

- 176 Nowe melon seede two foote atwene is sette  
In places well ywrought or pastynate.  
But daies thre this seede is goode bewette  
In mylk or meth, and after desiccate
- 180 Sette hem ; thai wol be swete. Eke adorate  
To make hem, kepe hem long in leves drie  
Of roses, hem thai wol adorifie.

## 27.

Sow cucumber-seed thin. The furrows to be a foot deep and three feet broad, and let there be eight feet of untilled ground between the furrows. Macerate the seed in ewe's milk and mead.

- Cucumber in this moone is sowen rare ;
- 184 Her forowe a foot of depth, three foote of brede,  
And enter<sup>6</sup> forough and forough viii foote spare  
Of leyes,<sup>7</sup> that therin thai forth may sprede.  
The weede wol help hem ; therof is noo drede.
- 188 Thaire seede in ewes mylk<sup>8</sup> and meth to swelle<sup>9</sup>  
Wol make hem white, and therof tast and smelle.

<sup>1</sup> laqueum.    <sup>2</sup> ulpicus.    <sup>3</sup> anetum.    <sup>4</sup> rafani.    <sup>5</sup> rasanum.  
<sup>6</sup> inter.    <sup>7</sup> crudum.    <sup>8</sup> ovillo lacte.    <sup>9</sup> macerare.



## 28.

- Thai wol be longe and tendre yf me sette  
 A broode flatte vessel with water two hande deep  
 192 Under; thaire seede therof uppe wol be fette  
 By rootes, and in lenght away thai creep.  
 Withouten seede who liketh hem to kepe,  
 With oil Sabyne enoynte her seede and bray,<sup>1</sup>  
 196 Culex an herb and hem therin confray.<sup>2</sup>

To make them long and tender, place a broad flat vessel of water under them, which they will try to reach. To have them without seed, anoint them with Sabine oil and bray them with the herb culex.

## 29.

- Cocumber floure of sum men into a reede,  
 Ythorled every knotte, is softe ydoo.  
 The floures stalkes heede with alle his heede  
 200 Therin, and passyng longe his fruyte wol goo.  
 Hit is so ferd of oiles, that therfroo  
 Hit hoketh yf me sette it nygh ther under,  
 And turne it wol for fere, yf that it thonder.

Some place the flowers of the cucumber in a reed, of which all the knots are bored through, its stalk and head being hidden therein. It is so afraid of oil that it bends like a hook to avoid it. Also it turns away from thunder.

## 30.

- 204 Cucumber flour eke growing in his vyne  
 Into sum erthen poote yf that me lede  
 Made like a man or beest fers or benynge,  
 The fruite wol have benyngnitee or drede,  
 208 As man or beest as hath the potte in dede.  
 Gorgilianus Marcial doth telle  
 Alle this; and this of hem saith Columelle.

If the flower of cucumber be trained into a pot made in the shape of man or beast, it will take the same form, as say Marcial and Columella.

## 31.

- In glade lande dounded yf we have the brere<sup>3</sup>  
 212 Or ferule, after hervest whenne oon with  
 The nyght is day, lette cutte hem of right nere  
 The grounde, and with a pryk of tree the pith  
 Pyke oute, and make hem holgh: eke doo in sith  
 216 Donnge and cucumber seede; therof wol the  
 Ffruyte that withsaide<sup>4</sup> may not in coldes be.

Cut off briars and cane after the autumnal equinox close to the ground, and with a wooden pin pick out the pith, and put in dung and cucumber-seeds, and the fruit will flourish undeniably.

<sup>1</sup> tere.<sup>2</sup> confricant.<sup>3</sup> rubos.<sup>4</sup> denegare.



Asparagus is sown about the first of April in small beds made by line a foot and a half or three feet deep, dung it well, weed it, and cover with straw, which may be taken off in early spring.

The asparagus will grow in three years. A shorter way is to grow them from spawn. Put as much seed as three fingers will hold in each hole of rich, well-dunged mould

These seeds will unite in one root, or spawn. This also has a delay of two years with dunging and weeding. It is better, therefore, to buy than keep them so long in the ground.

In dry soil set them in furrows moderately deep, but in wet land near the top. The first asparagus is to be broken off. Pulling them might remove the spawn. But afterwards they may be pulled.

## 32.

- Sperage is sowe aboute Aprill kalende  
 In redes smale ymade by lyne in wete  
 220 And fatte lande, so that seedes who descende  
 In half a foote or three therin thai lete,  
 And sprede on it above of dounge a shete,  
 And weede hem wel, or kest upon hem stre  
 224 Til prime veer; ther may it take of be.

## 33.

- Therof Sperage after thre yere wol sprynge.  
 This tyme is longe. A shorter way ther is  
 Thees herbes of ther sponges uppe to brynge,  
 228 Ffor thai wol fructifie anoon; and this  
 Ys crafte of making sponges and not mys.  
 Doo seede as moche as three fyngers wol holde  
 In everie hoole of fatte and dounced moolde.<sup>1</sup>

## 34.

- 232 This seedes wol connecte until oon roote.<sup>2</sup>  
 This calle<sup>3</sup> a sponge. Eke this hath taryinge.  
 The semynaire in two yere must it roote,<sup>4</sup>  
 Ynourished with dounge and ofte wedynge,  
 236 From hervest equinoxe in his planntyng,  
 And eke in veer: but it is lesse vice  
 To beye hem then so longe in lande cherice.

## 35.

- In solghes<sup>5</sup> sette hem myddel deepe in drie  
 240 Lande, and in wete land in the summitte.<sup>6</sup>  
 Above humour wol make hem multiplie,  
 So that it passe and not abydinge be.  
 The first Sperage of broken is to se.  
 244 Thaire sponge, yf that me pulde hem, myght remewe:  
 But after hem to pulle is not to eschewe.

<sup>1</sup> terre.    <sup>2</sup> radicem.    <sup>3</sup> clepe.    <sup>4</sup> radicare.    <sup>5</sup> sulcis.    <sup>6</sup> summitate.

## 36.

- The eyen<sup>1</sup> of thaire germynacion  
 With pulling wol disclose after the ferme<sup>2</sup>  
 248 Yere, and to breke hem occupacion  
 That tyme is nought : for thi sette it to ferme,<sup>3</sup>  
 Places feconnde hemselven closeth ferme<sup>4</sup>  
 By brekyng so. In veer is thaire servyng.  
 252 Reserve in hervest hem that seede shall brynge.

Pulling will make them disclose their buds after the first year ; and to break them then is no benefit. Therefore be assured that fruitful places are closed by breaking.

## 37.

- Nowe rue is sowe in lande that is plesaunt.<sup>5</sup>  
 Sprynge aske on hem, and contente thai abide ;  
 And places hie is thaire desire to haunt,  
 256 Ther humour may awaywarde from hem slide.  
 Seede yf me sette eke that thaire leves hide  
 Enclosed, frote hem by and by with hande ;  
 And smale yf seedes be, springe hem in lande,

Sprinkle ashes on rue, and sow it on high ground where the moisture may run from it. If the seed is hidden in the leaves, rub it out. If the seed be small,

## 38.

- 260 And overwrie hem after with a rake.  
 The caules that of seede encluse uppe wynde  
 Wol bygger be, but latter thai awake.  
 Their bowes puld with parcel of the rynde  
 264 In veer better then planntes shall thou fynde.  
 Transplannte alle hoole the plannte, and it is slaye.<sup>6</sup>  
 And other benes bowes all to braye.<sup>7</sup>

rake it in. Cabbages grown from seed will be larger but slower. A branch pulled off in spring with a piece of the stalk will be better than a plant.

## 39.

- And therin, or in stalons<sup>8</sup> forth thei sette  
 268 Her seede, and best for hem is solute lande.  
 Thay sayen eke stolon seede is but the bette.  
 In figtree shadowe gladdest wol it stande.  
 Ne delve awaye the weede, but pull with hande.  
 272 Fful ferd it is for touching of unclene  
 Wymmen ; and sluttet I suppose it mene.

They do best in a loose soil. Stolen seed is said to thrive best. They shun the touch of sluts.

<sup>1</sup> oculus.    <sup>2</sup> primum.    <sup>3</sup> ad firmam.    <sup>4</sup> firme.    <sup>5</sup> aprico.  
<sup>6</sup> occiditur.    <sup>7</sup> contundunt.    <sup>8</sup> bulbes.

## 40.

Coriander grows best from old seed.

- Til Octob'r from the ingresse of this moone  
 Ys Coriander (sette) is fatty londe,  
 276 And thelder seed, the better wol it doone.  
 In lene soil also thay wol up stonde.  
 They were eke glade good humor when thay fonde  
 With every kind of wortes wol thay growe.  
 280 This gourdes<sup>1</sup> in this moone also beth sowe.

## 41.

Long gourds grow from the seeds which are in the neck of the pod.

- Ffatte soil thai love ydounge, molsh,<sup>2</sup> humyde.  
 In gourdes this is goodly, that the longe  
 Gourdes growe of the necke seede, and wyde  
 284 Gourdes up of the botteme seed beth spronge :  
 And greet oute of the wombe seedes honge ;  
 Inverse her seede to this entente let sowe,  
 And helpe hem up with rayles, as thay growe.

## 42.

Hang up the seed till winter, or they will rot. Blite, oncerooted, lasts long words (*quære* worlds, ages).

- 288 Gourdes for seede til Wynter honge stille ;  
 Hem then in sonne or smoke it is to drie.  
 And elles wol thai rote, and that were ille.  
 Iche erthe ywrought nowe blite wol multiplie.  
 292 And weede it not ; hit self wol seedes strie ;  
 That though the list, yf it be oons spronge,  
 Thou shalt it not destroie in wordes longe.

## 43.

Pelitur (*serpyllum*) grows best near the water's edge. Anise and cummin to be sown now.

- Nowe pelitur to plannte is and to sowe,  
 296 But in his age it wol be bowed feire,  
 By ponde, or laake, or wynche if that it growe  
 So by the brynke. Anyes in gladsom ayer  
 And comyn sowe hem now ther is there leire.  
 300 And helpe hem wel with humour and douncing.  
 Nowe cometh the crafte pomgarnat up to brynge.

<sup>1</sup> cucurbita.

<sup>2</sup> solutam.

## 44.

*De malo Punico.*

- In Aprille and in Marche in tempur lande  
 Pomgarnattree is sette, in hooete and drie  
 304 In Novemb'r this tree loveth to stande  
 In chalky, lenysshe lande to multiplie.  
 To stande in fatte lande wol it not denye.  
 Good eke for it beth regions hooete.  
 308 Ffor setting plannte is best pulde from the roote.

Hot soil best for  
 pomegranates.  
 For setting pull  
 plants from root.

## 45.

- In dyvers wyse alle though it may be sette,  
 To sette is beste abough a cubit longe,  
 Clenliche ycutte iche ende an hafte greett,<sup>1</sup>  
 312 And sette it in the delf so lenyng wronge.<sup>2</sup>  
 But first her either ende in swynes dounge  
 Ywonden<sup>3</sup> be, or with a mal in hande  
 That softe is smyte hem ynne, and let hem stande.

The plants to be  
 a cubit long of a  
 hand's breadth,  
 driven in obli-  
 quely with a  
 soft hammer.

## 46.

- 316 The bough to sette is best in germynyng,  
 To putte eke in the roote of hem iii stonys  
 Ys crafte to kepe her fruytes from clevyng.  
 But hem to sette enversed nought to doone is.  
 320 To watter hem eke nowe and nowe<sup>4</sup> eftsones  
 Wol make hem soure: in landes that beth drie  
 Thai wol be swete enough and multiplie.

Three stones put  
 into the root will  
 prevent the fruit  
 from cleaving.  
 Frequent water-  
 ing will make  
 them sour.

## 47.

- Yit watter hem yf over drie it be.  
 324 In hervest and in veer hem umbidelve.  
 Yf thai be soure, eke stampe a quantitee  
 Of laseris with wyne, hem two hemselve,  
 And helde it in the croppe, or umbidelve  
 328 The rootes, and dryve ynne a firbronde<sup>5</sup> pyne.  
 Other so dolven kesteth seefroth<sup>6</sup> ynne.

Laser (benzoin)  
 with wine  
 poured on the top  
 is a remedy  
 against sourness;  
 or drive a peg of  
 firewood through  
 the roots, or cast  
 sea weeds on  
 them.

<sup>1</sup> Manubrii crassitudino. <sup>2</sup> oblique. <sup>3</sup> oblinatur. <sup>4</sup> assidue. <sup>5</sup> tede. <sup>6</sup> algam.

## 48.

Others make a compost, and put a stone of it on the roots thrice a year, or oil dregs and seaweed twice a month.

- Summen therwith doth asse and swynes dounge;  
 And yf the floure holde not upon the tree,  
 332 With water mynge uryne observed longe.  
 Thaire roote on this oon yere doo tymes three.  
 Oon stene atte oon tyme is goode quantitee.  
 Oildregges eke is goode, outhir seefroth,  
 336 And twye a moneth kest on hem this broth.

## 49.

Inclose them in lead, or in an adder's skin; if they crack, place a stone under the head root, or sow squills, or twist tow round them as they hang.

- Or thus: the flouring tree trunk in leed  
 Enclude, or in an edder skynne it wynde;<sup>1</sup>  
 And yf thai chappe,<sup>2</sup> a stoone under the heed  
 340 Roote is to doo, to sowe eke squille is kynde  
 On every syde: eke hem doo writhe or wynde<sup>3</sup>  
 In togh<sup>4</sup> upon thaire tree right as thai honge;  
 And incorrupt thai wol been alle yere longe.

## 50.

Ox-gall, or a brass pin, or swine's dung keeps off worms.

- 344 For wormes bathe her roote in oxe galle;  
 And doute it not anoon thai wol be dede.  
 Or with a brason pynne of scrape hem alle.  
 And hardde it is yf thai thereafter brede.  
 348 Or ass uryne and swynes thost let fede  
 Hem therwithall; and thai wol die or flee.  
 Now se thaire craft for hem mervel to see.

## 51.

It will make their grains white if you mix a fourth part of gypsum with clay and chalk.

- Kest lye and aske ofte (up)on the trunke aboute,  
 352 And thai wol be right gladde and fructifie.  
 Eke Marcial affermeth oute of doute  
 That greynes white in hem this craft will die:<sup>5</sup>  
 To cley and chalk the firth part intrie  
 356 Of gipse, and doo the rootes to III yere,  
 And this wol make hir greynes white and clere.

<sup>1</sup> involve.<sup>2</sup> crepent.<sup>3</sup> torquere.<sup>4</sup> in tenacibus.<sup>5</sup> colorare.

## 52.

- To make hem of a myrous magnitude,  
 Ley doune an erthen potte beside her tree  
 360 Oon bough therin with oon floure let enclude,  
 But to a stake ybounden must it be  
 Ffor lepyng out: this potte ycovered se.  
 By heruest wol thi potte this apple fille.  
 364 If this be soothe, the craft is not full ille.

It will make them of wondrous magnitude if you enclose one blossom on a bough in a pot tied to a stake, to prevent its getting out, and covered.

## 53.

- With juce of portulake<sup>1</sup> and tytymalle  
 Evenly myxt, or thenne the budde oute sprynge,  
 Enointe the trunkes of this trees alle,  
 368 And manyfold of fruyte uppe wol thai brynge,  
 In bowes of it self is his graffyng.  
 Devyde hem that pith<sup>2</sup> be fro pith serjointe.<sup>3</sup>  
 In thende of March thaire graffyng is in pointe.

Anoint the trunks with purslain or thithymallus ere the buds shoot. Graft it upon itself, pith to pith, in March.

## 54.

- 372 The fresshest graffe is in the stook to doo  
 In hast, lest taryng his humour drie  
 That nys but smal; to kepe hem longe also,  
 Let pitche her pedifect,<sup>4</sup> and honge hem hie.  
 376 Or plucke hool into see water trie  
 Hem feire, or into oildregges hoote hem deep.  
 Or this or that iii dayes let hem steep.

Graft them quickly, pitch the stalks, and suspend them; or pluck them whole and plump them them in seawater.

## 55.

- And after drie hem in the sonne, a nyghtes  
 380 Leve hem not throute, and then in places colde  
 Lette honge hem uppe. To use hem thus to dight is:  
 In water fresshe ii daies be thay wolde,  
 Thai wol be fresshe and fyne her on be bolde.  
 384 Or ley hem feire in chaf that never oon other  
 Touche, and ther thai beeth save ynough, my Brother.

Leave them not out of doors anights. When you wish to use them keep them two days in fresh water.

<sup>1</sup> pussillane.

<sup>2</sup> medulla.

<sup>3</sup> sejuncta.

<sup>4</sup> pediculos.



## 56.

Or make a trench  
and place over it  
a piece of bark  
of the same length  
to keep off mois-  
ture.

- Or make a diche in longe, and take a rynde  
As long as it; in that the stortes doo  
388 Of pomgarnat before and not behinde.  
Then turne it on this diche enversed soo  
That thay may honge and noo lande come hem too.  
This rynde hem wol from alle humor defende.  
392 Other hem drye in cley, and so suspende.

## 57.

And bury a jar  
half full of gravel  
in the open air;  
take pomegra-  
nates with their  
stalks, and press  
them in with  
canes or elder-  
branches.

- Eke whelue a seriol<sup>1</sup> ther-oute<sup>2</sup> that have  
Gravel upp to the myddes, pomes take  
The tenes<sup>3</sup> with to stande in cannes save,  
396 Or holgh ellerstickes is goode to make  
And fynghers IIII up from the gravel stake  
Hem so. Eke good it is to kepe hem longe,<sup>4</sup>  
That stalces be not left on hem to longe.<sup>5</sup>

## 58.

Or suspend them  
in a jar half  
filled with water,  
or keep them in  
a tub of barley.

- 400 Or in a seriol<sup>6</sup> half water fild  
So licoure touche hem not let hem suspende,  
And cloos it faste in wynde lest thai be spild.  
Or lette a tonne of barly hem comprende  
404 Uchoon from other, close it til thou spende.  
Thus kepeth men this fruyte in dyvers wyse.  
And wyne to make of hem this is the gyse :

## 59.

To make pome-  
granate wine,  
press the ripe  
grains in a bas-  
ket of palm, and  
after boilling, mix  
six pints with a  
pound of honey.

- The greynes ripe ypurged fresshe and clene  
408 Putte in a poche<sup>7</sup> of palme and with the wryngge  
Let presse hem, boile hem half awaie bydene.  
Whenne thai beth colde in pitched vessellinge  
And cleyed close hem up. But that boilyngge  
412 Of sum is leeft. Six sexter with a pounce  
Of honey meddel thai, and save it sounde.

<sup>1</sup> seriolam.<sup>2</sup> subdivo.<sup>3</sup> tenacibus.<sup>4</sup> diu.<sup>5</sup> longe.<sup>6</sup> seriola.<sup>7</sup> fiscella.

## 60.

- In March orange is sette in sondry wyse :  
 In sede, in bough, in branches,<sup>1</sup> and in clave,<sup>2</sup>  
 416 Thai loveth lande that rare is and divise.  
 Eke after heete and rayne thai ever crave.  
 But greynes sowe, and thus thou shalt hem have :  
 Lande dolven two feet deep with askes mynge,  
 420 And bedde it smal for wedyng and wattrynge.

Oranges love soil that is fine and crumbling. If you sow pips, dig two feet deep, and mix ashes with the soil in small beds.

## 61.

- And make a delf with hande an handfull longe,  
 And doune the pointe thre greynes therin doo ;  
 Weete hem daily ; sone upp thai wol spronge ;  
 424 Soonest yf luke water be kest therto ;  
 And herbes next the brannches weede hem froo.  
 Her tyme of transplanntyng is III yere age.  
 A bough yf that thou sette a foote him gage ;

Put three pips in a trench a palm long, and water daily. If you plant a bough let it be a foot deep.

## 62.

- 428 No lenger, lest hit rote :<sup>3</sup> and of the clave  
 Is best an handful greet in crassitude,  
 Her eith'r ende ysmoothed<sup>4</sup> is to have,  
 And cubital let make her longitude.  
 432 The prickes<sup>5</sup> kitte awaie and thinges rude,  
 But save the gemmes in the summyte,  
 That hope of future germynyng may be.

Not more, lest it rot. If you plant a clave (or truncheon) let it be the thickness of a hand and a cubit in length.

## 63.

- And diligenter folk in oxen dounge  
 436 Encludeth her either extremittee.  
 With seefroth<sup>6</sup> other have hem umbiyonge. <sup>7</sup>  
 An other list yeleyed hem to se.  
 The brannches smaller shorter must thai be ;  
 440 In like maner eke drench it as a clave,  
 But landes tweyne is longe ynough to have.

More diligent folk wrap both ends in dung.

<sup>1</sup> talea.<sup>2</sup> clava, ramo manubrii magnitudine.<sup>3</sup> putrescat.<sup>4</sup> levigatum.<sup>5</sup> aculeos.<sup>6</sup> alga.<sup>7</sup> circumdederunt.

## 64.

In cold countries they must be inclosed in high walls to thrive. Cover them with straw in winter,

- The clave ysette axeth noo spaces large  
 Hoote, ronke, and weete he loveth nygh the see.  
 444 Though treen upholde him not, he geveth no charge :  
 In countree cold and tild yf thai shall be  
 Men must hie enclyse as forto thee,  
 Or sette southe. Eke in the wynter season  
 448 Covert of stre thaire coldes must appeson.

## 65.

and uncover them in summer. Plant them in hot soils in autumn, in July or August in cold lands.

- Whenne Somer cometh, unclose hem, thai beth sure.  
 Eke braunche and clave in landes ferventest  
 Atte hervest forto sette, as doo thi cure.  
 452 At Juill and Aust in landes chillingest,<sup>1</sup>  
 And daily make hem dronken hardiest.  
 I am expert so that thai forto greet<sup>2</sup>  
 In magnitude, and brynge in pomes greet.<sup>3</sup>

## 66.

The vines of gourds burnt make useful ashes for oranges.

- 456 The gourde<sup>4</sup> is goode nygh this orange ysowe,  
 Whoos vynes brent maath askes for hem sete.  
 And delvyng oft enyoieth hem to growe,  
 And to provyde of pomes goode and greet.  
 460 But here and there the drie away surtreet.  
 Hoot lande Aprill, and cold in May is kynde  
 To graffe hem lowe in trunke and not in rynde.

## 67.

Graft them on pears and mulberries. In Assyria there are oranges never without fruit, Martial says, and in Sardinia also.

- In per tree graffe hem, and molbury<sup>5</sup> tree.  
 464 Oon in an erthen potte the graffes deeth.  
 Eke Marcial affermeth that ther be  
 Of hem in Assiry that never beeth  
 Withouten fruyte. Best witteness is that seeth.<sup>6</sup>  
 468 "I saugh," he saith, "inwith my territory  
 In Sardyne othinge wel worthi memorie" :

<sup>1</sup> frigidissimis. <sup>2</sup> grandescere. <sup>3</sup> magna. <sup>4</sup> cucurbita.  
<sup>5</sup> moro. <sup>6</sup> interpositio.

## 68.

- There humour is, eke erthe and aier wel warme,  
 That fruite to fruite fro gree to gree succedeth,  
 472 That children yonge her eldron after harme,  
 The grene after the riper fruyte procedeth.  
 The floures sewe as fruites grene hem ledeth.  
 Thus maketh thai of thaire fertilitiee  
 476 In helping nature a feire eternytee.

Where there is moisture and a warm air, there is a continual succession from one degree to another, flower pursuing fruit, as children *harm* after parents.

## 69.

- Thai sayen thaire bitter margh<sup>1</sup> wol change sweete  
 Her seede in meth<sup>2</sup> iii daies yf me steep,  
 Other in ewes mylk<sup>3</sup> as longe hem wete.  
 480 In ffeveryere sum men eke bore hem deep ;  
 Into the trunke upwarde humoure to weep  
 Out suffre thai until the fruyte be fourmed ;  
 The myddel to sweetnesste is thus confourmed.

The bitter pulp is made sweet by steeping in mead or ewe's milk. Some bore the trunk.

## 70.

- 484 Nigh alle the yere men keep it on the tree.  
 Thai keep it bette in cloos vessel ydoone.  
 With levy bowes puld eke let hem be  
 By nyght, and under cloude yhed the moone,  
 488 And privily disposed up ichoone.  
 Sum eke clere iche of hem in his vessell,  
 And in a place of derknesse keep hem well.

To keep, they should be gathered at night, with leafy boughs, when the moon is hid by clouds.

## 71.

- Hem sum in cedur scobe, and sum in stre  
 492 Mynute, and sum in smal chaf wol witholde.  
 Nowe meddellers<sup>4</sup> in hoothe lande gladdest be,  
 So it be moist; thai come also in cold  
 Lande sondy fatnesse rather yf it holde,  
 496 With stones myxt it stont in argillous  
 Lande, and with gravell myxt in glareous.

Some keep them in cedar-shavings, or straw, or chaff. Medlars grow in clay, mixed with stones or sandy gravel.

<sup>1</sup> medulla<sup>2</sup> mulso.<sup>3</sup> ovillo lacti.<sup>4</sup> mespilus.

## 72.

Medlars increase slowly. They love cutting and frequent watering.

- In Novemb'r and Marche her branches<sup>1</sup> sette  
 In dounge lande subact, her eith'r ende  
 500 In dounge ydoone. Thaire increment to fette  
 Is ferre, and unbydelvyng wol hem mende.  
 Kittingyng thai love and lite humour to spende  
 Ofte in the drought. The seede also is sowe,  
 504 But hope is longe on it her fruytes growe.

## 73.

A brass pin will drive off worms. Too much quicklime would make them unfruitful.

- A pynne of brasse the wormes of dryve,  
 Or oildregges, or mannes olde uryne,  
 Or quyk lime, lite of that, lest it unthryve.  
 508 Or kest on water of decoct lupyne.  
 For bareynnesse yet men from that declyne.  
 Mynge askes of vyne and dounge, and hem infounde  
 Into the roote, and thai wol be fecounde.

## 74.

Vinegarandashes mixed with red ochre kill ants. If the fruit fall off, drive a piece of the root into the centre of the trunk.

- 512 Aisel and askes tempred with rubrike  
 Ykest on hem sleeth doune this Anntes alle.  
 Oute of the roote a pece<sup>3</sup> it is to pike  
 Yf that the fruyte myslike and from hem falle.  
 516 This pece a mydde his trunke it is to malle.<sup>4</sup>  
 And in himself graffe hem in ffeberyere,  
 In mele also, eke graffe hem in the pere.

## 75.

They must be grafted in the trunk, not in the bark, which is lean and weak. To keep they must be plucked unripe.

- The graffe is to be take amydde his tree.  
 520 The toppes vicious are often sene.  
 In trunkes cloven guaffed must thai be  
 Not in the ryndes; thai beth fastyng lene.  
 To keep, ypuldde not mellowy but grene  
 524 Wolde be; longe on the tree thai wol endure.  
 Eke thai in pitched pottes kept are sure.

<sup>1</sup> taleas.<sup>2</sup> sere.<sup>3</sup> frustrum.<sup>4</sup> percute.

## 76.

- Suspence in rule hem keep with pusk condite  
 Ypuldde in myddes of a day serene.  
 528 Or in smal chaf asonder hem alite.  
 Semymature also me may hem glene,<sup>1</sup>  
 And daies v in salt water hem lene.  
 In-founde hem then until thai swymme, and depe  
 532 In hony this fruyte ripe ynough thou kepe.

Suspend them in a row, seasoned with posca; or separate them in chaff; or macerate them in salt-water.

## 77.

- The fige to plannte in hote lande best is holde  
 In Novemb'r; and there is tempere lande  
 In Feberyere; and there as lande is colde  
 536 In Marche, or in Aprill it doo to stande.  
 A toppe of it to sette other a wonde  
 Ys holdon best right in Apriles ende,  
 When grene, and juce upon hem dothe ascende.

The fig-tree, if grown from a cutting or a wand (stake), to be planted at the end of April when it is green.

## 78.

- 540 The planntes sette is stones to sustene;  
 And douned lande upon the rootes spende;  
 And cannys knottes pike oute hem bydene.  
 The tender cropp for colde herwith defende.  
 544 In places colde a topp,  $\text{III}$  branched thende  
 Of  $\text{II}$  yere age or  $\text{III}$  towarde the sonne,  
 I cutte and sette as here is taught, is wonne.

Stones are to be placed on the plants, and they are to be defended from cold by split canes.

## 79.

- The greyn inwith the grounde is so to stonde  
 548 That graffes  $\text{III}$  on erthe aboven goon;  
 But cleve it softe yf that thou sette awonde,  
 And in this clifte do feire a litel stone.  
 In fferyere and Marche myself aloone  
 552 In Italie haue sette fige planntes greete,  
 And right that yere eke of thaire fruite eete.

The plant is so to stand in the ground that three grafts may appear. But if you plant a wand (stake), cleave it and insert a stone.

<sup>1</sup> colligere.



## 80.

Plants sparingly  
knotted lack fer-  
tility.

- But hem I sette in wel pastyned lande,  
And thai tributed with felicittee.  
556 The knotty plannte is best ; for thai that stande  
Yknotted scars lacketh fertilittee.  
And thai that in the semynary be  
Matured wel and plannted so wol sprynge  
560 Upp feire, and pomys gentilest forth brynge.

## 81.

Some place the  
fig-plant in a bulb  
of squill.

- A bulbe of sqylle eke summen wol devyde,  
And ther into this plannte of fig-tree trie,  
And bynde it so therto that it abyde.  
564 Thai love spaces large and delves hie,  
And landes that beth hardde, and smal and drie.  
To savoure wel in sharpe and stony lande,  
And almost every where eke may thai stande.

## 82.

Those that grow  
in cold places,  
having little sap,  
do not last until  
the hot weather,  
and it is best to  
use them when  
they are green  
and of sharp  
taste.

- 568 Thoo that in hilles growe or places colde  
Have litel mylk ; for thi thai may not dure  
Til it be hoothe ; and best her use to holde  
As thai beth grene and greet, of savor pure  
572 Argute ynough ; but fatter fige and sure  
To kepe in hoot lande and in feld is spronge.  
Thaire kyndes to reherce it is to longe.

## 83.

All the kinds of  
figs are culti-  
vated in the same  
manner. One  
kind is called  
*carica*. Another  
is *præcoqua*,  
which does best  
in cold places. In  
very hot lands  
the late fig is  
best.

- Sufficeth this, that all have oon culture.  
576 And as the carike hath, yeve hem distannce.  
In places passyng colde it is moost sure  
Precox to plannte, her fruyte thai soone enhance  
Er shoures come ; eke it wol moost avannce  
580 In landes that beth estyvous for heete  
The figtree latly riping forto gete.

## 84.

- Hit joyeth dolven ofte, and it to dounge  
 In hervest is availle ; dounge of the mew<sup>1</sup>  
 584 Is best for hem. The roted and mys spronge  
 Let kitte hem of, and so that thai may sewe  
 A broode by grounde. Her taste is eke eschewe  
 In places weet, and hem therof to boote  
 588 Kest asks on thaire circumcised roote.

Dung from the aviary is best for them. Cut off decayed and ill-grown branches, so that the tree may spread laterally. Cast ashes on the roots when cut round, to cure the flavour.

## 85.

- Sum men sette amonge hem caprifige  
 Tree, that it nede not for remedie  
 To honge on every tree that trees fige.  
 592 In Juyn, as sonne is hiest, to caprifie  
 The fig-tree is, that is to signifie  
 The figges<sup>2</sup> grene of caprifigtree rende<sup>3</sup>  
 With tree made like a sawe on hem suspende.

Some plant the wild-fig amidst figs instead of hanging its fruit on every tree. Caprify when the sun is highest in June.

## 86.

- 596 Ffor lacke of that, a yerde of southernwoode  
 Let honge upp that ; or this : take rammes hornys,  
 Kest hem aboute her rootes, thai beth goode,  
 Or callum that in Elmes leves borne is ;  
 600 Thaire abundance as goode as rammes horne is.  
 Or thus : the turgent trunke let scarifie,  
 That humour effluent oute of it hie.

Or hang on it a branch of southern-wood ; or put ram's horns or *callum* on the roots ; or scarify the roots.

## 87.

- To make hem save from wormes sette a bough  
 604 Of terebynt, other a birche stalk.  
 Do that with figtree planntes in the slough<sup>4</sup>  
 Enverse, and wormes in hem wol not walke.  
 Or brason scrapes oute of everie dalke  
 608 Hem scrape ; oildregges oon, and olde wyne  
 Another to thaire rootes wol reclyne.

Against worms place an inverted bough of turpentine or birch in the trench. Remove the worms with brazen scrapers from every hole (dalk).

<sup>1</sup> aviario.<sup>2</sup> grossos.<sup>3</sup> pertusos.<sup>4</sup> scrobe.

Clay, oil, or quick lime placed in their nests, or red ochre with pitch and butter on the trunk, or Coracine pitch hung on the tree, are considered remedies against ants.

## 88.

- Oon useth cley,<sup>1</sup> an other oil, and he<sup>2</sup>  
 With quyk lym wol her dennes have for doo,  
 612 Yf anntes unto thayne ennoyes be,  
 Rubrike with pitche and butter must be doo  
 The trunke aboute, and utter wol thai goo.  
 Pitche coratyne upp hanged in the tree  
 616 Ffor anntes, saithe an other, wol see.

If the fig-tree cast its fruit, oil-dregs, or red ochre, or river-crabs, or rue, or sea-weed, or a scythe used for lupines, are accounted remedies.

## 89.

- Yf figtree cast his fruite, oildregges oon,  
 Rubrike an other watermyxt wol doo  
 Upon the tree, the thridde is forth ygoon,  
 620 The floode-crabbe and a braunche of rue also  
 Upp hongeth he. Seefroth the firthe is goo  
 To honge upp, and the v<sup>th</sup> he saithe a sithe  
 Made for lupyne is upp to honge aswithe.

Or bore the roots, and stick a wedge in every bore, or score the rind with an axe. When the leaves begin lop off the tops.

## 90.

- 624 An other saith the rootes shal be bored,  
 A wegge in every boore eke shal be steke  
 The rynde an other hath with axes scored.  
 But when the leues gynneth oute to breke,  
 628 Of figes fatte and fele it is to speek.  
 Right as thai first begynne in germynynge,  
 Thaire highest topp choppe of for any thinge,

Or that which grows from the middle. To make them continue long ripe, cut off the grapes when as large as beans. To ripen them, anoint the fruit with oil, onions, and pepper when they wax red.

## 91.

- Or choppe of that amydwarde in the tree.  
 632 And premature yf that the list elonge,  
 Thaire grosses, whenne as greet as benes be,  
 So take hem of. Eke yf the thinke hem longe<sup>3</sup>  
 Unripe, in oil and juce of stalons longe  
 636 With pepir myxt ennoynt her pomes, whenne  
 Thaire grosses rody wexing me may kenne.

<sup>1</sup> bitumen.<sup>2</sup> tertius.<sup>3</sup> din.

## 92.

- And in Aprill a figtree graffed is  
 Under the rynde, and if the tree be yonge.<sup>1</sup>  
 640 The cloven stok to graffe is not amys,  
 And wrie hem fest, ther into yonge.<sup>2</sup>  
 Eke next the grounde ykitte wol sonnest fonge.  
 Men graffe in Juyn, oon yere olde graffe is take  
 644 And more or lesse, as nought is to forsake.

Graft figs in April under the bark, or, if young, in the cleft stock, and cover them close (lest wind) get in. They take best near the ground.

## 93.

- And in Aprill figtreen inoculate  
 May best be there as drie landes be,  
 And eke in Juyll thaire lande is mediate.  
 648 Atte October in luke lande pletcheth<sup>3</sup> he.  
 In caprifige and in mulberry tree  
 Figtree men graffeth forto multiplie,  
 And oon wol use a graffe, an oth'r the eye.<sup>4</sup>

Fig-trees may be budded in April in dry land, and in July where the land is middling. Another grafts in October in tepid land.

## 94.

- 652 Eke figges grene in hony may me keep  
 So thai ne touche, Outher in gourdes grene  
 Make everie fige a dover into creep,  
 And that was cut of close it after clene,  
 656 And honge hem ther no fir ne smoke is sene.  
 A fressh potte on hem sevred pitcheth ynne,  
 And dothe this potte swymme in a tonne of wyne.

Keep green figs in honey, or in a green gourd. Hang them where no fire or smoke is. Put them in a fresh pot and make it swim in wine.

## 95.

- And Marcial saith men in dyvers wyse  
 660 Her figges keep, and oon for everichoone,  
 As campaine hem kepeth, shall suffice.  
 On fleykes brede and drie hem is to doone  
 And yet al softe in baskettes repone.  
 664 And in an oven hote upon III stonys  
 For brynnyg it this figgy basket doon is.

One method of keeping is sufficient, as in Campania: spread them on broad, dry crates, and lay them whilst soft in baskets in an oven, upon three stones to prevent burning.

<sup>1</sup> novella.<sup>2</sup> introeat.<sup>3</sup> propagat.<sup>4</sup> oculo.

When baked, place them hot in a jar pitched and covered, their leaves being laid between them and the pot. In rain dry them in the house on hot ashes.

Plant fig-tree cuttings. To make one tree bear diverse fruits take two boughs, a black and a white, and twine them together.

Thus united they bear fruit of different colours in divided unity. Now graft pears, apples, service trees, quince, etc.; also pistacia and pine-apples.

Now is the time to buy oxen, or to prepare for use those you have; for they are now lean and you see what they are.

## 96.

- Whenne thai beth bake, alle hoot into a stene  
 Lette hem be pressed pitched and ywrie,  
 668 Thaire leves doon the potte and hem betwene.  
 For rayne in sonne yf thou ne maist hem drie  
 Hoot asks may this fleykes under strie  
 In house in stede of sonne, and dried so  
 672 In chistes smale or coffyns hem doo.

## 97.

- Of figtree toppes planntes nowe thay make,  
 And dyvers fruite oon figtree forth to brynge,  
 Two bowes, oon blaak and oon white, thai take  
 676 And bynde and wethe<sup>1</sup> hem so that germynyng  
 Comyxt upp goo : thus sette hem forto spryng  
 In moist ydounded lande annexed so  
 That the een<sup>2</sup> germinant togeder go.

## 98.

- 680 Thay uned thus fruite of dyvers coloure  
 Upbryng in this dyvysed unytee.  
 This peres graffe and pomes sweet or soure,  
 As serve or quyns, plumme and mulbyry tree.  
 684 The ix<sup>th</sup> Calende of Aprille doon this be.  
 Pistacia is graffed nowe to growe  
 In colde lande, and pynapul seede is sowe.

## 99.

*De comparandis bobus, tauris et vaccis.*

- And tyme is nowe thyne oxen to be bought.  
 688 And be thai bought or of thi propretee,  
 Hem nowe to greithe is goode for ought or nought.  
 Now be thai lene, and sheweth as thai be,  
 And light to tame her contumacitee.  
 672 Ther are in hem certayne signes spectable  
 Which is to eschewe, and which is profitable.

<sup>1</sup> torquent.

<sup>2</sup> oculi.

## 100.

- Take oxen yonge, ylymmed greet and square,  
 Ychedsted sadde, in brawnes rysing greet,  
 676 Whoos fronnte is crispe and glaade, large eres are,  
 Thaire lippes and thair een blacke as geet,  
 With hornes stronge and streght is goode to gete,  
 Compact a runcle necke, dewlapped syde  
 680 Unto the kne, and nosed upwarde wyde.

Great limbs, firm chest, rising muscles, curly forehead, large ears, black as jet, straight horns, brawny neck, ample dewlap, wide nostrils.

## 101.

- Yshuldred wyde is goode, an huge brest,  
 No litel wombe, and wel oute raught the side,  
 The leendes broode, playne bak and streght,  
 684 The thies sadde and senowy, not to syde,  
 With greet cleen, and tailes longe and wide,  
 The body thourgh yheered, thicke and breef.  
 The rede coloure is best, and broune is leef.

Wide shoulders, large breast and stomach, sides stretched out, thighs firm and sinewy, not too wide, hoofs large, tail long, the whole body covered with short hair, red or brown.

## 102.

- 688 Bette is to take of contree then of straunge,  
 Ther as with soil or aires qualitee  
 Thai be not tempted as to fynde a chaunge.  
 Or thus: take hem that of lyke countree be.  
 692 And of alle other this is forto see,  
 That even strengthened thou togedir dresse,  
 The feebeller lest that the stronge oppresse.

Better to take them from the neighbourhood, that they may not want a change: or, at least, let all be from the same country, and of equal strength.

## 103.

- Thaire thewes is to see that thai be meek,  
 696 Quyk, and aferdde of clamoure and of gode,<sup>1</sup>  
 And ever appetent metes to seek.  
 The fodder grene is best as for thaire foode.  
 For faute of that gete other things goode,  
 700 And fodder hem as thai beth sette on werk.  
 For boles eke now tyme is forto kark.

See that their tempers be meek, afraid of noise and the goad, and always ready to eat.

Time to care for bulls.

<sup>1</sup> stimulo.



Bulls to be tall,  
large limbed, not  
too old, with stern  
face, brawny  
neck, small horns,  
stomach narrow  
(qy. streyt).  
Choose cows high  
chested,

## 104.

- Take bulles that beth high, ylymmed huge,  
Of myddel age, and rather yonge then olde,  
704 A ferdfull face, his neck in many a ruge<sup>1</sup>  
Yfretted greet, and litel hornes wolde  
He have, ywombd strerte is likely holde.  
The kyen also the tyme it is to trie.  
708 Doo cheese hem that be chested huge and hie.

high-headed,  
with large stom-  
achs, fair, black  
horns, hairy ears,  
wide dewlaps,  
great tails, little  
hoofs, black,  
short thighs. Let  
them calve from  
three till ten  
years, not earlier.

## 105.

- For heded hie and wombed longe and wyde  
Black horned feire, and een greet and blake  
Wel hered eres, and dewlappes syde,  
712 With tailles greet, and litel cleen thou take  
Blake hered theyes short, I undertake  
That goode are thai calvyng<sup>2</sup> from  $\text{III}$  yere olde  
Til  $\text{x}$  is best, and othér with noo holde.

Carefully remove  
the old. Greek  
notions on the  
subject.

## 106.

- 716 Thyne olde away to doo be diligent,  
To werk or what thou wilt, and take in yonge.  
The Greekes sayen that the lift<sup>3</sup> instrument,  
The lift stoonc of this bulles bestes stronge,  
720 Knytte him fast in his purce and let him hongc  
In coitu, and he shall gender males,  
And his right stooncs up knytte genderes females.

In winter keep  
the herds near  
the sea; in sum-  
mer where there  
are bushes and  
herbs.

## 107.

- But in this caas thai mosten been abstened  
724 From generacions libertee  
Til thai therto be verray hoote for tened.  
And have thi drove in wynter nygh the see  
In places glade; in hilles may it be  
728 In Somer, namely thaire as bosshes growe  
And herbes for thaire fosteryng ynowe.

<sup>1</sup> toris.<sup>2</sup> MS. calvyny.<sup>3</sup> sinistrum.

## 108.

- Though thai be better fedde aboute floode,  
 Yet luke water best helpeth thaire feture.<sup>1</sup>  
 732 Rayne water luke in lakes that is goode  
 For hem : floode water colde is in nature.  
 This droves may the Winter cold endure  
 Theroute all Winter thourgh, yf it be nede.  
 736 But for thi kyen incalf it is to drede.

Rain-water in pools is best for them ; for it is warmer than river-water. The herds may be out in the cold all the winter, but not cows in calf.

## 109.

- Lest thai have wronge, let make hem closes wyde,  
 Thaire stalles eke beth of utilitee  
 With stones paved well from syde to syde,  
 740 Or gravelled, eke flored may thay be  
 With cley, and lenyng sumdel so that the  
 Humour may passe. Eke southwarde stande it, colde  
 Blastes sumthyng object eke from hem holde.

Let them have wide enclosures, paved or gravelled, or floored with clay, sloping to let off the moisture. Let them stand southward, with something to withstand cold blasts.

## 110.

- 744 Exon may nowe be tamed three yeer olde ;  
 That atte v yeres age is harde to doo.  
 Thaire tamyng is by the heed hem to holde  
 While thai beth yonge, and stroke hem to and to  
 748 With hande, and make afore her stalles so  
 Enlarged rowme outewarde when thai beth wende,  
 That noothing hem afere, or ought offende.

Oxen to be tamed at three years by holding their heads and stroking them with the hand. Leave room before their stalls that when they go out nothing may frighten them.

## 111.

- And footes vii longe thaire stakes stonde  
 752 To teye hem to : but fully hem to tame  
 Chese out the feirest day that may be fonde  
 There noo tempest or thing is worthi blame.  
 Now bringe hem oon and oon to yoke by name,  
 756 And yf thai be rebel, so let him stonde  
 Fastyng oon day and nyght in yokes bonde.

Let there be stakes seven feet long to tie them to. On a fine day bring them one by one to the yoke. If they rebel keep them fasting in the yoke a day and a night.

<sup>1</sup> calvyng.

## 112.

Caress them, and approach them in front, stroke them on the nose and back, sprinkling wine upon them. If they begin to kick or butt, the habit remains with them.

- Now glose hem feire, and bryng hem not behinde,  
 But right afore of metes sum likyng,  
 760 And strook hem nose and bake, eke then is kynde  
 Cleer<sup>1</sup> wyne on hem alle esily to spryng.  
 But warre the horne and heles lest thai flynge  
 A slappe to the. Atte this if thai begynne  
 764 And take effecte therfro thai wol not twynne.

## 113.

When tamed rub their mouths with salt, and put three pieces of salted fat, each a pound weight, in their throat. A pint of wine given with a horn tames them in three days. Others work them gently at first on land already ploughed.

- Thus tamed, her palate and mouthes frote  
 With saltes, and salt grees pounce peces<sup>2</sup> take,  
 And three of hem putte in thyne exon throte.  
 768 A sexter wyne inwith an horne let shake  
 In daies three thaire raginge wol aslake.  
 And other tempte hem frist on werkes smale,  
 In erred lande the plough as forto hale.

## 114.

A shorter way is to yoke the wild ox to a tame one, and if he lie down in the furrow, only bind his feet.

- 772 A shorter waie—the wilde oxe with the tame  
 Yyoked be, to teche hem howe to doo.  
 And in the forgh downe yf he sitte as lame,  
 Noo fier, noo strook, noo prikyng come him too ;  
 776 But bynde his feete that he neither stonde nor goo.  
 This doon, he wol for hungre and for drie  
 Go from this vice, and use it not past twye.

## 115.

Fed stallions now visit mares, and then go to their stable. One horse is not sufficient for over-many.

- Feed stalons fatte goth nowe to gentil marys,  
 780 And, thay replete, ayein thai goothe to stable.  
 Oon horses wit for over fele eke bare is.  
 Let every stalon have as he is able ;  
 So may thai longe endure and profitable.  
 784 A yonge and a lusty hors, if it shall thryve,  
 May have but twyes vi or thries v.

<sup>1</sup> merum.<sup>2</sup> offas.

## 116.

- Yeve others like her strengthes qualitee.  
 But thinges iv in hem is to be holde,  
 788 Fourme, and coloure, merite, and beautee.  
 First fourme hem thus: greet rowme his body holde,  
 And sadde for lacke of strengthe unlike to folde,  
 Her sydes longe, her altitude abounde,  
 792 And buttocks have thay right greet and rounde.

The four things  
 to be regarded  
 in a horse: first  
 form.

## 117.

- Ybrested broode, and alle the bodie lifte  
 In brawnes greet and knotty densitee,  
 With holgh horne, high yshood, sadde foote and swifte;  
 796 Nowe have an eye aboute on thaire beautee.  
 The parties bethe thees in that to see:  
 A litel dried hede, uppon the bonys  
 Is best yf that the skynne wel streite ydoon is.

Next beauty: a  
 small dry head,  
 and the skin close  
 to the bones,

## 118.

- 800 Thaire eres shorte and sharppe, thaire een steep,  
 Thaire noses thorled wyde and patent be,  
 Thaire tail and mayne enlarged, wide and deep,  
 Thaire hoof alle sadde fixe in rotunditee.  
 804 Colours nowe to knowe attendeth ye:  
 The baye is goode coloure, and broune purpure,  
 The lyarde, and the white and browne is sure.

short ears, deep  
 eyes, wide nos-  
 trils, large mane  
 and tail, hoofs  
 firm and round.  
 Next colour, bay,  
 chestnut, liard,  
 or roan, and light  
 brown are good;

## 119.

- The walnyed is goode, also the blake  
 808 Is fyne coloure, the falowe, and hert hued,  
 The pomly gray for him I undertake,  
 The gray, the goldenhered and the skued.<sup>1</sup>  
 And next hem in merite is dyvers hued  
 812 Blacke, bay, and permyxt gray, mousdon also,  
 The fomy, spotty hue, and many moo.

also walnied,  
 black, the colour  
 of the fallow-deer  
 and hart, dapple-  
 grey, grey,  
 golden-haired  
 and skew-bald.  
 Next in merit,  
 black and bay  
 mixed with vari-  
 ous colours,  
 mouse-dun, etc.,  
 etc.

<sup>1</sup> guttatus.

## 120.

Stallions to be of one clear colour ; all others to be excluded, unless of signal merit. Mares to be large in bulk and stomach in well-bred stables.

- But stalons best beth cleer in oon coloured,  
 Alle other lefte, but yf the magnitude  
 816 Of thaire merite hem that been discloured  
 Excuse, and in a maner so exclude.  
 Thi mares take of like similitude,  
 But rathest be thaire bolc and wombes large.  
 820 This craft in gentil haras is to charge.

## 121.

Take care that stallions be kept apart, lest they hurt one another when furious. In summer place them where is cold and shade.

- Alle other mares may be with thaire malys  
 Alle yere atte large ; and this is thaire nature :  
 That moneths XII in fole everie female is.  
 824 Another thing in stalons is to cure,—  
 That thai be sette asonder for lesure  
 Whenne thai beth wode ; and do this maner drove  
 In Somer there is colde and thicke of groves.

## 122.

In winter let them frequent rich and warm pastures, hard enough to strengthen their hoofs. If the mares refuse with the horse anoint them with powdered squills.

- 828 In winter ther is fattest and plesaunte,  
 And sumdel hardde to sette atte firmittee  
 Thaire hornes on thaire feet, this let hem haunte.  
 Impacient yf that females be  
 832 And wol noo male, her naturalitee  
 With stamped squylle embawme other ennointe,  
 And thai wol soone enable in that jointe.

## 123.

Keep brood-mares from cold and hunger, and give them ample space. Let well-bred mares with male colts rest every other year. Others require no care.

- Fro colde and hungre holde hem that beth greet  
 836 In fole, and yeve hem place atte thaire plesaunce,  
 And gentil females that males gete  
 Iche other yere be kept fro fecundaunce ;  
 [. . . . .]  
 840 So shall thai be the bigger huge and pure.  
 Alle other take as cometh of hem noo cure.

## 124.

- A stalon may begynne atte yeres v,  
 And his females at yeres ii conceyveth.
- 844 But after yeres x thaire coltes blyve  
 Shall never goo, the pukker thai deceiveth.  
 Foles with hande to touche a corser weyveth ;  
 Hit hurteth hem to handel or to holde.
- 848 Defende hem eke, as reson wol, from colde.

The colts of a mare more than ten years old of little value. Foals not to be handled.

## 125.

- In foles, as thai are adolescentes,  
 Yf thai be goode, asmoche is forto see  
 As is aforne wel saide of thaire parentes,
- 852 Quyk, swifte, and steryng with hillaritee.  
 Now foles two yere olde may tamed be :  
 Take brawny-bodied, huge, argute, and longe  
 Smal ballockynge, and ever shortte uphonge.

Foals to be chosen by the same marks as their sires; they may be broken in at two years.

## 126.

- 856 In other thing take hem her fader like,  
 So thewed that from high quiete and rest  
 Anoon thai may be stered forto prike,  
 And fastest pricked turning at the best,
- 860 Ner harde be it not eft to make him rest.  
 Thaire myddel teeth aboue at two yere age  
 Thai cause, at yeres ii an other gage.

Let their thews (*manners*) be such that they may be stirred from rest to speed, and again from greatest speed made to rest. They change the upper middle teeth at two years, and at four change again.

## 127.

- Er yeres six oute gothe the gomes stronge,  
 864 The caused first at yeres vi are even.<sup>1</sup>  
 At vii yere are all illiche longe,  
 The markes of thaire age are lost at sevon.  
 Thaire browes hoore, her tempils holgh unevon,
- 868 The teethe oute seeth. Now alle iiij footed bestes,  
 And namely hors, to geldde yholdyn best is.

Ere the sixth year the grinders fall out. At six those first changed are even, at seven all are of one length, and then all marks are lost.

<sup>1</sup> equantur.



*De Mulino genere & Asinis.*

128.

For mules choose  
a mare strong-  
boned, of great  
bulk and noble  
form, three years  
old.

- This mules forto make who so delite,  
A mare yboned sadde, ybulked greet,  
872 Yformed nobully most been elite ;  
And though she be not swyfte, a strong one geto  
Of yeres IIII unto this werk to trete.  
Till yeres x she for this admyssure  
876 Is goode, but this mot have a besy cure.

129.

His wife (the ass)  
is to be haled  
out, the mare is  
to be haled in.

- The mare yf the asse eschewe, on his female  
As tempte him first ; and when he gynneth ride,  
Hys wyf is oute, this mare is into hale.  
880 While he dothe on, that other holde aside.  
For furious in lust he wol abide  
And doo : but yf he bite hir in his rage,  
Let labouryng his melincoly swage.

130.

The best bred  
mules are from  
the mare and the  
ass. The produce  
of the wild ass  
and the mare  
sure to be strong  
and swift.

- 884 A mule eke of an hors and of an asse  
Is hadde, and of a wilde asse and a mare,  
But gentiler in kynde never nasse  
Then of the mare and asse yformed are.  
888 Of asses wilde and mares better nare,  
Ther noo stalons of whome the geniture  
For to be stronge and swyft me may assure.

131.

A stallion ass to  
be bulky,  
brawny, firm,  
large-limbed,  
strong and  
steady ; black,  
mouse-coloured,  
or red. If the  
brows and ears  
are spotted, the  
offspring will be  
variegated.

- A stalon asse ybolked, brawny, sadde,  
892 And large ylymmed, strong, and steyth, alle blaak  
Or mou(s)hered or reede is to been hadde.  
But chois yf that ther be, moushered taak.  
And discolour in browes hath a laak  
896 And eres eke, but what that thaire of [s]prynge  
Of variannt colour forth thai brynge.

132.

- Three yeres age is leest and x is meste,  
 And from her damme a she asse oon yere olde  
 900 Doo putte in share pastures that the beeste  
 In tender age on labour gynne holde ;  
 The male aselle in feeldes forto holde  
 Hit needefull is, for he to diligent  
 904 Laboure wol take, and ek be negligent.

From three to ten years is the age. Place the she-ass of one year in rough (?) pastures to learn labour; keep the male in the fields, to work and be idle in turns.

*De apium infirmitatibus & curacione.*

133.

- The bee that Marche is wonte to be ful seke,  
 That after Winter colde and abstinent  
 On titimalle and elmes gynneth pike  
 908 That bittir be, wherof anoon relent  
 Thaire wombes are, and sone be thay shent  
 But yf me helpe anoon with medicyne.  
 Nowe rewe on hem and helpp hem oute of pyne.

Bees, sick after cold and abstinence, will pick spurge and elm-blossoms, and be injured unless helped by medicine. Pity them.

134.

- 912 Wyne Amynee with pomgarnates grayne,  
 Or reyson graynes with dewe<sup>1</sup> Siriake<sup>2</sup>  
 And mighty wyne, alle this ygrounden playne  
 And boiled in sharppe wyne is forto take  
 916 And into litel treen trowes shake.  
 Or roosmaryn<sup>3</sup> in meth<sup>4</sup> decoct congele,  
 And yeve it hem in gutters,<sup>5</sup> hem to hele.

Give Amynean wine with grain of pomegranate, or *Ros Syriacus*, with raisins and strong wine; shake in little troughs made of trees, or give rosemary boiled in mead.

135.

- And clorded<sup>6</sup> yf thaire backes be, silent,  
 920 And slough, a thing horrible to beholde,  
 And corses dede oute beryng diligent,  
 Chaneles<sup>7</sup> is to make of cannes<sup>8</sup> olde  
 That iche of hem a quantitee may holde.  
 924 Putte hony into hem and powder galle,  
 Or powder rose, and it wol hele hem alle.

If they be contracted, silent, and slow, carrying out dead bodies, make channels and put in honey and powdered gall, or powdered rose.

<sup>1</sup> rore.                    <sup>2</sup> Siriaco.                    <sup>3</sup> rosem marinum.                    <sup>4</sup> mulsa.  
<sup>5</sup> ymbriticus.                    <sup>6</sup> contracto.                    <sup>7</sup> canales.                    <sup>8</sup> cannis.

Cut away rotten and empty combs with the sharpest knife of all the row.

- 136.
- Moost spedy is the roten combes kerve  
 Awaye, and yf the swarme is but of fewe,  
 928 Thaire empty combes of the same serve.  
 But take the kennest knyf of alle the rewe,  
 To doe this softely with, lest alle remewe,  
 And thai seyng thaire dwellyng so forfare  
 932 So fly awaye with greet compleynt and care.

Abundance often injures them; for they think of nothing but working till they die. Therefore if the combs drip with excess of honey, keep them three days at home.

- 137.
- Ek ofte ennoieth hem felicitee,  
 As floures over fele of whom thai trie  
 So faste hony that on fecundite  
 936 Thai thinketh not, nor horde to multipli,  
 But dothe hemself travaille until thai die.  
 Forthi yf combes ronke of hony weep,<sup>1</sup>  
 Three dayes stopped up atte home hem keep.

Thus stopped up they will attend to generation. Cleanse the hives about the 1st of April wherever winter has damaged them, and pick out moths, spiders, etc.

- 138.
- 940 Thus stopped uppe, in generacion  
 And brynging babes forth thai wol attende.  
 Thaire dwellyng places expu(r)gacion  
 Of every filthe aboute Aprill Calende  
 944 Wol have of right ther Wynter hath it shende.  
 Nowe pike oute moughthes,<sup>2</sup> attercoppes,<sup>3</sup> wormys,<sup>4</sup>  
 And butterflie<sup>5</sup> whoos thoste engendryng worme is.

Place under them smoke of incense and dry ox-manure till autumn. Advise thee well (*i.e.* take care) to be sober, chaste, sour meats being uneaten, exempt from baths, etc. in doing bees service.

- 139.
- Smooke of encense effuse in drie oxo dounge  
 948 Doo under hem, to hele hem and socoure.  
 Til hervest doo this ofte, yf it be longe.  
 Alle sobre, chaste, uneten metes soure,  
 From bathes aliene, unclene odoure,  
 952 And sauces alle and metes salt avyse  
 The wel to been, in doying been service.

<sup>1</sup> drepe.

<sup>2</sup> tineas.

<sup>3</sup> araneas.

<sup>4</sup> vermiculos.

<sup>5</sup> papiliones.

140.

With October Marche houres feet beth even  
 The first hath xxv. feet, xv  
 956 Feet hath the secounde houre, the thirddē xi,  
 The fourthe hath viii, and v up six sustene,  
 And six hath v. In vi, vii demene,  
 And so goo forth. x hath feet thries v.  
 960 xi goth with xxv blyve.

Length of the  
 several hours in  
 March.

*Deo Gracias.*

Nowe Marche is doon and to correctioun  
 His book is goon, as other did afore,  
 Of him that said I thi protectioun  
 964 From all thy foon adversannt lesse & more ;  
 And his behestē stedfast is evermore.  
 Honoure, empire, and jubilacioun  
 To Ihesu Crist in special therfore,  
 968 My lyf, my light, my right salvacioun.

The translator's  
 epilogue.

# APRILIS.

## BOOK THE FIFTH.

### *Prefacio in quintum librum.*

The translator's  
preface.

Ayenie to werk am I sette, and I haste.  
Come of, let see who be the sharppe penne.  
The tyme is riche, and synne is hit to waste,  
4 Every moment saith "Rys! I goo. Come, thenn,<sup>1</sup>  
To jugement." O what may I saye thenne<sup>2</sup>  
That many an hour have spende & not alle well.  
But Mercy, God! Now husht of that: for renne  
8 I must, and here begynne atte Averell.

### *De Medica seretica & disciplina ejus.*

#### 1.

Trefoil sown in  
April will last  
ten years, and  
may be cut four  
or six times. It  
dungs lean lands,  
fattens lean  
beasts, cures sick  
ones. An acre  
enough for three  
horses a year.

At Auerel Medike is forto sowe  
In beddes fourmed, as is taught beforne,  
That ones sowen yeres x wol growe,  
12 And yerely IIII or tymes sexe yshorne.  
Hit doungeth landes lene, and beestes lorne  
For lene it fedeth uppe, and seek aviseth.  
Thre hors ayere an acre wel sufficeth.

#### 2.

A cyathus enough  
for a bed five  
feet broad and  
ten long. Cover  
quickly with a  
wooden rake.  
Use no iron.

16 A cruse is for a bedde ynough to take  
Of footes v in brede, & double longe,  
And wrie hem quycly with a treen rake,  
Lest that the sonne up brenne, or do hem wronge.  
20 From thennes doo noon yren hem amonge,  
But oonly tree, and goode is weede hem ofte,  
Lest weedes ille oppresse hem yonge and softe.

<sup>1</sup> inde hinc.

<sup>2</sup> tunc.

## 3.

- First reepe it late, that sedes sumdel shake,  
 24 And after reepe it as the thinkest goode,  
 And fodder for the beestes therof make,  
 First scant<sup>1</sup>; it swelleth and encreaseth bloode;  
 And watter wele the londe ther as it stoode.  
 28 Sixe sithe ayere reepe it; as ofte it weede:  
 And yeres x ther is of it noo drede.

*De serenda olea : de vineis, &c.*

## 4.

- Olyve is graffed now in tempore lond,  
 As is beforne ytaught, under the rynde  
 32 In wilde olyve,<sup>2</sup> olyves forto stond  
 So that, though thai be brende, oute of thaire kynde  
 Thai change not. This crafte be not behinde.  
 Maak delves, sette in hem thi wilde olyve,  
 36 And fille hem uppe half fulle until thay thryve.

## 5.

- This wilde olyve ytaken, graffe hem lowe,  
 And as the graff upp springing gynneth renne,  
 The molde aboute his stock and him up growe  
 40 Wel upp over the grafyng stede; and thenne  
 Though fire be sette on it it shal not brenne,  
 His comyssure in erthe it stont so depe,  
 And oute of it olyve ayein wol crepe.

## 6.

- Olyves sum in rootes graffe, and rende  
 Hem after out with parcells of the roote;<sup>3</sup>  
 But first this craffes wel must comprehende.  
 And set hem forth as planntes forto roote.<sup>4</sup>  
 48 From the viii kalend of Aprill it is boote,  
 As Grekes sayen, til Jules thridde none  
 To graff in hoothe lande late, in colde land sone.

Do not cut it the first time till it sheds its seed. Let it be given to beasts sparingly at first, for it swells them and makes blood. Cut it six times a year.

Graft olives under the rind of the wild olive.

Graft it low, and as it rises let the mould rise about the grafting place. Then the joint is so deep that it cannot burn.

Some graft in the root, and when they have taken rend them off with part of the root, and plant them out. Graft from April 1st to July 5th.

<sup>1</sup> parce.

<sup>2</sup> oleastro.

<sup>3</sup> radicis.

<sup>4</sup> radicare.



Before April the 13th vines are to be dug in cold places, and those which were not set in March should be set now. Panic and millet are planted in places moderately dry.

Now sow cabbage to serve for colewort. Parsley will grow now till autumn.

Three sorts of parsley: hipposelinon, helioselinon, and peiloselinon.

Parsley will be made crisp if you pound the seeds, or bruise them, after they are grown, with a roller or with the feet.

## 7.

- Er thenne this moones Ide in places cold  
 52 Beth vynes dolve, and hem that Marche hath lefte  
 Unsette, lette sette hem nowe. Nowe weeded wold  
 Thi semynaires be, and dolven efte.  
 Panyke and mylde in comyn drie is lefte.<sup>1</sup>  
 56 To sowe and eree<sup>2</sup> upp feeldes fatte and weet,  
 And weedes tender yette oute of hem geet.

*De diversis herbis in orto.*

## 8.

- Last in this moone as veer is nygh atte ende,  
 Brasike that wortos serveth is to sowe,  
 60 For tyme is past a croppe on it to ascende.  
 Eke Ache in every manner lande is throwe  
 So it be weet. In drie eke wol it growe  
 Yf nede be, and nygh in all the moonys  
 64 Fro pryme veer til hervest last, this doon is.

## 9.

- As of this Aches there be kyndeas thre :  
 The soure and stordy yposelinon,  
 This is the first ; the softe yfoiled be  
 68 Seconde, yclept Elioselinon,  
 In lakes spronge ; and Petroselinon  
 In places hardde uppe sprynging : diligent  
 Men tille, and have alle three to their entent.

## 10.

- 72 The gretter ache is made thus : fingres tre  
 Ful of that seede doo in a lynnen thynne  
 Clothe in a litel delf so sette it be.  
 The growyng of hem into oon heed wol wynne,  
 76 And so be greet asonder not to twynne.  
 Thai wol be criske her seede yf that me crese,  
 Or with a rolle or feet hem sprongen brese.

<sup>1</sup> acceptum.<sup>2</sup> plowe.

## 11.

- Ek the older seede the sonner it is spronge,  
 80 The yonger dwelleth longer. Nowe Avage<sup>1</sup>  
 Is sowe, and so forthe alle the somer longe  
 Til hervest come in with his gretter wage.  
 But yeve him drinke ynough in youth and age.  
 84 For humour dronken, rathest upp gothe he,  
 And sowen hidde anoon he praieth be.

Avage requires much water, and to be covered up as soon as sown.

## 12.

- From him the weedes plucke : unnecessary  
 Is him to plaunte yf he be wel ysowe.  
 88 Yit better wol he spryng and higher caire  
 Wel rare yf he be plannted forto growe,  
 Eke juce of dounge and humoure on hem throwe.  
 With yren him to croppe is his encrease,  
 92 So cropped forto sprynge he wol not ceese.

Orage need not be transplanted, but it will grow better if planted thin.

## 13.

- Basilicon is sowen in this moone,  
 And theruppon ysowen yf me shall  
 Hoote water sprynge, upp gothe it wonder sone.  
 96 Eke mervaille thinge affermeth Marcial :  
 Therof that purpure nowe the floure is alle.  
 Nowe it is white, now rosy. This is straunge.  
 It ofte ysowe eke maketh wounder change.

Marcial tells wonders of Basilicon changing its colour.

## 14.

- 100 To pelletur, and to horsmyntes<sup>2</sup> eek  
 Hit chaungeth ofte. Cucumber nowe is sowe,  
 Melones, pelletur, cappare, and leek.  
 Colcases planntes now beth sette to growe,  
 104 Nowe coriander, letuce, betes throwe  
 In molde; onyons, myntes, gourdes, goldes,<sup>3</sup>  
 Nowe secondly to sowe or kest in molde is.

Time for cucumbers, melons, pellitory, capers, leeks, etc.

<sup>1</sup> atriplex.

<sup>2</sup> sisimbrium.

<sup>3</sup> intibe.

*De zizipho & ejus pomis.*

## 15.

Ziziphus may be set in stock, or plant, or stone. Three stones in the breadth of your hand.

- Nowe ziziphus in infervent lande ;  
 108 Atte May or Juyn in londe that beth colde.  
 Ther gladde and warme is loveth he to stande.  
 To sette or stook or plannte or boon is holde  
 Right goode ; softe erthe in Marche the planntes wolde  
 112 Stonde ynne : thre bones in thyne hondes brede  
 Inverse into the delf is doune to lede.

## 16.

Place ashes and dung over and under. When the size of your thumb, plant them out. The land not be too fat. Heap stones round the stock in winter, and remove in summer.

- Doo aske and dounge on hem above and under,  
 And breek away the weedes with thyne hande.  
 116 And thombe greet in pastyn hem asonder  
 Or (in) to delf : thai axe not to fatte lande,  
 So that by fatte and not by lene it stande.  
 In Wynter to his codde<sup>1</sup> an heap of stonys  
 120 Is goode, that in the Somer utter doone is.

## 17.

Rub the tree with a currycomb. Old wine sprinkled on them when newly pulled will not suffer their fruit to wrinkle.

- Yf this tree loure,<sup>2</sup> an horscombe wol him chere.  
 Or lite and ofte embaume his roote oxe donge.  
 In places drie her fruites ripe alle yere  
 124 Is kept in cleyed erthen pottes longe.  
 Nowe ruge<sup>3</sup> on hem puldde newe olde wyne yspronge  
 Wol suffre be : eke honged with thaire bough,  
 Or in thaire leves fold, is goode ynough.

## 18.

For reasons taught before, pomegranates and peaches are to be grafted now ; also the citron.

- 128 This moone also, by rather lerned reason,  
 To sette and graffe in places temperate  
 Pomgarnat is, and peches have thaire season.  
 Atte May Kalendes hem to enoculate<sup>4</sup>  
 132 Right as we saide of figges emplastrate.  
 Eke Citurtree this moone in places colde  
 Is forto graffe, as is beforne ytolde.

<sup>1</sup> codici.<sup>2</sup> tristis sit.<sup>3</sup> rugam.<sup>4</sup> inoculare.

## 19.

- In colde lande nowe the figtree plant is sette,<sup>1</sup>  
 136 And graffed in the stock or in the rynde,  
 As disciplyne of hem beforne is sette.<sup>2</sup>  
 And hem to enoculer eke have in mynde.  
 Nowe Cefalon the palmes plannte is kynde  
 140 In glaade to sette and hoothe ; now graffyng serve<sup>3</sup>  
 In quynce, in white thorne, in himself wol serve.<sup>4</sup>

Plant and graft  
 the fig, and the  
 palm, called also  
 cephalon, and the  
 service-tree.

*De oleo violacio & vino.*

## 20.

- Oilviolet to make attende : of oil  
 As many pounde, asmany unces take  
 144 Of violette, not but oonly the foil.  
 And XL daies standyng theroute<sup>5</sup> it make.  
 To x sester olde wyne v pounde in slake  
 Of violet undewy, and x pounde  
 148 Hony the xxx<sup>th</sup>e day is forto enfounde.

Oil-violet to be  
 made of the  
 leaves.

*De vitulis nutriendis, tonsuris et signaturis.*

## 21.

- Now calves to be calued is the gyse.  
 But yeve hem meete ynough that were with childe,  
 That thai to mylk and laboure may suffice.  
 152 And yeve thaire children tosted grounden mylde<sup>6</sup>  
 Commyst with mylk. Now shepe shere in ayer mylde;<sup>7</sup>  
 Late lamber marke hem nowe, nowe frist tuppyng  
 Be made, lambron to ripe er Winter sprynge.

Feed calves with  
 millet mixed  
 with milk.  
 Shear sheep, and  
 mark late lambs.

*De apibus investigandis et alvearibus purgandis.*

## 22.

- 156 This moone in places apte is been to seche :  
 Place apte is there swete herbes multiplie,  
 And bees the welles haunte and water cleche :  
 Utilitee is ther to mellifie.  
 160 But where the swarmes dwell is crafte to asprie.  
 And first yf thai be dwellyng ferre or nygh,  
 See here the crafte ; and trully it is slygh.

Seek for bees  
 this month where  
 are sweet herbs  
 and water.

<sup>1</sup> plantatur.<sup>2</sup> posito.<sup>3</sup> sorbi.<sup>4</sup> servire.<sup>5</sup> sub divo.<sup>6</sup> milio.<sup>7</sup> calido.

## 23.

Mark the bees' backs with ruddle, and see how long they are returning.

- Take rubrik<sup>1</sup> poured in sum litel shelle,  
 164 And therewithall the bak of every bee  
 A pensel touche as thai drynk atte the welle,  
 And note hem after widerwarde thai flee.  
 Then by thaire ayein turnyng a man may se  
 168 Howe ferre or nygh thai be : and to the nygh  
 To come is light ; but to the ferre be sligh.

## 24.

Put honey or wine into a hole cut in a joint of a reed, and when many are gone in close it.

- Kitte out ayointe of reede, and in the side<sup>2</sup>  
 Therof let make an hoole, and therin doo  
 172 Hony or sweete wyne<sup>3</sup> sumdel beside<sup>4</sup>  
 The welle or water that the been goth too.  
 Lette hem goon in as fele as wol in goo ;  
 And after hem the hoole yclosed be,  
 176 And first let oon of hem oute of it flee,

## 25.

Let out first one, and then another, and follow them.

- And folowe fast, for thiderwarde thai dwelle.  
 Streight wol she flee ; and when thou may not see  
 No lenger hir, an othør forth to telle  
 180 Let goo ; for thiderwarde eke wol she flee.  
 But sew uppon. Do thus froo be to be.  
 Thus wol thai lede oon to thaire dwellyng place.  
 But in the mornyng gynne hem thus to trace ;

## 26.

Or, place something sweetened with honey near the well, and those who have tasted it will have a care to bring others.

- 184 That alle the day unto thi sewe suffice ;  
 For, towarde nyght in-restyng thai assure.  
 Or thus : a thing with hony thou devyse  
 To sette as by the welle of thaire pasture.  
 188 When oon hath tasted it, anoon his cure  
 Dothe he to bryng his bretheren to that feest ;  
 And that thay haunte anoon, the moost and leest.

<sup>1</sup> rudul.<sup>2</sup> latus.<sup>3</sup> defrutum.<sup>4</sup> juxta.

## 27.

- Now see the cours howe thai goo to and froo,  
 192 And fire hem home yf thai be in a cave,  
 Besmooke hem, oute of it anoon thai goo.  
 Thenne make a sowne on brasse, and thou shalt have  
 Hem lightyng on sum boshe or tree; nowe shave  
 196 Hem into an hyve. Yf thai be in a tree  
 Thaire hous over and under sawed be.

If they are in a cave smoke them out, and make a noise with brass. If they are in a tree saw out the nest.

## 28.

- Uppе wrappe hem clene, and sette hem with thyne hyves;  
 To frote her houses wel with citriage  
 200 And herbes sweete is plesaunt to thaire lyves.  
 Yf this be doon while veer is yonge of age  
 The welles nygh, of unfeyned courage  
 Of been therto wol come a multitude.  
 204 Now ware that theves naught thi craftе delude.

Rub the hives with sweet herbs in the early spring, near a well; but beware of thieves.

## 29.

- Now purge her hyves; flee the butterflie  
 That in the malves flouring wol abounde;  
 A brason vessel streit with brynkes hie  
 208 A light atte nyght make standyng in the grounde;  
 The butterflies wol this light enrounde,  
 And brenne hemself. Thus may me hem destroye  
 Uchone anoon that thinges fele ennoye.

Clean the hives, and place a light at evening in a high narrow vessel, to destroy butterflies.

## 30.

- Abrel with September in houres oon is  
 Ooon twyes<sup>1</sup> XII, and tweyne hath twyes<sup>2</sup> VII.  
 Thre twyes v; and foure hath seven ons.  
 And fyve hath v; and sixe hath three foote even.  
 216 Nowe VII, VIII and IX, and X, XI  
 With v and IIII, and III and II, and I  
 Beth houre for houre, and foote for foote to goon.

The hours of the day in April.

<sup>1</sup> XXIV.

<sup>2</sup> XIII.



*Deo Gracias.**Finis quinti libri, et præfacio in sextum librum.*

Translator's  
epilogue.

And here an ende, er thenne I wende, I fynde  
 220 Eke doon is in this moone are taught aforne.  
 O Salvatour! O Jesse floure so kynde,  
 Of oon for everichon that list be borne,  
 And for us hinge, a crowne usyng of thorne!  
 224 Honoure be to the, Floure(s) of floures ay!  
 Thi werke away from derk upborn  
 So make, as here I take ayaine atte May.

# MAY.

## BOOK THE SIXTH.

### *De panico & milio, & feno recidendo.*

#### 1.

- Atte May in places that beth colde and wete,  
Panyk and mylde in thaire maner is sowe.  
Now every grayne almost hath floures swete,  
4 Untouched now the Tilman lete hem growe.  
Barly and whete & sengul seedes are  
VIII daies floure, and XL dayes grete<sup>1</sup>  
Withouten floure, ripeness until the gete.

Sow panic and millet.  
Single seeds flower in eight days; and after flowering grow ripe in forty days.

#### 2.

- 8 All double seede, as benes, peses be,  
And other pulse, a XL dayes floure,  
And greteth with in places nygh the see.  
In places drie & colde nowe tyme & houre  
12 Is hay to mowe, and yf the rayne beshoure,  
Winde it not til hit be parfit drie.  
Nowe to the vyne is efte to have an eye.

Double seeds flower in forty days, and at the same time grow large.  
In rainy weather move the hay till perfectly dry.

### *De novelle sarmentis relinquendis.*

#### 3.

- Consider now sarmentes tender, yonge,  
16 And leve a few of hem that saddest be,  
And holde her armes up til thai be stronge.  
A yonge vyne hath ynowe oon, II, or III,  
Armes, and sweethed hem togeder see,  
20 Lest wyndes rude hem breek and overthrowe  
And no maner be lefte on hem to growe.

Leave a few of the firmest vine shoots. See that two or three are swathed together.

<sup>1</sup> grandecere.

## 4.

Pull off the vine-leaves whilst they may be tweaked from the tree without difficulty.

- This moone is eke for pampinacion  
 Convenient; voide leves puld to be.  
 24 But sette upon this occupacion  
 While that me may with no difficultee  
 With fyngers lightly twyk hem from the tree.  
 This crafte wol fede up grapes fatte and greet,  
 28 And Phebus wol goo Ripe hem with his heet.

*De proscindendis & aperiendis novis agris.*

## 5.

Plough and break up fallows in places dry and wet, plain and rough. A common ditch is easier to make than a blind ditch.

- Nowe feeldes fatte in herbes overgrowe  
 Ys goode to plowe, and leyes up to breke.  
 Se whether drie or wete, or playne or rowe  
 32 It be, or full of boshe, or stones steke.  
 Lette diche it deep that humoure oute may leke.  
 Yf it be weet, a comyn diche in kynde  
 To make is lighter thenne the diches blynde.

## 6.

Make a furrow and fill it to the middle with pebbles. Make the earth over it level without any slope. Take heed that the heads of the trenches fall headlong into a great ditch.

- 36 A forgh (III?) footes deep thi landes thorgh  
 With gravel, or with litel pibble stonys,  
 Unto the mydwarde fild ayeme this forgh ;  
 And even the erthe above ascaunce her noon is.  
 40 And thus doo ofte as ofte as goode to doon is.  
 But hede it that the hedes of hem alle  
 Into sum greet diche pitchelonges falle.

## 7.

If there be scarcity of stones dig in cuttings, or straw, or lap. If many stones, they will do for fencing.

- The humour shall passe, and thus thi lande be saved.  
 44 And stones yf the lacketh, this is boote ;  
 Sarment, or stree, or lappe in it be graved.  
 Yf thaire be treen, up storke hem by the roote,  
 Here oon, there oon to leve a fer remote  
 48 I holde is goode. Yf it be full of stonys,  
 For closure of the feld better stuff noon is.

8.

- Have up this stones scorne unto the Wallis,  
 They may thi feelde uncomber and defende.  
 52 Yf rishes, gresse, or fern in with this walle is  
 With ereyng ofte her lyves wol be spende.  
 Lypyne or benes sowen ofte anende  
 On hem wol make, yf ever as thai spryng  
 56 Her hedes with a sicle of thou flynge.

Frequent ploughing will kill rushes, grass, and fern. Lupines, or beans, will make an end of them, if you cut off their heads with a sickle.

*De ablaqueandis arboribus, occandis, etc.*

9.

- Nowe wyne and tree that were ablaqueat  
 To cover hem it is convenient.  
 Nowe as the treen beth gladde in thaire astate  
 60 For gutteryng to howe it and to hent,  
 A comune busshell greet circumferent,  
 Or litel lesse, oon of thi worchers falle,  
 That konnyngest is of his felawes alle.

Cover up vines, etc., that had been bared. Let the cleverest workman cut down trees for guttering.

10.

- 64 The semynair is dolven in this moone,  
 Alle besily: in places over colde  
 And pluvyous, olyves is to doone,  
 To kytte, and mosse away be rased wolde.  
 68 The feeld eke nowe ther as me sowe sholde,  
 Lypyne for donngyng lande to plowe it need is.  
 Nowe turne ayein to gardeyne sowyng seedys.

Dig seed-beds, cut olive-trees, and clear away moss.

*De spatiis ortorum pastinandis et seminibus serendis.*

11.

- The spaces that in hervest sowe or sede  
 72 Me wol, may best have nowe thaire pastynyng.  
 Nowe ache is sowe, and howe beforne take heede,  
 Melonns and coriander sowen spryng.  
 Of gourdes, tasil, radishe nowe sowynge  
 76 Is goode. Nowe rue is sette, and nowe transplannte  
 A leek so drynke up bolde him forto avannte.

Prepare the ground for autumn-planting. Sow ach (or parsley), melons, coriander, teazle, rue, and leeks.

## 12.

Marcial tells a  
marvel of pome-  
granates.

- In places hoothe nowe pomgarnates floure,  
That Marcial a mervaille dooth of telle ;  
80 In til a potte of erthe enduce a floure<sup>1</sup>  
Uppon his bough downe bounden ther to dwelle.  
To fillyng of this potte the fruyte wol swelle  
By hervest tyme ; and then his magnitude  
84 By breking of this potte me may disclude.

## 13.

Graft peaches,  
till citrons, set  
zuzubes, figs,  
and palms.

- In landes hoothe the pechys in this moone  
Emplastred are, and nowe in landes colde,  
The citur<sup>2</sup> tree to tille is goode to doone  
88 In divers wyse, as is to fore ytolde.  
Now ziziphus and figtree forto holde  
Men sette or graff in cold or chillyng lande.  
The palme eke nowe men setteth forth to stande.

## 14.

To castrate little  
bulls with a cleft  
cane,

- 92 Now Mago saith is goode castracion  
Of litel boles, whil thaire age is tender.  
Feru to cleve an occupacion  
Be first, and presse in it thaire stoness slender.  
96 So wol thai dwyne awaye that sholde engender.  
In veer, and hervest, eke sprynging the moone  
Is best, as saithe this Mago, this to doone.

## 15.

Or with tin  
tongs. Tie up  
the wounds with  
vine-ashes and  
litharge.

- Other with tynnen tonges take her strynges,  
100 First bounden lest thay nolde not graunt hem leve,<sup>3</sup>  
And faire of with a knyf thai cutte her thinges,  
But sumdel on the strynges hede thai leve,<sup>4</sup>  
Tais<sup>5</sup> stauncheth bloode, and alle wol not bereve  
104 Her stordy myght : her woundes let entyne  
With aske of vyne, and with spume argentine.

<sup>1</sup> florem.<sup>2</sup> citrum.<sup>3</sup> licencia.<sup>4</sup> demittunt.<sup>5</sup> ? this.

16.

- With abstynence of drynk and litel mete  
 After this feste as fede hem daies three,  
 108 Grene herbes croppes, swettest let hem ete,  
 And bowes softe and toppe of tender tree  
 Bydewed or bywet whether it be.  
 Tar mixt with aske and oil after III dayis  
 112 Ennoynte his wounde, and save thi beest for ay is.

Let them eat  
 young boughs  
 softened with  
 dew or water ;  
 and thy beast is  
 safe for ever.

17.

- Castracion in better wyse is founde  
 In daies late : as first a beest to bynde,  
 And bounden so to holde him fast to grounde,  
 116 And streyne in tre the wytnes of his kynde,  
 And with a brennyng axe away behinde  
 To hewe hem bothe ; or have a thing therfore  
 Made like a swerde this folk<sup>1</sup> away to seore.

A better mode of  
 later date.

18.

- 120 This yren maade, thi rule of tree ley to  
 This thinges straite, and with the brennyng yre<sup>2</sup>  
 So smyte hem of quykly that it be doo,  
 So wol the woo be shortte, of litel yre,<sup>3</sup>  
 124 Eke skynne and stringes seryng so to enfire  
 Upstauncheth bloode, and closeth so the wounde  
 That save a cicatrice is nought yfounded.

Smite off quickly  
 with the hot iron  
 to stanch the  
 blood.

*De tonsuris ovium.*

19.

- Nowe sheepe bethe shorne in places temperate.  
 128 For sheep ishorne make uncture of lupyne,  
 The juce of it decoct first ther ate  
 With dregges both of oiles and aged wynys,  
 Of iche yliche : a thing for sheep this fyne is.  
 132 Herewith enpointe hem alle ; and after three  
 Dayes let over wesshe hem in the see.

Anoint shorn  
 sheep with juice  
 of lupine, mixed  
 with equal quan-  
 tities of oil dregs  
 and old wine.  
 Wash them in  
 the sea,

<sup>1</sup> testiculos.

<sup>2</sup> ferramentum.

<sup>3</sup> ire seu doloris.



## 20.

Or with salt and water long before evening. It will make them free from scurf and scald, and woolly and long-lived.

- And yf the see be ferre, licoure of heven  
 With litel salt decocte this beest ennointe.  
 136 Oute wessehe of it, but doo this longe er even :  
 And over yere thai wol been in goode pointe  
 Withouten scorf or scalle in cors or jointe,  
 Also thai shall have softe encrisped wolle  
 140 And wonderly prolonged atte the fulle.

*De casio faciendo.*

## 21.

Make cheese with curd of kid, lamb, or calf, or with wild teazle, or the skin which adheres to chicken's crop.

- Alle fresshe the mylk is crodded now to chese<sup>1</sup>  
 With crudde of kidde, or lambe, other of calf,  
 Or floure of tasil wilde. Oon of hem chese,<sup>2</sup>  
 144 Or that pellet<sup>3</sup> that closeth, every<sup>4</sup> half,  
 The chicke or pyjon crauwe, hool either half.  
 With figtree mylk, fresshe mylk also wol turne.  
 Thenne wrynge it, presse it under poundes scorne.

## 22.

When firm lay them on crates, but apart.

- 148 And sumdel sadde up doo it in a colde  
 Place, outhere derk, and after under presse  
 Constreyne it efte, and salt about it folde,  
 So sadder yet saddest it compresse.  
 152 Whenne it is wel confourmed to sadnesse  
 On fleykes legge hem ichoone so from other,  
 That nere a suster touche nere a brother.

## 23.

Shut them up in a close place out of the wind. A cheese should not be dry, nor full of holes caused by too much sun, or salt, or too little pressure.

- But ther the place is cloos is hem to enclude,  
 156 And holde oute wynde although he rowne or crie,  
 So wol thaire fattenesse and teneritude  
 With hem be stille ; and yf a chees is drie,  
 Hit is a vyce, and so is many an eye  
 160 Yf it see with, that cometh yf sonnyng brendde,  
 Or moche of salt, or lite of presse, it shende.

<sup>1</sup> caseum.<sup>2</sup> elige.<sup>3</sup> pelliculam.<sup>4</sup> undique.

24.

- An other in fresshe mylk to make of chese  
 Pynutttes grene ystamped wol he doo ;  
 164 An other wol have tyme a man to brese  
 And clensted often juce of it doo to  
 To tourne it with ; to savor so ór soo ;  
 It may be made with puttyng to pigment,  
 168 Or piper, or sum other condyment.

Others press  
 pine-nuts, or add  
 the juce of  
 bruised thyme.  
 Flavour with a  
 condiment of  
 pepper or any  
 pigment.

*De examinibus apium augmentatis.*

25.

- Of been the swarmes nowe begynne encrease,  
 Nowe in the hony combe is bredde the bee.  
 The greet birdde and kynges doutelees  
 172 Men sayen thai been, but Greekes sayne thai be  
 Clept œstros, and goode is hem to slee,  
 For thai the swarme unresteth, so thai crie.  
 Nowe as is taught yit slee the butterflie.

The swarms of  
 bees increase.  
 The Greeks call  
 the king-bee  
 ὄστρος.

*De pavimentis in solaris faciendis.*

26.

- 176 Atte Mayés ende a solar is to pave,  
 And rather not, lest frostes it enfecte.  
 A double cours of boording first it have,  
 Oon transversal, another cours directe.  
 180 With chaf or ferne this bordes do be tecte,  
 And therupon doo stones handfull grete,  
 And wel foote-tempred mortar theron trete.

At the end of  
 May, not earlier,  
 have summer-  
 houses.

27.

- Thenne with a barre inbete it, batte it ofte,  
 184 And playne it rough, but are it fully drie,  
 Brik bipedal chaneled bryng on lofte,  
 This floore that be suffisyng forto wrie.  
 The chanel fnynger grete thou most espie.  
 188 On evry half this bryk twoo feet of brede,  
 That lyme and oil the joint togeder lede.

Beat it in with  
 a bar, but before  
 it is dry bring  
 channeled bricks  
 to cover all the  
 floor.

## 28.

This cement, brick, stones and clay, dry into one substance. Pour on it a testaceous cement, and it is no harm to flap (or slap?) it with rods.

- This scyment, bryk, stoon, cley togeder drie,  
 And knytte into oon til noon humoure be therin,  
 192 Nowe yote on that scyment clept testacye  
 Sex fynger thicke, and yerdes is noo synne  
 To all to flappe it with; now brode and thynne  
 Tilette<sup>1</sup> or tabulette<sup>2</sup> of marble stoon,  
 196 Empresse, and never shal this werk agoon.

*De lateribus faciendis.*

## 29.

Brick made in the heat dries too soon, and is likely to crack. When formed let the sun sweat out the moisture.

- Now brik is maade of white erthe, or rubrike,  
 Or cley, for that is made in somer heete  
 To sone is drie, an forto chyne is like.  
 200 Thus make hem : sifted erthe and chaf to trete  
 And tempre longe, and fourmed sonne oute swete  
 The humour, tourne hem ; two feet [longe] every brik  
 Be, and oon foote brode IIII ynches thicke.

*De Rosato XIII ca<sup>m</sup>. de oleo liliacio XIII ca<sup>m</sup>.*

## 30.

Put five pounds of rose into six sextarii of wine.

- 204 In sestres sex of olde wyne purged rose  
 Three daies first v pounce is to doo,  
 The xxxth day x pounce hony dispose  
 In it wel scommed first, and use it soo.  
 208 Take x pounce oil, x lilies therto  
 Be doo, and XL dayes sette it ther oute<sup>3</sup>  
 In glasse,<sup>4</sup> and made it is noo longer doute.

*De oleo roseo xv ca<sup>m</sup>. de rodomelle xvi ca<sup>m</sup>.*

## 31.

Hulle de rose is made of a pound of oil to an ounce of roses. Rodomel is a pound of honey to a sextarius of rose-water.

- In every pounce of oil an unce of rose  
 212 Ypurged putte, and hange it dayes seven  
 In sonne and moone, and after oilderose  
 We may baptize and name it, cordyng even.  
 And XL dayes to beholde on heven  
 216 In juce of rose a sester that weel smelle  
 A pounce hony and name it rodomelle.

<sup>1</sup> tessellas.<sup>2</sup> tabellas.<sup>3</sup> sub divo.<sup>4</sup> in vitro.

*De rosis viridibus servandis,*

32.

- That roses that begynneth forto unclose  
 And cleve a reede that stont & groweth grene,  
 220 Doo thayme therin and let it on hem close  
 Thus til the list: hem wol this reede sustene.  
 Other condite hem kepe in pottes clene  
 With pik munyte and couchyng theroute alway.  
 224 August in houres cordyng is with May.

Place roses not yet open in a reed whichstands green, and close them in it as you like, or keep them out of doors protected in clean pots.

*De horis Maii and Augusti.*

33.

- Half prime hath xxiii feet, and pryme  
 Hath xiiii, and half undron hath but ix,  
 High undron vi, and iiii hath mydday tyme,  
 228 And noon hath iii. Nowe Phebus wol declayne  
 Tort occident, and lenger lemes<sup>1</sup> shyne.  
 Thyne afternoone to thi fornoone confourme  
 In feet from houre til hour, as is the fourme.

Half-prime, *i.e.* 6 o'clock = 23ft.  
 Prime, *i.e.* 7 o'clock = 7 = 13 ft.  
 Half-undern, *i.e.* 9 o'clock = 9ft.  
 And undern, *i.e.* 10 o'clock = 6ft.

*Finis vi<sup>ti</sup> libri, et prefacio ad septimum.*

34.

- 232 So May is ronne away in litel space.  
 The tonge is shortte, and longe is his sentence.  
 Forth<sup>2</sup> ride I see my gide, and him I trace  
 As he as swyfte to be yit I dispence.  
 236 O sone of God alloone, O sapience,  
 O hope, of synnes drop or gile immuyn,  
 Lovyng I to The syng as my science  
 Can doo; and forth I goo to werk atte Juyn.

Translator's epilogue to Book 6, and preface to Book 7.

<sup>1</sup> bemes.<sup>2</sup> forride.

# JUYN.

## BOOK THE SEVENTH.

### *De area ad triturationem paranda.*

1.

Make a smooth threshing-floor, and harden against ants and mice.

- At Juyn a floore for thrashing thus thai make :  
Thai pare it first, and lightly after gete  
Hit dolven smal, and chaf therto thay take,  
4 Oildregges fresshe thai tempre with, and trete  
It even playne abroode. This helpeth whete  
From Auntes and fro myse. Nowe pibble stonys  
Thay bete in, and other that cordyng stone is.

2.

Then let it dry in the sun. Another way is to clean the floor and wet it well, and turn in small animals to tread it down.

- 8 And after suffer thay the sonne it drie.  
And this is oone. Another way is fonde,  
As first the floor to clensse, and after strie  
Hit all with weete, and so wel weet the londe,  
12 Doo beestes smale in hit to stere and stonde,  
And make hem route aboute, and trede, and strayne  
It wel, and so to drie it they complayne.

### *De messibus.*

3.

Barley is to be harvested before the ear break. A good reaper can get five strikes a day. The corn swells if left to lie loose.

- Now gynneth barley ripe, and is to anende,<sup>1</sup>  
16 Er the eere<sup>2</sup> to breke and shede it ; for as whete  
It is not cladde nor cloked syde & ende.  
Oon daywerk of a goode repman may gete  
V strik, a febbler for III may swete.  
20 And that the corn may grete upon the grounde  
Thay sayen is goode to let it lye unbounde.

<sup>1</sup> consumanda.

<sup>2</sup> spica.

## 4.

- This moones ende in places nygh the see  
 And hot & drie is gonnen repyng whete.  
 24 But first, yf it be ripe, is forto see  
 Yf alle the lande atte ones rody grete  
 Enclyne & thonke unlaced so for hete.  
 - The playner parte of ffrauce a crafte hath fonde  
 28 To repe in litel space a worlde of londe.

At the end of the month wheat-harvest begins. See if it be ripe by seeing if the whole field grows red at the same time.

## 5.

- Oon oxes werk alle hervest up shall take  
 With litel mannes help, and in this wyse :  
 A squared carre on wheles two thay make,  
 32 And borde it bredyng up of certayne sise,  
 That tort the brynk it brede alway & rise.  
 His chaule aforne that shal ete up the whete  
 Ys not right high, but so of even mete.

In the plain country of France they make a square cart on two wheels, boarded so as to be broader towards the top. Its jaw (front-board) is not to be high.

## 6.

- 36 That towe<sup>1</sup> is toothed thicke as the mesure  
 Of erees<sup>2</sup> wol not passe hem, upwarde bende.  
 And bakward beth twey thilles made full sure,  
 As forwarde hath a drey, and in that ende  
 40 An meke oxe that wol drawe & stonde & wende  
 Wel yoked be, and forwarde make it fare.  
 And every corne<sup>3</sup> wol start into this chare.<sup>4</sup>

That apparatus is to be toothed so close that the ears will not pass, bending upwards. It has two shafts behind as a dray has before. Yoke to it a quiet ox, and every corn will fall into it.

## 7.

- This teeth wol bite hem so that beth bifornys  
 44 And fere hem in, the drover<sup>5</sup> aye in kynde  
 Doo list & lethe as lowe & high the corne is,  
 That shall trippe in, the chaf fletyng behynde.  
 Thus shall an oxe in dayes few upwynde  
 48 An hervest alle; this carre is thus to carie  
 In feeld lande playne, ther chaf nys necessarie.

These teeth force in the ears in front. The drover will regulate the height. This cart is for plain lands, where chaff is not wanted.

<sup>1</sup> tabula anterior.<sup>2</sup> spicarum.<sup>3</sup> man.<sup>4</sup> vehiculum.<sup>5</sup> bubulco.



*De agris proscindendis, vineis occandis, &c.*

## 8.

Things omitted in May to be done now, viz., plough cold grass land, cover the roots of vines, gather rough vetches, and cut fimgreek for fodder. Where land is cold, now hold harvest of pulse.

- In coldest lande thing lefte undoon in May<sup>1</sup>  
 May now be doon, as feeldes me may plowe.  
 52 In grassy<sup>2</sup> cold lande vynes rootes may<sup>3</sup>  
 Eke nowe be wrie, eke now the fittches<sup>4</sup> rowe<sup>5</sup>  
 Collect may be, and fayngreek downe to rowe<sup>6</sup>  
 For fodder<sup>7</sup> now is tyme; and every puls,<sup>8</sup>  
 56 There lande is cold, is hervest nowe to huls.

## 9.

Mix pottage-lentils in ashes in oil-barrels, or salt-tubs: they are safe laid by strongly plastered. Beans plucked early kept in a cool place will be free from grubs.

- Nowe potageware in askes mynge & kepe  
 In oilbarelles or salt tubbes doone,  
 Sadde cleyed well thai save beth leide to slepe.  
 60 Nowe benes, in decresyng of the moone,  
 Er day and er she ryse, unplucked soone,  
 Made clene, and sette up wel refrigerate,  
 From grobbes<sup>9</sup> save wol kepe up thaire estate.

## 10.

Collect lupine, and if you will, you may sow it at once in a dry place.

- 64 Lupine also collecte is in this moone,  
 And yf me wolle, anoon it may be sowe,  
 Right from the floor as fast as it is doone.  
 But ferre away from humour it bestowe,  
 68 In that garnar that stont not over lowe,  
 To keep hem longe, and rathest yf the smeke<sup>10</sup>  
 Perpetual uppon thaire dwellyng reke.

*De diversis herbis serendis.*

## 11.

Sow cabbage at the solstice, and plant it out in the beginning of August. Beet, radish, lettuce, and coriander are now to be sown.

- Brasik is sowe atte stondyng of the Sonne,  
 72 And atte the hede of Aust it is to plaunte  
 In landes weet, or elles rayne beronne.  
 And ache also is sowen come denaunt,  
 Bete and radisshe exerciseth thair haunt;  
 76 Letuce and coriander, yf me wete  
 Her lande, up groweth nowe this herbes sete<sup>11</sup> (=sweete).

<sup>1</sup> Maio.    <sup>2</sup> herbosa.    <sup>3</sup> possint.    <sup>4</sup> vicia.    <sup>5</sup> rugosa.    <sup>6</sup> resecare.  
<sup>7</sup> pabulo.    <sup>8</sup> legumina.    <sup>9</sup> gurgulionibus.    <sup>10</sup> fumus.    <sup>11</sup> salubres.

*De pomis et flore punici, &c.*

## 12.

- Yit may the pomgarnates floure enclude  
 An erthen potte, as twye is taught beforne,  
 80 To make a pome of mighty magnitude.  
 Nowe peres and meles<sup>1</sup> over thicke ar torne  
 Away the vicious, lest juce ylorne  
 On hem sholde be that gentil fruyt myght spende.  
 84 Nowe ꝑꝑhus in colde lande wol ascende.

A pomegranate enclosed in an earthen pot will bear large fruit. Pears and apples being overthick, the defective are taken away, lest the sap should be lost upon them.

## 13.

- The figtree, as forsaith his discyplyne,  
 This moone in season is to caprifie.  
 Nowe have I wist men graffe hem VIII or IX<sup>ne</sup>.  
 88 Now peche in places colde is putte in theye.<sup>2</sup>  
 The plannte of palm men umbydelvyng hie.  
 In Juyl and nowe solempne insicion  
 Hath treen, that men calle emplastracioun.

Now caprifly the fig-tree. I have known several graffit. Peaches are now inoculated, and men dig round the palm. Trees are now to have emplastration.

## 14.

- 92 Emplasturyng accordeth with the tree  
 That hath a juce of fattenesse in the rynde,  
 As figge, olyve, and other suche be.  
 Eke Marcial saith peche is of that kynde.  
 96 Thus it is doon, as we in bookes fynde :  
 Of fairest treen loke uppe the brannches clere  
 That fertilest and fresshest yonge appere.

It accordis best with a tree that has a thicke juce in the rind. Look up the branches of the young trees that appear most fertile and fresh.

## 15.

- Under the fresshest gemme alle subtilly,  
 100 That gemme unhurt, with yron reyse a rynde.  
 The tree that shall emplastred be therby  
 Take of the gemme, and bark, and therto bynde  
 This gemme unhurt, and so in bondes wynde  
 104 Hit softe his gemme above alle that excede,  
 Oon gemme as for another so succede.

Under the freshest bud raise the rind with a knife, without hurting the bud. Take off the bud and bark of the tree to be emplastred, and bind on to it this unhurt bud, that one may take the place of the other.

<sup>1</sup> mela.<sup>2</sup> inoculatur.

## 16.

Place dung on  
and around, and  
lop off the upper  
branches, and  
leave it twenty  
days.

- Doo donnge upon and umbe on evry syde  
And bynde it to ; the bowes of that tree  
108 That higher beth, let hewe of or devyde  
Away, and dayes xx<sup>ti</sup> let it be.  
Unbynde it thenne, and there expertly se  
How oon tree is in til an other ronne.  
112 Thus better fruyte of bitter fruyte is wonne.

*De vitulis castrandis : de casio ; & omni tonsura.*

## 17.

Care necessary in  
treating calves.  
Now is time to  
make cheese and  
shear sheep.

- Eke in this moone is made castracioun  
Of calves, as is taught a lite aforne.  
Therynne is subtil operacioun  
116 In memory wel worthi to be born,  
And crafte to make cheses be not lorn,  
But used nowe ; and nowe in places colde  
Solempnitee of sheryng sheepes is holde.

*De Apibus, cera, melle, &c.*

## 18.

An indication  
that the hives  
are full is a low  
murmuring of  
the bees. If the  
hives are empty,  
there is more  
noise.

- 120 And in this moone is eke castracion  
Of hyves ronke of hony fild, the some<sup>1</sup>  
Wherof is this significacion :  
All subtilly & smale if that thai summe,<sup>2</sup>  
124 All hugely & harke yf that thai humme,  
As houses holgh thaire voices multiplice,—(sic !)  
A signe is that her combes beth full done.

\* \* \* \* \*

[Here several pages are lost.]

\* \* \* \* \*

<sup>1</sup> summa.

<sup>2</sup> numerent.

19.

- Thus siste it that the graynes stille abide  
 128 Inwithe the syve, and floures downe to shake ;  
 This floures smale into hony swetest slide  
 And therof xxx<sup>ti</sup> dayes let hem take  
 Ynough, and thenne uptemperyng forsake  
 132 No man for hem to make into thaire kynde ;  
 As of rosate is taught, yf ye have mynde.<sup>1</sup>

Let the grains remain in the sieve, the flowers pass through, and lie in honey thirty days, and then let no man fail to make them in their kind.

*De Alsica.*

20.

- Alsike is made with barly, half mature  
 A party grene and uppon repes bounde  
 136 And in an oven<sup>2</sup> ybake and made to endure  
 That lightly on a querne<sup>3</sup> it may be grounde.  
 Nowe til a strike a litel salt infounde  
 As it is grounde, and kepe it therin boote is.  
 140 This Juyn and Juyl accorde in houres footes.

Alica is made of unripe barley, bound in sheaves and roasted in an oven until hard enough to grind in a mill.

*De horis.*

21.

- Half pryme on xx<sup>ti</sup> feet ; hole pryme  
 On xii ; half undern viii ; hool undern v ;  
 Mydday on iiii ; and noon on ii feet by me  
 144 Stont fast ynough. Now Phebus chaise upthrive  
 No lenger may til the occident asblyve  
 Enclyneth it and erst from the Est it wried.  
 Forthy beth feet with houres multiplied.

Half-prime is the first hour of the Roman day, whole prime the 2nd. Half undern the 3rd, whole undern the 4th.

*Deo gracias.*

22.

- Nowe Juyn is doo. Salus, blisse, umne, honoure,  
 Joy, jubile, power, and diademe,  
 Jesu, be to the, Jesse, the roote's floure,  
 In mageste that is<sup>4</sup> to sit and deme,  
 152 He<sup>5</sup> to us se that in that houre extreme  
 That<sup>6</sup> prison, helle, all cloose from us be loken,  
 And with Him we dwellyng. Yet must I yeme  
 This book, and telle at Juyl of lande up broken.

Translator's epilogue.

<sup>1</sup> This stanza treats of the making of *ananthe* from the flowers and grapes of the wild vine.      <sup>2</sup> furno.      <sup>3</sup> mola.      <sup>4</sup> art.      <sup>5</sup> So.      <sup>6</sup> Thi.

# JUYLL.

## BOOK THE EIGHTH.

### *De iterandis agris, de messibus triticea, &c.*

#### 1.

Plough again early. Time to finish wheat-harvest, and clear fields of bushes, and grub up stocks.

- Atte Juyll the lande up broken in Aprile  
Is efte to plowe, and sone is best his season.  
Whete hervest nowe in tempre lande is while  
4 Forto conclude; and by the forsaide reason  
Nowe make the felde wide of busshes geson.  
Nowe stocke upp grobbe and tree in wanyng moone,  
Thaire rootes eke to brenne is now to done.

#### 2.

Now the corn is away, cut down the trees that were amongst it. Before the dog-days, take up fern and sedge.

- 8 Nowe treen that have amongst the cornes growe,  
The corne awaye, adowne it is to caste.<sup>1</sup>  
Oon daies werk may xx<sup>ti</sup> overthrowe:  
Nowe vynes yonge ydolven first and laste  
12 Wolde be; but not in hete, and poudre<sup>2</sup> caste.  
Er the caniculere the hounde ascende  
Have uppe the fern and segges to be brenned.

### *De orti seminibus serendis.*

#### 3.

Sow onions, radish, orage, and basilicon. Water lettuce, beet, and mal-lows. Sow turnips in wet, loose land: they delight also in fields.

- Smale onyons nowe beth sowe in places colde  
16 And wete, eke radisshe & orage, yf ye  
May watter it, basilicon wol holde,  
Lettuce & malves, betes, lekes be  
To watter nowe; the neep in weet lande we  
20 Nowe sowe and rape, in roten lande rare  
In weet lande and in felde gladde thai are.

<sup>1</sup> proscindere.

<sup>2</sup> pulycratie.

## 4.

- But nepes loveth heldes<sup>1</sup> sondy drie  
 And thynne, eke of the landes propruttee  
 24 Er either seede of other multiplie  
 A wonder thing a man may often see :  
 Two yere if neep in some lande sowen be  
 It wol be rape, and rape in sum land sowe  
 28 Wol ther ayenne uppe into neepes growe.

Turnips love sandy slopes. In some lands rape changes into turnip, and vice versâ.

## 5.

- Depe donnged lande yturned wel thai love :  
 That pleseth hem & cornes that ther growe.  
 An acre lande IIII sester rape above  
 32 And v of neep is suffisant to sowe.  
 For over thicke it is not hem to strowe.  
 And yf thai be to thicke away thou trete  
 A part, and so that other wol be grete.

Upon an acre of land sow four sextarii of rape, five of turnip. If they are too thick, remove part, and the others will be the larger.

## 6.

- 36 And forto have the rapes seedes greet  
 Let pulle first the rape oute of the grounde.  
 The foiles are of it awaie to geet,  
 A mydde his caule at half a fynger rounde  
 40 Let smyte him of, and plante hem forto abounde  
 VIII fynger fro : thus wol thai growe in longe  
 And, as I wene, her seedes sholde be stronge.

To have great rape seeds, remove the leaves at the thickness of half a finger, and plant at eight fingers' distance.

*De implastracione.*

## 7.

- Solempnyte hath emplastracion,  
 44 Wherof beforne is taught the diligence.  
 Nowe have I made inoculacion  
 Of pere and appultree : the experience  
 Hath preved wel. Of wynter fruite science  
 48 Yet leseth<sup>2</sup> oute the smale unto the greet  
 So that the tree may sende her drinke & meet.

Emplastering is now solemnized, and inoculation of pears and apples. Science now selects the small winter fruit and takes them away, that the tree may nourish the larger.

<sup>1</sup> devexa.<sup>2</sup> eligit.



## 8.

I have planted  
citrons now to  
great advantage.  
Now inoculate  
the fig. Graft  
citrons and dig  
about palms in  
the middle of  
the month.  
Gather almonds  
early.

- Now plannted I scions<sup>1</sup> of citurtree  
In colde and weete, and wattré it so longe  
52 That forth thai come in greet felicitee.  
The figtree nowe to encye<sup>2</sup> it is noo wronge.  
In weet lande citur graffed wol be spronge,  
And palmes delve aboute amydde this moone.  
56 Almondes ripeth nowe : go gete hem sone.

*De armentis & gregibus admittendis.*

## 9.

Time for cows to  
breed, that their  
ten months may  
end in spring.  
If they are too  
fat, they do not  
breed so well.

- Nowe shal the bulle his Wyfes to him take,  
And fille her wombe, in monethes x to anende  
Thaire tyme of birth at veer ; for now thai wake  
60 All fresshe, for veer thair Venus bronde hath tende.  
XV of hem oon male is forto ascende,  
As telleth Columelle, and wol contente.  
Yit yf thai be to fatte her werth is shente.

## 10.

Where fodder is  
abundant the  
cow may breed  
oftener.  
Moderate food is  
beneficial. If  
they are put to  
the plough they  
may breed alter-  
nate years.

- 64 In places ther is fodder abondance,  
The ky may otherwhiles be withdrawe.  
Mete in mesure her calvyng wol advance.  
Eke in the plough perchaunce yf thai shal drawe  
68 Itche other yere thai may go to by lawe.  
And so shal thai for either werk endure,  
That is to saye, in laboure & feture.

## 11.

The tups should  
have white  
tongues. If they  
are spotty the  
lambs will be so  
too. From white  
sometimes other  
colours spring,  
but not from  
black.

- Nowe putte amonge the shepe thaire tuppes white  
72 Not onoly woolled, but also thair tonge ;  
Yf it be spotty that a man may wite  
If he begets him spotty lambes yonge.  
Yit sumtyme of the white are other spronge.  
76 But Columelle, he saithe, of tuppes blake  
White sheep Nature is never wonte to make.

<sup>1</sup> taleas.<sup>2</sup> inoculare.

## 12.

- The tuppe is chosen faire of altitude,  
 Ywombed side, and tecte in whittest woolle,<sup>1</sup>  
 80 A besom tail holdyng his longitude,  
 Yfronted large, and stoned atte the fulle.  
 From youthe until viii yerres olde thei wole<sup>2</sup>  
 Wel do this crafte, and she from yerres tweyne  
 84 V yere is goode, and then is she bareyne.

The tup should be tall, broad-bellied, and covered with white wool, with a long tail and large forehead. He answers until eight years, the ewe till five.

## 13.

- Yboned large, eke long & softest flesys.  
 And thai that wide wooly wombed be ;  
 Such ewes to the tuppess oute to chese is.  
 88 Of pasturing thai must have ubertee  
 Fro breres ferre ; for thaire iniquitee  
 This seely innocentes wol unclothe,  
 And wellesay to tere her skynnes bothe.

Ewes should have large bones and long soft fleeces. Their pasture should be rich, and free from briars, which would unclothe the silly innocents, and also tear their skin.

## 14.

- 92 Nowe let hem doo, by wynter to be stronge.  
 Males to make, as saithe the Philosopher,  
 Septemtrion pastures let hem fonge,  
 And towarde that wynde if the tuppess ofre<sup>3</sup>  
 96 With litel males filleth thai the coffre ;<sup>4</sup>  
 And towarde Southwynde geteth thay femalys.  
 Yf it be sooth, right notable this tale is.

The lambs should be strong before winter. Aristotle says males are born in northern pastures, females in southern.

## 15.

- aut v. v. v. v. v.*  
 In heruest putte a way thi feble shepe  
 100 As thus thai may be solde, or elles spende.  
 A coitu twey monethes summer keepe  
 Her raam until Cupido be wele to ende.  
 And sumen lette hem alle the yere ascende.  
 104 And instinct so dayes shortte & longge,  
 Ther shal not lacke hem tender lambes yonge.

Sell or use feeble sheep in autumn. Some men let their sheep breed at any time of the year.

<sup>1</sup> lana.<sup>2</sup> volunt.<sup>3</sup> v profre.<sup>4</sup> ventrem v. matrem.

*De extirpando gramine.*

16.

When the Sun is in Cancer, and the Moon six days old in Capricorn, grass pulled up will not grow again, nor if removed with a cypress fork, or tools, sprinkled with goats' blood.

- Nowe with the Crabbe inhabityng the Sonne,  
The moone of vi in Capricorn ysette,  
108 Yf gresse ypuled uppe be the lande is wonne.  
Eke cipur tonges<sup>1</sup> with gootes bloode wette  
And toles from the furneys if me sette  
By sprent with gootes bloode, the grasses rowe  
112 With thees if me fordoe, thai shall not growe.

*De Vino scillite.*

17.

To make squill-wine, dry mountain, or sea squills, as soon as the dog-star rises, far away from the Sun; put a pound into a jar of wine.

- And vyne squyllitee is thus made in this moone :  
The montayne squylle, other of nygh the See  
As riseth the Canyculers as sone  
116 Wol ferre away fro sonne ydried be.  
A stene of wyne a poundes quantitee  
Of hem receyve, alle leves superflu  
Ikiste away, and thai that paled greu.

18.

Others let the leaves hang over the wine, but not dip into it too deep. It is good for coughs, and pains of the stomach, phlegm, and spleen, digestion, and eyesight.

- 120 And other garlande hem, and so depende,  
Into the wyne so thai go not to depe,  
And take hem oute atte xl dayes ende.  
This wyne is goode the cough<sup>2</sup> away to kepe ;  
124 Alle ille oute of the wombe it maketh kreppe ;  
It solveth flevme, and helpeth splenetyk ;  
Digestion it maketh, and een quyk.

*De Idromelle.*

19.

To make mead, put one sextarius of unscummed honey into six of clear water, and let naked boys shake it for five hours in boilers, and then let it stand forty days.

- For meth in risyng of Caniculer  
128 A sester of unscomed hony doo  
In sesters vi of well water cler  
In carenayres naked<sup>3</sup> children goo  
And glocke it oures v to & froo  
132 Vessel and all, and after in the Sonne  
With xxxx daies standyng it is wonne.

<sup>1</sup> ciprei bidentes.<sup>2</sup> tussim.<sup>3</sup> investes.

*De aceto squillino.*

20.

- And in this moone is made Aisel squillyne :  
 Of squylles white alle rawe take of the hardes,  
 136 And al the rynde is for this nothing fyne,  
 Then onoly take the tender myddelwardes  
 In sesters XII of aisel that soure harde is.  
 A pounce & unces VI yshrad be doo  
 140 And XL dayes sonnyng stonde it soo.

To make squill-  
vinegar, take off  
the shells and  
rind, and put the  
middle part only  
into twelve sex-  
tarii of vinegar.  
Shred one pound  
six ounces, and  
let it stand forty  
days in the Sun :

21.

- After this XL daies cloos in sonne  
 Cast oute squylle, and clense it feetly wel,  
 And into vessel pitched be it ronne.  
 144 An other xxx<sup>ti</sup> galons of aisel  
 With dragmes VIII of squylle in oon vessel,  
 Pepur an unce, of case and mynte a smal<sup>1</sup>  
 Wol do, and use in tyme as medicinal.

then cast out the  
squills and strain  
carefully into a  
closed vessel.  
Or, thirty gallons  
of vinegar with  
eight drachms of  
squills, an ounce  
of pepper, and a  
little casia and  
mint.

*De sinapi.*

22.

- 148 A sester and a semycicle take  
 Of senvey seede, and grynde it pouder small,  
 V pounce of hony theruppon thou slake,  
 Of Spannysh oile a pounce do therwithall.  
 152 A sester of fyne aisel tempur shall  
 This thinges ; groundon well thus use it longe.  
 This Juyl and Juyn have houres even longe.

Grind a pint and  
a half of mustard  
seed, mix five  
pounds of honey,  
one pound of  
Spanish oil, and  
a pint of vinegar.

*De horis.*

23.

- Oon gooth of XXII with XI,  
 156 And II with X on XII feet goth blyve.  
 Eke III with IX on VIII extendeth even,  
 And IIII as VIII abregged is to V.  
 To V & VII levethe III alyve.  
 160 And manly VI in myddes of the day  
 Stonde forth an houre, and uppon feet but tway.

The length of  
the hours in  
July.

<sup>1</sup> aliquantum.

*Finis VIII libri. Præfacio in novem librum.*

Translator's  
epilogue. The  
latter part unin-  
telligible.

This Juyl is doon. August I must begynne  
 O tryne and oon, God Lorde, recorde I the  
 164 That sensis spille or pointe disjoynt be thereynne  
 Is not my wille ; and yet in it is she  
 Myne ignoraunce. And whi not I but he  
 That she myschaunce he pricke or nycke it ther  
 168 Thi p'uce, mene as mene or nought it be  
 He rynce if Aust be faust nygh September.

# AUGUST.

## BOOK THE NINTH.

### 1.

- Nygh September kalende atte Austes ende,  
Ther feeldes playne, humyde, and lene be,  
To gynne plowe is goode to condescende.  
4 And also nowe in coostes of the See  
Vyndage araied [arayed] fore is forto se.  
In places eke ther it is passyng colde  
The vynes unwried be fayne wolde.

*De exili & misera vinea.*

### 2.

- 8 In Aust eke if the vyne yerde be lene,  
And she, thi vyne, a ruthful thing to se,  
Thre strik or III of lupynes demene  
On iche acre. So let it wrion be.  
12 Whenne it is uppe and hath fertilitee,  
Turne it efte in, it doungeth best the vynes.  
All other dounge is infectif of wynes.

*De pampinandis & obumbrandis vitibus.*

### 3.

- Nowe ther is colde is pampinacion  
16 To overtake a thicke yleved vyne ;  
And ther is hoothe is ocupacion  
The fervent yre<sup>1</sup> of Phebus to declyne  
With obumbracion, if so benygne  
20 And longly be the vyne, is not to werne.<sup>2</sup>  
Eke nowe is goode to pulle up segge & ferne.

Plough at the beginning of September, prepare vineyards, and in cold places the vines would fain be covered.

[N.B.—In verse 5 both forms are in the MS., and in verse 7 “unwried” is written instead of *unwried*.]

The best manure for a poor vine is lupine, three or four strikes to an acre. Let it be covered.

Prune thick-leaved vines, and, where it is hot, do not forbid to shade a luxuriant vine. Pull up sedge and fern.

<sup>1</sup> hete.

<sup>2</sup> vetare.



*De urendis pascuis.*

## 4.

Burn the land to destroy bushes and their stock. If the land is covered with dry plants, burn them, and they will grow again more fresh.

- Pastures eke in this moone is to brenne  
 That bussches, ther thai groweth over hie,  
 24 And besy beth the lande to over renne,  
 This brennyng may thaire stocke & hem destrie.  
 Eke if the lande be wrieded in herbes drie,  
 Nowe brenne hem uppe, and efte they wol arise  
 28 All glaad arayed newe in fresshest gise.

*De herbis in orto.*

## 5.

We have not to sow radish in ragstone or clay, but it loves a moist air.

- Nowe rape and neep in places drie is sowe,  
 As taught is erst, and radissh last this moone  
 Atte drie is sowe in Wynter forto growe,  
 32 In lande solute & fatte it groweth sone,  
 With ragston or with cley it naath to done,  
 But gladde is it to loke on dronkyn ayer,  
 In beddes brode & deepe it wol be faire.

## 6.

They grow best after a good rain. As soon as it is sown, cover it in. Two or four sextarii suffice for an acre. Dung makes them fungous or spongy: chaff is preferable.

- 36 In gravel best after a nobel rayne  
 Thai growe, and weete hem if thine ayer be drie,  
 Anoon as it is sowen, wrie it playne.  
 Two sester in oon acre is to strie;  
 40 And III, as other sayen, wol multiplie,  
 And chaf is better for hem thenne is donnge,  
 For thai therof wol be right fungous stronge.

## 7.

Salt-water makes them sweet. Be careful to have seed of the female radish. To have great plants, leave scarcely any leaves on them, and so let them grow.

- Saltwater hem: therof thai wol be swete.  
 44 Radissh female hath litel bitternesse,  
 With leves brode, & playne, glad, grene, & meete.  
 Thaire seede to have as do thi businesse.  
 And forto make hem wexon in greetnesse  
 48 Unneth on it a litel croppe me leve,  
 And sette it so to growe & gret to preve.

## 8.

- The swete of that is bitter forto make  
 Oon day & nyght the seede in hony stonde,  
 52 Outher in meth as longe tyme it take.  
 Rave, as brassik for vyne as ille is fonde.  
 Thai so discordeth that in oon poort londe  
 Wel may thai not ; forthi oon utter kepe.  
 56 Also this moone is sowing of pasnepe.

*De pomis VI ca<sup>m</sup>. de apibus VII ca<sup>m</sup>.*

## 9.

- Emplasturing eke in this moone is doo.  
 And sumen nowe wol graffe a perytree  
 And citurtree in places moist also.  
 60 Nowe sharnebodde encombreth the bee.  
 Pursue on him that slayne anon he be.  
 The werkes that in Juyl be lefte undoone  
 Nowe may thay take an ende in this Aust moone.

*De puteis faciendis.*

## 10.

- 64 Now seche and fynde up water in this wyse  
 Doune lene and lay thi chyn<sup>1</sup> righte to the grounde  
 Estwarde, and rather thenne the Sonne arise,  
 And where a subtil myst gynneth to abounde  
 68 In dewe upon, ther water may be founde  
 Ther pitche a mark, and on the lande take yeme<sup>2</sup>  
 Thayme goode or badde, faire or foule to deme.

To make them sweet let them stand a day and night in honey, or in mead. Rape and cabbage are so inimical to vines, that they would refuse to land in the same port : therefore keep them apart.

Some men now graft pears and citrons. Pursue and kill the sharnbod, or hornet, and do what was left undone in July.

Seek for water by leaning your chin to the ground before sun-rise. Pitch upon a mark, and take notice, and judge them good or bad.

## 11.

- The marl hath veynes thynne unsmellyng best ;  
 72 Selak sonde lymous & lene, unswete & depe ;  
 Blake erthe humour not moche hath in his chest  
 Of wynter shoures leide up forto kepe,  
 For swetly smylleth that lande : clayes wepe  
 76 Uncertainly, whoos teres beth right swete.  
 A man may be right gladde that hem may gete.

Marl has veins of bad smell ; loose sand has scanty and muddy water ; clays have an uncertain supply of sweet water.

<sup>1</sup> mentum.<sup>2</sup> considera.

## 12.

Strong gravel and stony land have a certain supply, and where the stone is red, there is abundance, but beware lest it escape through fissures. In flint is cold and wholesome water, in plains hard and tepid.

- Sadde sonde gravel, and there eke as beth stonys,  
 Certain humoure is and in ubertee.  
 80 Goode abundance is ther as rody stoon is.  
 But war: for thai thorough chenes<sup>1</sup> lightly flee.  
 Amonge flynt stoon atte hilles rootes be  
 Veynes ynowe, and chillyng colde & seete.  
 84 Ther felde hath salte and saad, luke & unsweete.

## 13.

A good flavour shows they spring from under a mountain; but there are cold springs in plains if the sun is kept off. Withy, reeds, alder, ivy, show there is water.

- And if thai savoure wel, thenne thay begynne  
 Under the mount, eke ere amonge ther be  
 Welles wel colde in playne ther shades twynne  
 88 The Sonne away. Yit signes moo men see  
 Ther water is, as the fertilittee  
 Of withi,<sup>2</sup> reede,<sup>3</sup> aller,<sup>4</sup> yvy, or vyne  
 That ther is water nygh is verrey signe.

## 14.

Where these grow, dig three feet, broad, and five deep, and put in the ground a vessel upside down. This hole, covered with a hurdle and mould, should remain so till the morrow.

- 92 Ther as thai growe, updelve in latitude  
 Thre foote, and deep v foote into the grounde,  
 And whenne the Sonne adowne gothe, ther enclude  
 Of leede or brasse a vessel clene ygrounde  
 96 Downwarde the mouthe, upwarde the bottom rounde,  
 This pitte ywrien with a fleyke and molde  
 Uppon so dwelle until the morowe sholde.

## 15.

Take away the hurdle, and if the vessel be damp or moist there is water. An unbaked earthen pot, if there is any water, will be softened.

- The next day the fleyke away thou plie,  
 100 And se yf this vessel withynne swete,  
 Or if the dropes therin multiplie,  
 Withoute doute ther wol be water gete.  
 A potters potte uneled<sup>5</sup> wol alete<sup>6</sup>  
 104 And yf it be leyde therynne the same wyse,  
 Yf any springe of water ther wol rise.

<sup>1</sup> rimas.<sup>2</sup> salicis.<sup>3</sup> arundo.<sup>4</sup> alnus.<sup>5</sup> non coctum.<sup>6</sup> resolutetur.

## 16.

- Ley ther a flees of woole in like maner,  
 Yf it conceyve of humoure in oon nyght  
 108 That we may wrynge oute of it water clere,  
 It is recorde of water : eke a light.  
 In oil by like maner therynne ydight,  
 Yf it be fonde yqueynte, ther is a veyne  
 112 Of water nygh ; the nedeth not complayne.

Or a fleece of wool, wringing wet, is a sign, or a lamp if extinguished.

## 17.

- Eke of a fier ther made if smooke ascende  
 Alle fatty, weet, & cloudy nebuloze,  
 To make a winche al sikour ther descende,  
 116 Forto thyne honde wol sprynge or springes ose.<sup>1</sup>  
 And springes feel into oon may be complose.<sup>2</sup>  
 In hilles feet towarde Septentrion  
 Good humour hath multiplicacion.

Or if you make a fire, and the smoke is fat and moist, sink a well with confidence, for springs will ooze, and many may unite in one.

*De puteis faciendis.*

## 18.

- 120 Goode is bewarre the wynches<sup>3</sup> whenne to delve,  
 For cley, alum, and brymston, otherwhile  
 Though brynkes stonde and wol not over whelwe,  
 Enfeteth the ayer, and delvers so begile,  
 124 That dede thay are inwith a litel while,  
 But if thay flee : for thi, or thai descende,  
 A light into the wynche may downe be sende.

Beware of clay, alum, and brimstone, which kill the delvers within a little while unless they fly ; therefore, ere they descend, let a light be sent down.

## 19.

- Yf it ne quenche, of perill is ther noon.  
 128 Hit quyncheth,—lo ! the place is pestilente.  
 An other way to this is to goone :  
 On either side a pitte must have descent  
 Until thi sought licoures librament.  
 132 And ever amonge into the wynche hem thorle,<sup>4</sup>  
 That wynde away the wicked ayer may hurle.

If it be not quenched there is no danger, and *vice versa*. Or dig a hole till the water escapes, and bore the well into it that the noxious air may evaporate.

<sup>1</sup> scature.<sup>2</sup> connexe.<sup>3</sup> puteos.<sup>4</sup> perfores.

## 20.

Make it eight feet wide and secure it with courses of wood, the walls being of ragstone or flint. A mixture of salt will correct muddiness.

- This doon, the sydes make up with structure,  
 And footes viii it hold in latitude.  
 136 With barres bigge is goode to make it sure ;  
 Or wall it well with ragge or flyntes rude.  
 In square or round this werk thai may conclude.  
 If water ther be lymous or efecte  
 140 Admyxtion of salt wol it correcte.

## 21.

If the brink keep falling in, board it up, and strengthen the boards with transverse planks, lest it close upon thy working men.

- And yf thi wynche in digging wol not stande,  
 But nowe and nowe be fallyng in the brynke,  
 Peraventure it is so slippyng lande.  
 144 Thenne an other crafte thou must be thinke :  
 Yf bordes holde it oute, it may not synke.  
 But thai must oute be borne with barres rude,  
 For doubte if it thi worching men conclude.

*De aqua probanda.*

## 22.

Sprinkle it on a clean brass vessel, and if it leave no spot you may maintain it to be good. If, when boiled in a brazen vessel, it leave no sediment at bottom, it is sound.

- 148 His water newe is goode a man to preve :  
 Let springe it on a brason vessel clene,  
 And yf noo signe of it on the brasse leve,  
 The droppes here & there appering sene,  
 152 That veyne is good prudently to sustene.  
 Decoct in brasse, yf gravel in the grount  
 Noone leve is preef that that licour is sount.

## 23.

Or if food soon boils in it; or if it be clear, without blemish. By piercing the mountain, we may bring a well that stands in high ground to a lower place.

- Yf mete in hit wol boile in litel while,  
 156 Yf it be cleer appering like the skye,  
 Withouten wem or signe of thinges vile.  
 The wynches eke that stonde in hilles hie  
 To lower stede as welles we may trie.  
 160 This must be doon by persyng the mountayne  
 The water so to lede into the playne.

*De aque ductibus.*

24.

- The water may be ledde by weies three.  
 In channels, or (in) condites of leede,  
 164 Or elles in trowes ymade of tree.  
 And first in a channel if it be led  
 In evry hundreth feet downe from the heed  
 A lite and lite a foote it must avale,  
 168 That it have myght so downe the clyf to hale.

Three ways of leading water, viz., channels, conduits, and wooden troughs. In channels it must sink gradually a foot in every 100 feet, that so it may have strength to run down the hill.

25.

- And if it happe an hille the water mete,  
 Let make a lone and through thi licour hale.  
 Or elles by the side aboute him trete.  
 172 And if it sholde affalle into the dale  
 With piles over that it must avale.  
 Or make an arche it over on to lede<sup>1</sup>  
 Or pipes it to conduyt me may lede.<sup>2</sup>

If a hill come in the way, make a lane and force the water through, or let it go round it. Carry it over a valley on piles, or arches, or leaden pipes.

26.

- 176 In condites descende into the slade  
 It may, and on that other side aryse.  
 But hoolsument and best is to have made  
 Trumpes of cley by potters in thaire gise,  
 180 And iche of hem ii finger thicke assise.  
 Oon ende ymade so streyne an other sprede,  
 That iche into other may an hondes brede.

It may descend into the valley in conduits, but wholesomest are clay tubes, one end being made so narrow, the other so wide, that each may go a hand's breadth into the other.

27.

- Oil-tempred lyme this joyntes shal scyment,  
 184 Thenne ysels<sup>3</sup> myxt with litel water renne  
 Thorough, deching alle this hoolsom instrument.  
 The water that goth thorough the leden penne<sup>4</sup>  
 Is rust-corrupte, unhoolsom; leve it thenne.  
 188 And if thi veyne of water be but poore,  
 The dwellyng-place of it be made the moore.

Cement the joints with lime and oil, or let ashes and water run through. Leaden pipes are unwholesome. Though the vein of water be poor, make a large receptacle.

<sup>1</sup> ducere.

<sup>2</sup> plumbare.

<sup>3</sup> favilla.

<sup>4</sup> condite.



*De mensuris & ponderibus fistularum.*

28.

1200 lbs. of lead  
suffice for 1000 ft.  
of pipes, and in  
proportion.

- The leed condite conteyneth this mesure :  
XII C pounde of metal shal suffice  
192 A thousand feet in lengthe of pipes sure.  
And so whether the lengthe avale or ryse  
The lesse or more of weght for it devise :  
As poundes few and footes fewe applie,  
196 So poundes moo to moo feet multiplie.

*De onfacio melle.*

29.

To make ompha-  
comel: take six  
pints of half-ripe  
grapes and two  
of honey well  
pounded, and  
leave it forty  
days under the  
beams of the sun.

- For comfit that is clept hony-onfake,  
Sex sester take of grapes juce half soure,  
Two sester hony mightily let brake,  
200 Or stampe, and putte it into this licoure.  
Thenne xl<sup>ti</sup> dayes stonde it every houre  
To boile under the bemes of the sonne,  
And after kepe it cloose, and it is wonne.

*De Horis.*

30.

Length of the  
hours in August.

- 204 This Aust and May in houres lengthe are oon.  
To xxiiii feet next either ende,  
And two next hem in feet xiiii goon,  
And other two to footes ix extende,  
208 And after two the next on vi ascende.  
Next after noone, and erst stonyng on iiii is,  
And none on iii stont up and myddel houre is.

*Finis noni libri, et prefacio in decimum librum.*

Translator's  
epilogue.

- Thus Aust is spende, O Lorde, alpha and ô,  
212 O endlesse ende, O gynnyngles gynnyng,  
To make aright until this booke be do  
So graunte myght and therwithall connyng,  
As myne entente is thyne honoure to spryng,  
216 And judgement; thi pryncis floure on clere  
Or cloudy derk or light he must uphinge.  
And I to werk am sette atte September.

# SEPTEMBER.

## BOOK THE TENTH.

### *De agris pinguibus tertiandis.*

#### 1.

- Atte September the fatte lande using longe,  
Homoure to keep is plowed, and so thrie  
It plowed is; the same eke is noo wronge  
4 Rather to doo yf season be not dric.  
The playne, humyde, & lene lande espie,  
In Aust saide of, nowe plowe it newe ayeine,  
And plowed, hoothe let kest on it his greyne.

Fat land accustomed to hold its moisture is now ploughed thrice. In a wet season it may be done earlier. Plain, humid, lean land, spoken of in August, is now ploughed again, and immediately planted.

#### 2.

- 8 The clyves<sup>1</sup> thynne are ereed nowe & sowe  
And nowe nygh equinox. Thi landes dounge,  
In hilles thicke, in feldes thynne it throwe.  
In wanyng of phebus be thai to flonge;  
12 So may it moost availe and do lest wronge.  
And for an acre lande, saithe Columelle,  
Carpentes xxiiii is to telle,

Light hills are ploughed and planted towards the equinox. Dung thickly in hills, thinly in plains, at the waning of the moon. Twenty-four carts of dung enough for an acre.

#### 3.

- For hilles so; for feldes take xviii.  
16 And every day as many is to sprede.  
And thou that day to plowe up may sustene,  
For drede lest the dounge uppe drie and dede.  
Alle winter me may dounge also for nede.  
20 Yf dounge in time on lande may not be throwe,  
Eke sowe it smal as seede whenne thou wilt sowe.

Dung and plough on the same day, lest the manure dry up. We may dung all the winter; but if it is not done at the right time, sow it like seed.

<sup>1</sup> clivi.

## 4.

Lay on dung  
little and often;  
more on wet  
land; marl may  
be spread instead  
on sandy land,  
or sand upon  
clay, for corn or  
vines. Dung  
will impair vines.

- At ones lite & ofte is goode to dounge,  
Weet lande wol more of it than wol the drie;  
24 For lacke of dounge in sondy lande be spronge  
Goode marl, and it wol make it multiplie;  
And uppon cley the sonde is goode to strie;  
That helpeth corne, and maketh vynes feire;  
28 For dounge in vynes wol the vynes peire.

*De serendo tritico & adoreo.*

## 5.

In moist, lean,  
cold, shady land,  
manage to sow  
ador (a sort of  
bread-corn) and  
wheat at the  
equinox in serene  
weather.

- This moone in lande uliginose or lene,  
And in the landes also that beth colde,  
In thicked lande also is to demene,  
32 Whenne day & nyght yliche longe is holde,  
Bothe odor (sic) and thi whete in lande to folde.  
Whenne ayer is faire, that thay may uppe be spronge,  
Er wynter come and wexe a partie stronge.

*De remedio humoris & de mensuris.*

## 6.

On salt land  
spread doves'  
dung and cypress  
leaves, and  
plough it in. Or  
let good water  
expel the bad.  
Four strikes  
enough for an  
acre.

- 36 Sum lande is wont salt humoure up to throwe  
That sleeth the corne. There douves dounge instrie,  
And leves of cupresse eke on it sowe,  
And eree it ynne. Or thus it remedie:  
40 This fals humour let goode water oute trie.  
In mene lande of ador or of whete,  
An acre lande to strikes IIII is mete.

## 7.

Clothe thy  
hopper (small  
square field) with  
a hyæna's skin,  
and let the seed  
stand therein a  
short time. In-  
sects, which de-  
stroy the seed,  
may be kept  
away with juice  
of sedum (house-  
leek).

- Thyne hopre cloth hienes skynne, and throwe  
44 Thi seede therin, and stonde it there a stounde,<sup>1</sup>  
And, as thai sayen, the better wol it growe.  
Yf bestes harme it that beth in the grounde,  
Let mynge juce of cedum smal ygrounde  
48 With water, and oon nyght thi seede ther stepe,  
And beestes wicke away thus may me kepe.

<sup>1</sup> tempore.

8.

- An other juce of wild cucumber useth,  
 And hath the roote ystamped of the same  
 52 With water mixt, and so his seede enfuseth.  
 Oil dregges fressh of sum *men* have the name  
 Of helping from thees beestes worthi blame,  
 Wherwith thaire landes liketh thai to enoynte  
 56 And bathe her plowes therin every joynt.

Others steep the seed in the juice of the wild cucumber, or the root pounded and mixed with water. Some anoint the land and their ploughs with oil-dreggs.

*De hordeo canterino.*

9.

- Nowe sowe in smal lande barly canteryne.  
 V strik an acre hath. Eke nowe or lite  
 Afore in every lande is kest lupyne.  
 60 But sowe it er the coldes angry bite.  
 It hateth slymy lande and marles white,  
 And aswel lene it loveth and rubrike.  
 To sowe oon acre sufficeth x strike.

Sow horse-barley before winter's cold in lean, red soil.

*De piso serendo & sisamo.*

10.

- 64 Late in this moone is pese ysowe in light  
 Lande and solute; in weet it liketh growe.  
 With strikes IIII an acre lande in dight.  
 Sysame in fatte soil and gravel is sowe,  
 68 Sex sester in oon acre lande is throwe.  
 Late in this moone is eke to breke uppe lande  
 Ther medica shall sowen be to stande.

Sow peas late in the month; four strikes to an acre. Sow also sesame in rich land or gravel, and break up land for clover.

*De vicia & Græco fæno & farragine serendis.*

11.

- Nowe first the fittche is sowen and feyne greek.  
 72 Oon acre served is with strikes VII;  
 Farrage in restyf lande ydounded eek  
 Is doone, x strike is for oon acre even,  
 And oute of moolde are colde eke must it heven.  
 76 Til May it wol suffice uppon to fede.  
 But lenger not thenne Marche if it shal sède.

Vetches and fen-greek require seven strikes to the acre. Farrage (matlin) to be sown in stiff land, and it must rise out of the mould ere cold weather. Unless it run to seed, it may be fed upon till May.

*De lupino serendo & evertendo.*

12.

It will improve  
poor land to sow  
lupine.

- Also take hede in this September moone,  
Where erthes are out of fecunditee  
80 And lene, and nygh this moones Idus sone,  
Lupyne into the landes sowen be.  
And whenne thay shewe uppe thaire fertilittee,  
So turne hem with the plough to putrifie ;  
84 And after that thi lande shal multiplie.

*De pratis novellis formandis.*

13.

Now form new  
meadows, if you  
like. Choose  
those that slope  
into a valley.  
Loose land, if  
watered, will  
bear grass.

- Nowe meedes newe enfourme, if that the like.  
Lande dewy fatte so lenyng sumdel playne  
In places like a valey, hem thou prike  
88 Where humour nys not longe nor to shor slayne.  
Alle other lande of meedes hath disdayne.  
Yit lande solute & lene, if it be softe,  
Wol bere gresse yf It be watered ofte.

14.

Time to root up  
trees and herbs,  
and plough and  
dung at the  
waning of the  
moon.

- 92 This tyme is to be stocked every tree  
Away with herbes brode, eke root and bough,  
And iche impediment oute taken be.  
Eke exercise it after with the plough  
96 Whenne it of erthe is resolute ynough,  
The cloddes broke and piked oute the stonys,  
Freshe douncing tyme in wanyng of the moone is.

15.

If cattle tread  
upon it, they will  
make it uneven.  
If moss overgrow  
it, shave it, and  
sow hay seeds ;  
and it will not be  
amiss to scatter  
ashes to slay the  
moss.

- For any thing noo beest upon it trede,  
100 Uneven it that wolde, it is to drede.  
And if olde moos thi medes over lede,  
Let shave it clene away in lengthe & brede ;  
The shaven grounde with sede of hay lete seede.  
104 Eke forto sle this moos is doone noo wronge  
Yf askes ofte aboute on it be spronge.

## 16.

- And if thi mede is drossy, barayne, olde,  
 Let plowe it efte and playne it efte doune lowe.  
 108 Eryng is goode for aged meedes holde.  
 The rape is sowe in hem, eke fitches throwe  
 Beth ther with hay seede, better forto growe.  
 Til it be harde unwattred must it be,  
 112 Lest alle the werk corrupte humydittee.

If the meadow is drossy and old, plough it again, and level it. Ploughing is good for old meadows. Humidity would spoil all the work.

*De vindemia celebranda.*

## 17.

- This moone in places warme & nygh the see  
 Vyndage is hugely to solempnyse ;  
 In places colde arayed fore is he.  
 116 The tonnes forto pitche is to devyse :  
 A tonne of two hundred congys suffise  
 With poundes XII of pitche, and more or lesse,  
 After the quantitee therof then gesse.

Preparations to be made for the coming vintage, e.g. pitch the casks, 12 lbs. of pitch, more or less, for each cask, according to the size.

## 18.

- 120 Sumen to xx<sup>ti</sup> pounce of pitche a pounce  
 Of wax wol doo, to ese it lest it lepe  
 In colde ; eke wyne to taste and smylle sounde  
 Fro bitter pitche also thi vynes kepe.<sup>1</sup>  
 124 Yf thay be browne and sum eke blake be.  
 That is a token of maturite.  
 Upon the grayne in grapes eke take kepe.<sup>2</sup>

Some men add 1lb. of wax to 20lbs. of pitch, lest it should split. Keep the vines from pitch. A brown and blackish colour is a sign of maturity. Pay attention to the grape-stones.

*De panico & milio metendis ac faseo serendo.*

## 19.

- Now in sum stede is panyk rope and mylde,  
 128 Fasele also is sowen nowe for mete.  
 Nowe gynnes forto take foules wilde  
 And other beestes, be thai smale or greet,  
 By nyght is wrought, and alle to hand ygete,  
 132 To exercise atte October kalende,  
 That joyneth right upon the Idus ende.

In some places panic and millet is now reaped, and phaselus sown. Gins for wild fowl prepared against October.

<sup>1</sup> custodias.<sup>2</sup> attendas.



*De papavere, brassica, timo, origano, &c.*

## 20.

Cheese-bowls (poppies) sown now alone or with other seed. If sown in land which has been burnt they will thrive best. Sow cabbages to plant out in November, for colewort in winter and spring.

- Chesbolles nowe beth sowe in hote & drie  
Allone or other seede with; and it sowe  
136 Ther as thing hath be brent, wol multiplie  
Best, as thay sayen; and nowe brasik to growe  
For November plauntynge in lande is throwe,  
Wherof in Wynter wortes me may have.  
140 And in Veer of the same croppes crave.

## 21.

Land, wanted in spring for planting, may now be dug three feet deep. Thyme will thrive from plant or seed. Sow origan at the equinox.

- Thi garth, in springing tyme to be sowe,  
Thre footes depe may nowe pastyned be;  
Atte wanyng moone is dounge in it to throwe.  
144 Nowe tyme, of plaunte or seede, utilitee  
Wol do, that loveth lene & nygh the see.  
Sowe origon whenne day and nyght is longe  
Yliche, and water it till it be spronge.

## 22.

Sow capers by themselves; for their juice is a foe to other plants: therefore let them not spread. They flourish in summer, and fade at the setting of the Vergilias (Pleiads).

- 148 Hit loveth dounge and sharped stony londe.  
Nowe cappares ysowen is also,  
That by it self is best to make stonde.  
Forwhi? hir juce is other herbes foo.  
152 So ditche him in that ferre he may not goo.  
In Somer tyme him liketh wel to glade;  
That when Virgiles downe gooth gynneth fade.

## 23.

Gith (or cockle), cresses, dill, radishes, parsnips, cærefolium, lettuce, beet, coriander, rape, and turnip are sown now.

- And gith is laste eke in this moone ysowe,  
156 Cresses and dele also in tempre lande,  
Or hote radisshe in drie also wol growe,  
Parsnepe and cerfoile also forth may stande  
Atte October kalendes kest with hande,  
160 Letuce, and bete, eke coriander seedys,  
Nowe rape and neep ysowen goode in dede is.

*De pomis scilicet de tuberibus.*

24.

- Nowe tuberes atte Octobre kalendes,  
 Or Feberyere, by cornels or slevyng,  
 164 The besinesse of setting ful wel spende is.  
 Whoos tender youthe applaudeth cherissinge.  
 With roote a plaunte up puld and sette wol sprynge,  
 Oxdounge ennoynte and cleyed in fatte londe  
 168 With seefroth upon shelles uppe wol fonde.

Sow tubers from kernels or cuttings. They require care at first. A plant pulled up with a root will grow. Anointed with ox-dung and clay, sea-weed and shells, it will mount up.

25.

- Thre greynes sume oute of an appul take,  
 And sonne ydried sette him III and III,  
 Oon springe nature of greynes III wol make,  
 172 That wette and dolven besily must be,  
 And oon yere olde hem plaunted is to se.  
 So wol thaire fruite be swete, in Janyveer  
 Graffe him in quynce, and eke in Feveryeer.

Some take apple-pips dried in the sun, and plant three together. Nature will make one to spring out of three grains. Grafted on quince after a year in January or February, they will bear sweet fruit.

26.

- 176 And graffe it best in plumme<sup>1</sup> and peretree  
 In Meles Calabrike, and with a rynde,  
 Or skeppe, or potte, ydounded moolde be  
 Upholden to the graffe until it finde  
 180 Almost the toppe. The same crafte is kynde  
 For meles eke. This tubre fruyte men kepe  
 In mylde or pitched pottes leide to slepe.

It does best in plums, pears, and Calabrian apples in the rind; or let a skip (basket) with dunged earth be placed over it. Tubers may be kept laid to sleep in millet.

*De pavimentis & lateribus & de diamo.*

27.

- Nowe floores me may pave, and brikes make,  
 184 As is the crafte described erst in May.  
 Sycomore wilde a certayne is to take  
 And boile it so, not with to greet affray.  
 Two parties of this juce is forto allay  
 188 With oon part of hony. Up boile it thenne,  
 And stere it until hony thicke it renne.

To make *diamorou* take a certain quantity of wild sycamore, boil it gently, and temper with one-third honey, and stir it till it mix.

<sup>1</sup> pruno.

*De servandis uvis.*

28.

Choose grapes to keep neither too ripe nor too sour, bright as gems, soft and hard to the touch; pull off the corrupted ones; burn the stalks of the clusters in hot pitch, and suspend them in a cool, dry place.

Trie oute the grape unhurt, neither to ripe  
Neither to soure, as gemmes luculent,  
192 Of softe and hardde as goodly is to gripe,  
Tho puld of that corrupcion hath shent,  
The closter tenes<sup>1</sup> in hoothe picke be blent.<sup>2</sup>  
Suspende hem so in colde hous, drie, obscure,  
196 Ther noo light in may breke, and thai beth sure.

*Ce vite cujus fructus humore putrescit.*

29.

A vine suffering from moisture should be trimmed only on the sides, the upper branches being left as a protection from the Sun.

A vyne whoos fruite humoure wol putrifie.  
Pampyned is to be by every side,  
Relicte on hit oonly the croppes hie  
200 Fro Sonnes heete her gemmes oonly to hide.  
And thenne rooted wol the grape abyde.  
September is with Aprill houres even,  
For Phebus like in either gireth heven.

*De horis.*

30.

The length of the hours in September: 1st and last, 24ft.; 2nd and 10th, 14ft.; 3rd and 9th, 10ft.; 4th and 8th, 7ft.; 5th and 7th, 5ft.; noon, 3ft. (qu. 4). First subtract, then multiply.

204 Er either ende is XIII and XI  
And next her either ende is VII twye,  
And thridde is x, and fourthe is fully VII,  
And fifte is v, and none is III stonte hie.  
208 Surtrete hem first, and after multiplie.  
As in Aprille in sense is saide the same  
In other speche, yf I be not to blame.

*Finis Septembris; prefacio in Octobrem.*

Translator's epilogue.

September is anende. Honoure, empire,  
212 Laude, Ympne, and Bliss ascende (un)to oure Eterne  
Almighty Lorde, that wolde us alle enspire  
In werk his worde to holde, if galle interne,  
Yf synne in oure entente hem nolde externe.  
216 O Jesse floure, so hent and bold us heer  
To fle fro synne and derk fire sempiterne,  
As me to gynne a werk atte October.

<sup>1</sup> botryonum tenaces.<sup>2</sup> or brent.

# OCTOBER.

## BOOK THE ELEVENTH.

*De adoreo, & tritico, & hordeo canterino.*

1.

- Atte October is whete & ador sowe.  
Just sowyng of hem is fro x kalende  
Of November until vi Idus blowe  
4 Of December, and thenne is it atte ende.  
This moone is dounge (is) caried oute on ende.<sup>1</sup>  
This moone is sowe eke barly canteryne ;  
Lande lene, or fatte, or drie, is for it digne.

The regular time for sowing different sorts of wheat is from Oct. 22 to Dec. 8. Sow also horse-barley.

2.

- 8 Hit holdeth ther as seedes seldom growe,  
And gretly hateth it al dounded londe.  
Now fitches, pese and lupynes beth sowe,  
Sysame also right, as beforne is fonde,  
12 Sowe at this moones Ide ; eke after honde  
Fasele in fatte or bareyne lande wol rise,  
And strikes IIII oon acre shal suffice.

It flourishes where other seeds will not grow.

*De lini semine serendo.*

3.

- Nowe lynneseede, if the likest, may be sowe ;  
16 But sowe it not ; it souketh oute the swete  
Of every lande ; and, if thou wilt it growe,  
Sowe it in fattest landes sumdel wete ;  
VIII strik of it is for oon acre mete.  
20 Eke summen sowe it thicke in lene lande,  
And subtile flax ynough theron wol stande.

Linseed sucks out the strength of the land.

<sup>1</sup> diligenter.

*De notanda vitium fertilitate.*

4.

Mark the fertility of a vine, but one year's growth is not enough as a proof.

- Nowe nede is sette a signe on every vyne  
That fertile is, scions of it to take
- 24 For setting. Columelle oon yeres signe  
Reputeth not ynough preef forto make  
Of fertillesse ; but if it never slake  
In yeres foure of bering forth expresse,
- 28 This is a preef of craftes gentillesse.

*De ponendis vineis vel propagandis.*

5.

Late in this month propagate vines in a hot dry air. Cutting and dressing, etc., to be done now in hot, dry, lean land.

- Nowe late in lande ther ayer is hoot & drie,  
And erthe exile or hilly drie or lene,  
Vynes beth best ysette to multiplie.
- 32 Settyng, kytting, and pastynyng demene,  
Trailing, repairyng, bosshing vyne clene,  
As taught is erst, yf lande be drie, exile,  
Hoot, gravelly, and gladsom other while.

6.

Where land is of that nature, frosts have no domination.

- 36 So holpen is the vyne of winter rayne  
Ayaine the landes lene poverttee,  
So drinketh it that is of drynkes fayne,  
That is not wont of frostes vexed be,
- 40 For ther as lande is of that qualitee  
The frostes na noo dominacion.  
Nowe cometh este ablaqueacion.

*De ablaqueandis vitibus.*

7.

Cut away superfluous roots, and let the vine balance on tiptoe ; but cut not the roots too close, lest too many shoot out, or lest they fester.

- After this moones Ide of Vynes yonge
- 44 The rootes voide away be kitte, lest they  
Be cause of deth unto the rootes stronge ;  
And so right on the tiptoo let hem gey<sup>1</sup>  
So shal she not for hote nor colde obey.
- 48 But kitte hem not to nygh, lest thei abounde  
Three toon for oon, or feestern into a wounde.

<sup>1</sup> librare.

8.

- Kitte hem a finger froo, and if ther be  
 Wynter plesaunt, apert is hem to leve ;  
 52 And violent yf thou the wynter se  
 December Idus wrie hem, lest it greve.  
 For over colde doo douves dounge at eve  
 Aboute her roote, algour away to dryve.  
 56 Eke Columelle hath this yeres fyve.

Cut them an inch from (the stock). In a fine winter leave them apart (uncovered); in a severe one, cover them at the Ides of December. Doves' dung will keep away cold. Columella says do so five years.

*De utilitate propagationis, de inserendis arboribus.*

9.

- In September the propagacion,  
 In landes suche as tolde is of before,  
 Is best to sette in occupacion :  
 60 For nowe thai maketh rootes lesse and more.  
 And whi ? for branches nowe may thai noo more.  
 Summen also nowe graffeth vyne and tree ;  
 But that in hattest lande is wont to be.

Now is the time for propagating trees ; for they now make roots, not branches. Some men graft vines now in hot land.

*De olivetis instituendis & purgandis.*

10.

- 64 In places nowe that hattest beth and faire,  
 As erst is saide, make uppe thyne olivete,  
 And alle that longeth to thaire semynaire.  
 Of olyvetes tyme is on to swete.  
 68 Olives white eke nowe confite hem swete,  
 As shal be taught ; eke there is warme and drie,  
 Ablaqueate hem that thai may undrie.<sup>1</sup>

In hot places now make olive-yards, and all that belongs to the seed-bed. It is time for olives to sweat. Now preserve sweet white olives. In dry places ablaqueate them, that they may become moist.

11.

- Pulle of ich plaunte, as chargeth Columelle ;  
 72 Yet thinketh me the saddest ever amonge  
 Were husbondrie a parcel forto dwelle,  
 That whenne the damme is feint, the childe be stronge.  
 In stede of semynary werk, to fonge  
 76 On foote and goo : eke atte III yeres holde  
 Hem goode to dounge ; and namely ther is colde.

Contrary to Columella's direction, methinks it is good husbandry to leave a few shoots amongst the strongest to succeed the parent stock and go at once to the olive-yard instead of the seed-bed. Dung them at three years, especially where it is cold.

<sup>1</sup> humere.



## 12.

Six lbs. of goat's dung for one tree; or let every tree engage a strike of ashes, and let the moss be removed. If boughs are barren, weak, or old, single them out yearly. If they will not fructify, help them thus:

- Six pounce of gootes dounge is for oon tree,  
 Or evry tree a strike of askes gage,  
 80 The mosse alway yrased from hem be.  
 Eke Columelle hem kitteth viii yere age.  
 But I saye bareyne, feynt, or in dotage,  
 Yf bowes be, hem yerly utter trie.  
 84 And help hem thus if thay nyl fructifie :

## 13.

Let a French wimble bore into the pith; thrust in a branch of rugged wild olive, and at once cast oil dregs, or old urine, upon their roots laid bare. Thus a barren tree will bear. It is good to graft them in the wild state.

- Unto the pith a ffrenssh wymblye in bore,  
 Threste in a braunche of rogygy wilde olyve,  
 Threste ynne it faste, and to thaire rootes store  
 88 Alle naked made oildregges kest as blyve  
 Or old uryne. In this maner do thrive  
 A barayne tree to childe; in this courage  
 Hem forto graffe is goode, as sayen the sage.

*Remedium si uva compluta est.*

## 14.

Clean brooks and ditches. If rain has made grapes watery, it is best to get all the must coming from them after the first heat into another vessel. The water will let all sediment remain behind.

- 92 Nowe purge upp broke and diche; eke if greet rayne  
 The grape hath weete, after the formest hete  
 Of must of hem comyng, as Grekes sayne,  
 Is best alle into other vessel gete.  
 96 The water wol behinde alle heirylete.  
 This wyne translated thus is save & pure  
 And waterles. For whi? It hath his cure.

*De oles viridi & laurino faciendo.*

## 15.

Take fresh olives, diverse as is their colour, to keep over the evening; spread them, lest they heat. Remove dry rotten berries, strew on them whole, not ground, salt, and put them quickly into new baskets.

- Fresshest olyve is taken, so dyvers  
 100 As his colour is, and, to dwelle ore eve,  
 Let brede hem, lest thai hete & be the wers.  
 Eke everie drie or roton cors remeve,  
 And rather hool thenne groundon salt let streve  
 104 On hem iii strike on x strike of olyve,  
 And into skeppes newe hem haste as blyve.

16.

- This savery salt alle nyght so let hem drinke,  
 And erly sette on werkyng hem the wrynge ;  
 108 A savery oil ther wol oute of it synk ;  
 But first with water warme is to bespringe  
 The chanel of this oile and vessellyng.  
 Lest rancoure oil enfecte, do fier away.  
 112 Nowe eke is oil to make of laury bay.

Let them drink up the salt all night, and early set the press at work upon them. First sprinkle with warm water the pipes and vessels of this oil. Keep away fire, lest the oil become rancid.

*De herbis in orto serendis & plantandis.*

17.

- The winter goolde is sowen in this moone,  
 That loveth weet solute and gravel londe.  
 In salt lande nygh the see thay springeth sone,  
 116 But make hem playne upon to stonde,  
 Lest rootes bare, if molde fle, be fonde.  
 And katrefoil, whenne thai beth up yspronge,  
 Transplaunte hem into lande ydight with dounge.

Endive loves wet and loose gravel. It grows quickly near the sea ; but let it stand in a plain, lest, if mould fail, the roots be found bare. Transplant quatrefoil into manured land.

18.

- 120 The tasul plaunte is also nowe to sette,  
 Thre foote ich oon of hem from other stonde.  
 The rootes cropped first and dounge ywette,  
 The increment in hem is to be fonde.  
 124 In wynter dayes drie uppon thaire londe  
 Let dounge and askes kest : eke now is sowe  
 Senvey that wolde in hardest lande be throwe.

Set teasles three feet apart, the roots being first clipped and moistened with dung ; they will increase. In winter cast dry dung and ashes on their beds. Sow mustard in hard ground.

19.

- Yit every where it maketh plaunte & flour ;  
 128 And fedd it is to dust ; is ofte and weete.  
 But litel joy hath it of moche humour.  
 And as for seed in natal soil it fede  
 Transplauntynge as for meet is better dede  
 132 To make hem stronge ; if it withinne is grene  
 For sauce or seede that grayne is to sustene.

It is nourished by dust : it does not like much wet. For seed keep it in its own soil : for meat it is better to transplant it, to make it strong. If it be green inside, it is good for sauce and for seed.

## 20.

Mallow is kept back by winter from growing long or large. It likes rich moist land and dung. Transplant when it has four or five leaves. The tender plant takes best and grows quickly; that transplanted large is sickly: those not removed have best taste.

- This moone is malowe ysowe, and to be longe  
The winter latteth it, or greet to thryve.  
136 And gladde is it of fatte lande weet and dounge.  
Eke hem transplaunte atte leves IIII or v.  
The tender plaunte is take anoon, and blyve  
Uppoth, and sekkul beth the greet ysette,  
140 And thay that stille stondesth savereth bette.

## 21.

A clod or a stone will prevent their growing too fast: they require to be planted thin and often weeded: but pull up the weeds one by one, that none of the roots be moved; by making a knot in the root, they become tender and sweet.

- But to fast into croppes lest thai rise  
Ley softe a litel clodde on, or a stoon;  
Ofte weded rare ysette eke is thaire gise;  
144 But to pulle uppe the weedes oon and oon  
That roote of it be meved therby noon.  
And yf me make a knotte on everie roote  
Thay wol be frogh ynough and tender soote.

## 22.

Dill, mint, capers, bete, etc., are sown this month.

- 148 Nowe dile is sowe in places temperate,  
Also the mynte is in this moone ysowe,  
And onyons forto sowe eke tyme is atte,  
Pasneep, and origon, and Tyme is throwe  
152 In moolde, as nowe Armarik wol growe  
Nowe sowe or sette; and bete in landes drie  
Is in this moone ysette to multiplie.

## 23.

Transplant leeks that they may grow to head; and weed it often; and raise it a little, so as to leave a hollow. Basilicon grows quickly if a little vinegar be sprinkled on it.

- Nowe leek ysowe in Veer transplaunted be  
156 That it may hede, and ofte aboute it weede  
And lifte her plaunte a litel quantitee  
So hogh to stande and in the heed to sprede.  
Basilicon eke nowe to sowe I rede  
160 That springeth sone if aisel on hem reyne  
I mene on hem al light if it me spreyne.

*De pomis colendis & pomis condiendis.*

## 24.

- Who wol do perveaunce in worldes longe  
 The palmes forto sette he must have mynde.  
 164 Nowe dates bones trie out fatte & yonge  
 And hem that fresshest newe are in thaire kynde  
 Hem under erthe in moolde and askes wynde.  
 Aprille or May the plaunte is in to sette.  
 168 Hoote land thay love, and often to be wette.

He who would look forward to future ages must plant the palm. Now select date-stones.

## 25.

- Solute or sondy landes thai require,  
 So that aboute or under hem be do  
 A certayne of fatte lande as thai desire.  
 172 And hem transplaunte oon yere of age or two;  
 But do this first in Juyn and Juyl also;  
 Eke delve it ofte, and forto kepe of hete  
 Ay with and with licoure on hit to trete.

Palms require a certain quantity of rich land; transplant them when they are a year or two old; and to keep off heat, water them every now and then.

## 26.

- 176 Salt water helpeth palme, or of nature  
 Or made: and yf the tree begynne seke<sup>1</sup>  
 The dregges olde of wynes wol it cure,  
 So it unto the bared rootes seke.<sup>2</sup>  
 180 The heer do barke away from either cheke  
 Of everie roote, or make a saly pynne  
 And in the rootes clifte let drive it ynne.

Natural or artificial salt-water is good for palms, and if the trees begin to sicken, the dregs of old wine will cure them, searching to the roots. Cut off the hair (filaments) of each root, or drive in a pin of willow.

## 27.

- The lande is nought for fruite that palmes growe  
 184 Untilled ynne. Pistace is in this moone  
 Of plauntes sette outhur of nuttes sowe.  
 But men & women sette together sowe  
 Wol fructife, and so it is to done.  
 188 The man is he that hath under his rynde  
 Like bones longe stones as mankynde.

Land in which palms grow naturally is not good for fruit. Pistachio nuts grow from plants or kernels; but plant male and female nuts together. The male has a long bony substance under the rind.

<sup>1</sup> ægrotare.<sup>2</sup> quærat.

## 28.

Others smite out the head of small baskets, and put dunged mould into it, and there plant three nuts; and from each will rise a germ. It is right to transplant it in February.

- And other use an other diligence;—  
 Thay smyteth oute the hede of skeppes smale,  
 192 And dounced moolde in it they wol dispense,  
 And therin doo pistaces iii by tale;  
 And of hem alle up wol ther a stale.<sup>1</sup>  
 In Feveryere when it is waxen stronge,  
 196 If me transplaunte hit not me doth his wronge.

## 29.

It may be grafted on a terebinth tree in February, or on an almond in March. The cherry does not thrive in heat.

- He loveth moiste & hoot & often drinke;  
 In terebynt in Feveryer is he  
 Ygraffed, and in Marche as other thinke  
 200 He may be grafted in an Almauntree.  
 Colde ayer and weete lande hath the chiritree.  
 Thaire fruites wol be smale in places warme,  
 And hetes that be greet wol eke hem harme,

## 30.

Cherries grow quickly on hills. Transplant now and in November; but in January, when they have taken root, graft them. Plant them in these three months, and they will grow quickly.

- 204 In hilles sette upgooth with merie chere,  
 And nowe transplaunted beth thaire plauntes wilde,  
 In November also; but Janyvere,  
 Whenne thai beth take & gynneth go with childe,  
 208 Hem is it goode to graffe in dayes mylde,  
 Or in this moones thre thaire pomes springe<sup>2</sup>  
 In moolde, and plauntes faste of it wol springe.<sup>3</sup>

## 31.

A proof of the increase of the cherry-tree is that the cuttings which have been used for vine-props have grown anon into large trees. In January, November, or October, it is time to graft them; Marcial says in the trunk, I say in the rind.

- I preved have encrece of Chiritree.  
 212 The yerdes that my vyne I sette unto  
 Anoon hath growen up an huge tree.  
 In Janyveer and November also,  
 And other sayen in October therto,  
 216 Ys hem to graffe in trunncke, as Marcial  
 Saith, I in rynde have founde it goode atte al.

<sup>1</sup> planta.<sup>2</sup> sere.<sup>3</sup> nasci.

32.

- And, as he saith, in truncke who wol hem doo  
 Must pike away the downe of alle the tree,  
 220 For many a graff, he saithe, it hath fordoo.  
 This observaunce is to be kept, saithe he,  
 In chiritreen, and alle that gummy be :  
 To graffe hem whenne noo gume upon hem growe,  
 224 Or elles whenne it stynteth oute to flowe,

If they are grafted in the trunk, the down must be picked off; otherwise it will ruin the graft. In all gummy trees grafting must take place when there is little or no gum.

33.

- In plane, & in himself, in populeer  
 He graffed is, and in the plowme-tree.  
 In delves deep he is of mery cheer.  
 228 Greet rowme and delvyng often loveth he.  
 Kitte hem that dote or drie or densed be.  
 Thay hateth dounge ; it dooth hem oute of kynde.  
 Nowe crafte to have hem stoonles kepe in mynde.

Graft cherries on planes, cherries, or poplars, or plums. They delight in deep holes, much space, and frequent digging. Cut them if they are decayed, dry, or too thick. Dung injures them.

34.

- 232 Withouten stoon wel wol thai growe & cheve,  
 As Marcial saithe, if a tender tree  
 Me kitte atte footes tweyne, and thenne it cleve  
 Unto the roote, and with an yron se  
 236 The mary raised oute, and closed be  
 Hit sone ayenie ; and binde it, wrappe in dounge  
 His heede and either half the slitte in longe.

Cherries will grow without stones if you cut a young tree at two feet, cleave it to the root, and see the marrow scraped out with an iron. Close it again, and wrap in dung the head and the two halves along the slit.

35.

- And in oon yere uppe heleth it atte ones.  
 240 Thenne in it doo graffes that never bere,  
 Therof wol be chires withouten stoones.  
 And that the trunkes roteth if thou here  
 Humoure ytake out of hem it to pere,<sup>1</sup>  
 244 By grounde into the stocke it is to bore.  
 Of aunes harme a crafte is eke therfore.

In one year it heals. Graft on it shoots that have never borne, and cherries without stones will grow on it. If the trunk rots, and moisture flows out of it, you must bore a hole in the stock.

<sup>1</sup> effluere.



## 36.

Against ants  
sprinkle on the  
tree the juice of  
purslain mixed  
with vinegar, or  
winedregs will  
drive them  
thence, when the  
tree flowers;  
and if the dog-  
star make them  
faint and cheer-  
less, pour on their  
roots at eve a  
pint of water  
taken from each  
of three wells.

- Held on the tree the juce of Portulake  
Half aisel mixt, and forth thai goth yfere.  
248 Or wyne dregges wol make hem thens slake  
As floures gynne; and if Canyculere  
So make hem faynt, hoote, & of drury chere,  
A sester take atte iche of welles three,  
252 And on thaire rootes atte eve it poured se.

## 37.

But it must not  
be done by moon-  
light. Or the  
herb, called Sym-  
phoriac, is  
twisted like a  
crown round the  
trunk; or make  
a bed of it near  
the root. Take  
cherries sun-  
dried when they  
begin to wrinkle.  
Plant apples.

- But let not Echate<sup>1</sup> this craffe espie.  
Outher an herbe is, clept symphoriake,  
Ylike a crowne aboute her bodie plie;  
256 Or nygh the roote a couche of it thou make.  
And chiries in the sonne ydried take  
And kepe as thay begynne in ryvullyng.<sup>2</sup>  
This moone also the male is sette to sprynge.

## 38.

The apple is  
planted in hot  
soil; quince and  
service-tree on  
the 1st of Novem-  
ber, and almonds.  
Pine is also to be  
sown, and fruits  
to be kept for  
preserves, as has  
already been  
taught of each.

- 260 The male is sette in landes hoote & drie.  
At November kalendes quynce ane serve<sup>3</sup>  
In semynaire is sette to multiplie.  
And of the same an almandtree thay serve.<sup>4</sup>  
264 Nowe pyne is sowe, and pomes forto observe  
In condiment is nowe to make afore,  
Of iche of hem as erst is taught the lore.

*De apibus castrandis.*

## 39.

The bees are  
again to be de-  
prived of their  
honey, if they  
are rich; other-  
wise, leave the  
half their goods;  
if poor it is  
wicked to rob  
them. Attend to  
what is to be  
said of wine.

- Castracion the been have efte this moone,  
268 As said is erst, if thai be riche, and elles  
To leve hem halfe thaire goodes is to doone,  
And if povert appere in thaire celles,  
That robbeth hem wel worthi go to hell is.  
272 Hony and wex as erst is nowe to make.  
What shal be saide of wyne is tente to take.

<sup>1</sup> luna.<sup>2</sup> rugas h(ab)ere.<sup>3</sup> sorbus.<sup>4</sup> faciunt.

*De vinis pomorum.*

## 40.

- That I have redde, and Greekes in thaire faith  
 Afferme I thinke it here to you declare.  
 276 This difference in wine thaire writyng saith  
 Ther is, that swetttest wyne hevy are,  
 The white a partie salt is not to spare,  
 The bladder helpeth it, the yolgh coloured  
 280 Digestion is greetly by socured.

Greeks say that sweet wines are heavy; white saltish wine is good for the bladder; by yellow wine digestion is assisted.

## 41.

- The stiptik white a stomake that is laxe  
 Wol helpe enducing coloure that is pale  
 And lesse of bloode in man therof wol waxe;  
 284 From grapes blake a mighty wyne wol hale;  
 And swete of rede; and swetttest from the smale;  
 And fro the white is drawe a commune wyne,  
 But condyment is thus to make it fyne.

A white styptic helps laxity, inducing paleness and making little blood. Black grapes make a strong wine, red a sweet. Common wine is from white grapes.

## 42.

- 288 The must decocte to his medietee  
 Or thridde parte thay caste to thaire wyne.  
 But Grekes have an other subtiltee:  
 Of see quyete up taketh thai maryne  
 292 Water purest, oon yere thai lete it fyne,  
 Wherof thai sayen so maade is the nature,  
 Of bitternesse or salt that it is sure.

To flavour wine, the Greeks add to it must boiled down to a half or third. Another contrivance is to take clean water from the sea when quiet, and let it fine for a year. They say it is thus free from salt and bitterness.

## 43.

- This age alle ille odoure eschaungeth sweete.  
 296 The viiith part therof in must thay doo;  
 The vth part of gipse is therto meete.  
 And after dayes three thai gothe therto,  
 And mightily thai route it to and fro.  
 300 Thus dight, thay sayen that longe thai wol endure,  
 And in coloure be resplendent & pure.

Its 8th (qu. 80th) part they mix with must, and a 5th (qu. 50th) of gypsum. After three days stir it well, and it will keep long and be brilliant.

## 44.

Every nine days it should be stirred, especially in a late vintage. Frequent observation will teach what to keep and what to send away. Some plunge three oz. of resin into the barrel to make it keep.

- Iche daies IX a wyne is to be moeved,  
 And namely when ther is a latte vyndage.  
 304 By seyng ofte is what to hold ypreved  
 And what is goode to send on pilgramage.  
 Of resyne drie and stamped sumen gage  
 Three unces into a tonne, and alto meve  
 308 It, and it shal endure, as thay byleve.

## 45.

They know by tasting, whether the must has been damaged by rain, and they boil away the 20th part, and cure it with 100th part of gypsum.

- The must that is byrayned thus thai cure :<sup>1</sup>  
 By taste thay wite yf it berayned be,  
 The xx part away to boile, her cure<sup>2</sup>  
 312 Is first of gipse an hundreth quantitee  
 Doon with ; and other wol it boiled se  
 Until the v<sup>the</sup> parte of it consume,  
 And after yeres IIII in use assume.

## 46.

Sour wines are made sweet by two cyathi of barley meal, left in one hour; and some add dregs of sweet wine, or dry liquorice, and use it after it has been long shaken.

- Of wyne soure is taught to make sweet  
 With barly floure, and not but cruses<sup>3</sup> two,  
 As for a smalle vessel so moche is meete,  
 An houre into the wyne let it be doo.  
 320 And oon doth dregge of swete wyne therto.  
 Of glizicide a parte he hath infuse  
 All drie, and longe yshogged it wol use.

## 47.

In a few days wine acquires best odour if myrtle-berries dried and ground, or pounded, are allowed to sink in the barrel for ten days; or keep sweet flowers dried in the shade.

- And best odour hath wyne in dayes lite,  
 324 The bay of myrte agrest mountaine and drie  
 Yf that me grynde, or braying al to smyte,  
 And into a wyne barel downe let hem sie,<sup>4</sup>  
 And after dayes x theroute of trie.  
 328 Or floures sweete of vyne or othør tree  
 In umber dried may reserved be.

<sup>1</sup> sanant.<sup>2</sup> cura.<sup>3</sup> ciati.<sup>4</sup> descendere.

## 48.

- But bray hem smal, & presse hem in a newe  
 Vessel, and whenne thou wilt, on kades thre  
 332 Of wyne a certayne of this floures snewe,  
 And closed fast upon the vessel se ;  
 At dayes vi ydroken may it be.  
 And forto make a wyne to drynke swete  
 336 Of saturege or fenel putte in meete.

And pound them small and sprinkle a certain quantity of them on three casks of wine, and close them for six days, or put in a sufficient quantity of savoury or fennel.

## 49.

- Other the fruyte of pynes nuttes two  
 Wol bake, and in a cloothe into the wyne  
 Vessel let honge, and cleme it wol therto.  
 340 Atte dayes v yserved this wyne is.  
 To other crafte an ere eke to enclyne is :  
 Howe vynes yonge as olde shal appere :  
 Who liketh have that crafte may lerne it here,—

Others bake the fruit of two pine-nuts and let them hang in a cloth in the vine-vessel, and plaster it well over. Give ear to another method how to make young vines appear old.

## 50.

- 344 The soure Almaunde, & wermode, & feyn greeke,  
 Frote hem yfere asmoche as wol suffice,  
 The gumme of fructifying pynes eke,  
 And bray alle aswel as thou canst devyse.  
 348 A cruce into a stene of wyne devise :  
 Confected thus ther wol be wynes greet.  
 Lest thay enfecte is forther nowe to trete :

Rub together sour almonds, wormwood, and fengreek, and the gum of fruit-bearing pine. Put a cruse of it into a stone of wine: thus they will be made great wines.

## 51.

- Tak aloen & murre & magma with  
 352 Saffron, of iche iliche, and thus demene  
 With brayng whenne thay made to pouder beth  
 Let mynge hem with an hony that is clene,  
 A cruse of this nowe putte in a wyne stene ;  
 356 And save thay are ; and wynes of oon yere  
 Atte passing age is thus to make appere.

Take equally of aloes, myrrh, saffron-dregs, and when they are pounded to a powder, mix them with pure honey, put a cupful into a stone of wine, and it will make new wine appear old.

## 52.

One ounce of meliot, three of liquorice, three of Celtic nard, stamp them small with two ounces of hepatic aloes, put into a vessel in the smoke, will make wine appear ancient

- An unce of melion, of gliciride  
 Thre unce, and take asmoche of narde Celtike :  
 360 Let stampe hem also smal as may betyde,  
 With aloes tweyne unces epatike ;  
 Let vessel it, and set it uppe in smyke.<sup>1</sup>  
 Sex spoonful putte in v sester wyne  
 364 Wol make it auntceaunt appere and fyne.

## 53.

Bean-mash changes dark wine to white; or the white of three eggs; or a mash of African beans.

- The wyne browne eschaungeth into white  
 Yf that me putte in it lomente<sup>2</sup> of bene.  
 To putte also in oon galon the white  
 368 Of eyron III, and shake it in his stene,  
 The next day al white it wol be clene.  
 Of Afre<sup>3</sup> pese if thou do to loment,  
 The same day it serveth thyne entent.

## 54.

If one burns a vine, black or white, and casts it into wine, it will take the same colour. Into a tun of wine put a strike of this burnt vine for three days.

- 372 The vyne also thai sayen hath that nature,  
 That wyne yf me brenne, or white or blake,  
 And kest hem into wyne, me may be sure  
 The wyne coloure after the vyne take,  
 376 For white of white, and broune of browne, shal wake.  
 But therof into a tonne a strike donne be,  
 That is x stene, and there be dayes three,

## 55.

Close it and let it remain forty days. To make a mild wine strong, boil the leaf, root, or stalk of wild mallow, and cast it in the wine.

- So close it, XL dayes let it rest.  
 380 An esy wyne a man to make stronge,  
 Take leef, or roote, or caule of malowe<sup>4</sup> agrest,  
 And boyle it, kest it so thyne wyne amonge.  
 Or gipse, or askes twey cotuls no wronge  
 384 Thi wyne doth, III piluls of cupresse  
 Or leef of boxe an handful thereto gesse.

<sup>1</sup> fumo.<sup>2</sup> lomentum.<sup>3</sup> Afra.<sup>4</sup> altheæ.

56.

Or ache seede, & askes of sarment  
 Wherof the flaume hath lefte a core exile,  
 388 The body so, not alle the bones, brent ;—  
 Also a man may in oon dayes while  
 So trete a stordy wyne that it shal smyle,  
 And of a rough drinker be clere and best.  
 392 Now se the crafte is easy and honest.

Or<sup>r</sup> parsley-seed,  
 or ashes of burnt  
 vine-cuttings  
 from which the  
 flame has taken  
 body and  
 strength: and in  
 one day a strong  
 and rough wine  
 may be made  
 light and clear.

57.

Take pepur cornes x and twye as fele  
 Pistacies, hem with a quantitee  
 Of wyne to stampe as smal as thou may dele,  
 396 And to vi sester wyne comyxt it be,  
 And route of so that thay togeder fle.  
 Nowe let hem rest, and clense hem, and to use  
 Hem right anoone ther wol noo man refuse.

Mix ten pepper-  
 corns and twice  
 as many pistachio  
 nuts stamped as  
 small as possible  
 with six pints of  
 wine, and shake  
 well together.

58.

400 A trouble<sup>1</sup> wyne anoon a man may pure :  
 Seven curnels of a pyne appul do  
 In oon sester of wyne that is ympure,  
 And travaile it a tyme to and fro,  
 404 And after suffre it to rest (to) go,  
 Anoon it wol receyve a puritee :  
 So clensed thenne & used may it be.

A muddy wine is  
 made clear by  
 putting seven  
 kernels of pine-  
 apple into a pint,  
 and working it  
 well.

59.

Cretenses were ytaught of Apollo,  
 408 As it is saide, of aloes epatik  
 Foure unces, and of squinant therto  
 Asmoche, and oon unce of fynest mastic,  
 Fyne mirre an unce, and of the piste Indik  
 412 But half an unce, an unce of mascul thure  
 Wel smellyng, and an unce of pepur dure,—

Four oz. of hepa-  
 tic aloes, four ox.  
 of sweet rush,  
 one oz. of pine  
 mastick, one oz.  
 of fine myrrh,  
 half-oz. of Indian  
 spikenard, one  
 oz. of sweet male  
 frankincense, and  
 one oz. of hard  
 pepper :

<sup>1</sup> feculentum.



## 60.

Beat small and strain, and when your must boils skim off the top carefully. Take gypsum and pulverize it by stamping; strain it and add three Italian pints to ten stones (amphoræ) of this wine thus skimmed.

- Bete all this smal, and sarce it smothe atte alle.  
 And whenne the must boileth scome of the grape  
 416 That wol rise and be superficialle,  
 So take hem that nought oon of hem escape.  
 Take gipse and it with stamping al to frape  
 Sarce it, thre sexster Ytalike be do  
 420 To stenes x of wyne yscomed so.

## 61.

But first bring a quarter of this wine into another vessel; then add the gypsum to it and stir it with a fresh green reed; on the third day let four spoonfuls of this powder be added to ten stones of the wine;

- But first this wyne forsaide the fourthe part  
 Into sum other vessel is to brynge,  
 Therto this gipse is after to departe,  
 424 And with a reede all greene of fressh growinge  
 Two dayes in his turne it alto flynge,  
 The thridde day of this wyne in x stene  
 Let spoones foure of this powder demene;

## 62.

Then let the fourth that was taken out be added to fill up the cask; stir it till the spices be mixed with the must. Stop it up, leaving only a little breathing-hole to allay their boiling heats.

- 428 Thenne unto it the fourthe parte be doo  
 That fro was take, and so fille up the tonne,  
 And move it long tyme to and froo  
 Til alle this spice amonge this must be ronne.  
 432 So stoppe it uppe all save from wynde or sonne,  
 Yit leve a litel hool oute atte to brethe  
 Thaire heetes estuant forto alethe

## 63.

Close up this spiracle in forty days, and drink when you like. A naked boy is best to move it. Ashes of vine-cuttings are the best plaster for the casks.

- And after xl dayes this spiracle  
 436 Is uppe to close, and whenne the list, it drinke.  
 The taste therof wol fare as a miracle.  
 But whenne wyne is to move, upon this thinke,  
 A naked childe may best upon it swyuke,  
 440 Or oon as pure as he. In lynyment  
 For tonnes best dothe askes of sarment.

## 64.

- Goode stomak wyne and counter pestilence  
 Thus make : of fynest must in oon me trete,<sup>1</sup>  
 444 Or it be atte the state of his fervence,  
 VIII unce of grounden wermode in a shete  
 Dependaunt honge, and XL<sup>ti</sup> dayes swete ;  
 Thenne oute it take ; in lomes smaller hent  
 448 This must, and use it as wyne pestilent.

For a stomachic wine against pestilence: in a metrete (or kinderkin) of fine must, ere it boil, suspend eight oz. of pounded wormwood in a linen bag (or sheet), and let it stew there forty days; then take it out, and place this must in smaller vessels.

## 65.

- Nowe thai condite her must egestion  
 That wol with gipse her wyne medicyne.  
 In light smal wyne withouten question  
 452 Two sester gipse ynough is to reclyne,  
 An hundreth conge wyne to that assigne.  
 And yf the wyne be sadde and mighty rounde,  
 Therto shal oon sester of gipse abounde.

Those who medicate their wine with gypsum, flavour it now, after the must has settled. In light wines two pints of gypsum are enough for 100 *congi*, or gallons; in strong wines one.

*De rosato sine rosa faciendo.*

## 66.

- 456 Nowe is rosate ymade withouten rose :  
 Take leves green ynough of Citur tree  
 And in a palmy basket hem dispose,  
 And into must that yit not fervent be  
 460 Depose, and close or faste it closed se.  
 This taken oute atte XL dayes ende  
 Kest hony to, and as Rosate it spende.

To make rose-wine without roses, put citron-leaves into a palm-basket; throw them into must not yet boiling; close, and after forty days add honey.

*De vinis pomorum ; de ynomelle.*

## 67.

- Now everie wyne of pomes is to make  
 464 As crafte is taught before, iche in his moone.  
 Of greet and noble vynes nowe let take  
 Of must asmoche as semeth the to doone.  
 Atte xx<sup>ti</sup> dayes ende it (is ?) not to soone.  
 468 Oute of the pitte after that it is do,  
 The v<sup>the</sup> part of hony rough putte to.

Every kind of apple-wine is made now. Take as much must of large vines as you think fit twenty days after it has been lifted from the vat, add the fifth part of honey.

<sup>1</sup> potius metrete.

## 68.

Not scummed  
fine, stirred till  
it become white;  
see it stirred well  
with a green reed  
for forty days,  
or rather fifty,  
covered all the  
while with a  
cloth; then take  
up with clean  
hands all the  
froth.

- Not scomed fyne, wel stamped must it be  
Until it white, and moeve it mightily  
472 With reede algrene, and xl dayes se,  
Or better L, doon contynuelly;  
Aye with a shete, yeoverted clenly;  
After this tyme in handes clene uphent  
476 Alle that wol swymme and be superfluent.

## 69.

Then plaster it  
up to keep. It  
is better to keep  
it in small ves-  
sels and trans-  
fuse and plaster  
it in the spring,  
and put it down  
in a cellar, or in  
cold earth or  
river sand, or  
make a hole on  
the spot, and  
plunge it in.  
These drinks  
keep for long  
ages.

- So gipse it uppe, and kepe it for thyne age;  
But bette is kepte in pitched loomes smale,  
And next atte veer let gipse hem, and forth gage,  
480 And in a celle or colde erthe hem avale,  
In floode gravel, or ther thay stonde a dale  
Do make, and drenche hem therin: til worldes longe  
This drinks wol abyde, and aye be stronge.

(*De*) *defructo, careno, & sapa.*

## 70.

Three sorts of  
wine, viz. defru-  
tum, carenum,  
and sapa, are  
made in the same  
manner. In the  
first the must is  
boiled till it  
thicken. In the  
488 second one part  
out of three is  
boiled away; in  
the other one-  
third alone re-  
mains. Mix  
quinces with  
sapa, and make  
the fire of fig-  
tree.

- Defrut, carene, & sape in oon manere  
Of must is made. Defrut of defervyng  
Til thicke; carene is boyled nere  
From three til two; but sape unto oon lette brynge  
488 Fro three; and alle this crafte mys but boylinge.  
But sape is best if quynces therwith be  
Decocte, and alle the fier made of figtree.

*De passo.*

## 71.

Raisin wine is  
thus made in  
Africa before vin-  
tage: they put a  
large quantity of  
raisins into fine  
rush baskets,  
beat them with  
sticks until they  
blend with the  
496 grapes, and then  
press them.

- Now passe is made, that Affrike useth make,  
492 Afore vyndage; and thus this crafte thai trete.  
A multitude of reysons puld thay take  
And into rishy frayels rare hem gete,  
And mightely with yerdes first hem bete  
496 Until this with the grapes so desolve,  
And thenne hem to the presses thay devolve.

## 72.

- Ther pressed oute is all that oute wol passe,<sup>1</sup>  
 And under kept into sum vessel clene,  
 500 And this licoure Affrikes calleth passe.<sup>2</sup>  
 As hony me may kepe it in a stene,  
 In stede of whome in metes it demene.  
 This condyment is esy and jocounde,  
 504 Wherof inflacioun shal noon redounde.

When pressed keep it in a jar like honey, instead of which you may use it as a sauce, and it will preserve you from flatulence.

*De cidonite.*

## 73.

- Take quynces ripe, and pare hem, hewe hem smal  
 And al for smal ; but kest away the core,  
 For it is nought to this effect atte al.  
 508 In hony thenne up boile hem lesse & more  
 Til it be halvendel that was before.  
 Do pepur with in boilyng smallest grounde,  
 This is the first maner ;—and this seconde :

Cut quinces very small, throw away the core, boil it in honey till reduced to one-half and mix ground pepper with it.

## 74.

- 512 Another wise is this : take sestres two  
 Of quince, and oon sester (of) aisel  
 And half, eke two sester hony therto ;  
 This mynge, and boile it alle togeder wel  
 516 Til it be hony fatte & thicke iche dele ;  
 Of pepur and ginger tweyne unces grounde  
 To powder smal is therto forto infounde.

Or take two pints of quince and one and a half of vinegar, two of honey; mix till it be all as thick as honey. In this pour two oz. of pepper and ginger ground to powder.

*De fermento mustorum servando.*

## 75.

- A galon muste from under feet do to  
 520 A strike floure of newe wheete, and it let drie  
 In sonne, and weete it oft & drie it do  
 Yit efte; the same in smallest loues plie  
 And drie it harde in sonne; in pottes trie  
 524 Now gipse it fast; and use this ferment  
 For musty brede, whom this wol condyment.

Add to a gallon of must that has been trodden down, a strike of new wheat flour, dry it in the sun, wet it and dry it again: then roll it into small lumps and dry it in the sun, and plaster it up in pots to make new bread whenever you require it.

<sup>1</sup> effluere.<sup>2</sup> passum.

*De uva passâ Græcâ condiendâ.*

76

To make Greek raisins, where the grapes hang good and sweet, they twist the stalks and let them dry in the sun, and afterwards suspend them in the shade, whilst they prepare vessels for them.

The reison greek in this maner thai make :  
 Thai se where hongeth grapes goode & swete  
 528 The stortes softe in handes wol thai take  
 And writhe hem, and so writthen wol thai lete  
 Hem honge and drie awhile in sonnes hete,  
 And after hem in shadowe thai suspende  
 532 Her vessel while in dightyng thai contende.

77.

Underneath they place vine-leaves and press down, and add more leaves, and keep them in a dry cold place where there is no smoke. The hours of October agree in feet with those of March.

The leaf of vyne all drie and chillyng colde  
 Under thai do, and therin grapes presse,  
 And with thaire handes fast adoon hem folde,  
 536 So fille it uppe, and therto leves dresse,  
 In drie and colde, ther smoke is noon expresse,  
 Hem kepeth thai. This October upborn  
 With feet is as in Marche is saide beforne.

*De Horis Octobris*

78.

The length of the hours in October.

540 The first and last houre xxv even,  
 And next the first & last houre is xv,  
 The thridde houre from the first and last xi  
 Hath, and the fourthe houre viii is to sustene.  
 544 Next noone on either side on vi demene,  
 And noone himself stont short on footes v.  
 And whi? For Phœbus so short made him thrive.

*Laus Deo, & continuacio librorum.*

Preface to November.

October spende, O sonne, O light superne,  
 548 O tryne and oon, lovyng, honoure, empire,  
 Withouten ende unto thi might eterne,  
 That shyne and goon aspire  
 Magre thi foon so list iche houre and gire  
 552 His spere aright, that savyng  
 Sterre is ther noone in alle oure emyspire :  
 Under whoos sight I gynne on November.

# NOVEMBER.

## BOOK THE TWELFTH.

*De satione tritici, farris, ordeï, fabæ et lenticulæ.*

### 1.

- Novembre wol with whete & far be sowe  
In lawful wise and with solempnitee.  
V strike upon oon acre is to strowe.  
4 With barly wol this moone eke sowen be,  
And benes unto greet felicitee.  
Right fatte or dounded lande thai loveth best,  
Or valey ther hilles fattenesse hath rest.

In November sow wheat of two sorts in the accustomed manner, five strikes to an acre; barley also and beans in manured lands or valleys in which the moisture from the hills rests.

### 2.

- 8 And clodde hem large, as wel thai may be wrie.  
Eke sumen sayen the benes sation  
In places colde is best to fructife,  
On hem if me doo noon occacion :  
12 For cloddes wol thaire germinacion  
Obumbre from the colde and wol defende.  
Thei peireth lande, but lite & nought amende.

Cover them with large clods. Some say that in sowing beans in a cold place they thrive best if no harrowing is done upon them at all. They (who do barrow) impair the land.

### 3.

- For Columelle affermeth that a felde  
16 For whete is rather proved profitable  
That bare is, thenne the felde ther benes yeld  
Hath been; and for an a(n)cre fatte is hable  
Sex strike to sowe, and lesse is aboundable  
20 In mene lande; but sadde lande wol the bene  
In dwelle, and hateth nebulose and lene.

Columella says a field is better for wheat that has been left fallow than one which has produced beans; and that we may sow six strikes to an acre of rich land; less in mediocre land: but the bean likes strong land.



Sow them on the 15th of the moon before sunrise ; others say the 14th is better. The Greeks, who know, say that to sprinkle them with capon's blood preserves them from weeds. Steeped two days they grow quickly. It is the custom now to sow flax and pulse.

Make up the meadows and plant young vines, and hasten to dig round them, and cover those that are bare, before the Ides, and the layer at three years old may be cut from the vine.

Trim the roots of strong trailing vines, and cut them at less than five feet altogether from the ground.

Where the rind is greenest puncture with the point of a sharp iron : for according to Columella, matter to repair the vine will thence germinate in spring.

## 4.

- And whenne the moone is dayes olde xv  
 And so not repercusse as of the sonne  
 24 Sowe hem ; but other sayen bette is XIII.  
 From wedes thai with capon bloode beronne  
 Beth save, as Grekes sayen, that thei on konne,  
 Two dayes stept anoon thai wol aryse.  
 28 Nowe lyne and puls is sowe as is the gise.

*De pratis & de vitibus.*

## 5.

- Nowe mede is first to make, as saide is erst ;  
 Nowe vynes sette in places hote and drie ;  
 Nowe also to provyne is not the werst.  
 32 Younge vyne and plauntes umbydelvyng hie,  
 And also hem that naked beth let wrie.  
 Eke er then Ide. Iche merges curvature  
 Of III yere old kitte from the roote is sure.

*De vineâ vetere in jugo vel pergulâ reparandâ.*

## 6.

- 36 From hensforth the vynes that ferre traile  
 On perches or forkes and over longe  
 An encombraunce are and of nought availe.  
 Beholde hem if thaire trunnke be hool & stronge,  
 40 Ablaqueate hem, feede hem fatte with donnge,  
 And kitte hem shortte over the londe not v  
 Feet longe allyng, and thus make hem to thryve.

## 7.

- There as the grenest place is of the rynde  
 44 The sharpppest yren take, and with the pointe  
 On either side, afore also behinde  
 So goodly by and by, it is to pointe.  
 For Columelle affermeth in that jointe  
 48 To germyne, and in veer theroute to stare  
 Mater thi vyne alle newly to repare.

*De putandis vitibus & arboribus, ac oleo faciendo.*

8.

Putacioun autumnal celebrate  
Is nowe in vyne & tree ther nys noo colde.

- 52 Olyve is pulde of coloure variate.  
Make oil of hem al blake on to beholde.  
Olyve and other treen thus best is holde  
The croppe to kytte, and save on every side
- 56 The bowes profluent for fruyte to abyde.

Autumn pruning is practised where it is not cold. Olive is picked when it is parti-coloured; when it is black, make oil. Best to cut off the tops and leavethe side branches.

9.

But where is lande unkept & insolent,  
Take from the trunncke al clene until so hie  
As beestes may by noon experiment

- 60 Attayne, and there let bowes multiplie,  
And afterlonge on every side hem plie  
Salutyng<sup>1</sup> est & west, & north & south;  
Yit alway warre the touche of beestes mouth.

In lonely un-guarded places cut all away to the height beasts can reach; there let them bend on every side, but beware of the beast's mouth.

*De olivetis ponendis & curandis.*

10.

- 64 The olyve is nowe there lande is hoothe & drie  
Ysette, as erst is saide. Wel wot this tree  
Encre in litel moiste and places hie.  
Wel frothed wolde he fatte ydonnged be,
- 68 And wagged with wynde of feracitee.  
And cure hem as beforne. Nowe baskettes (corbes) fyne  
Beth made; in tempre lande eke oil lauryne.

Plant olives in hot dry land. It will increase if well rubbed and manured, and agitated by fruitful winds.

*De Allio, Ulpico Cep(ul)lis, & plantis carduorum.*

11.

This Moone Ulpike & Garlic is to sowe.

- 72 White erthe it wol dolvon withouten donnge.  
Make reedes in the borde, and ther bestowe  
Hem in the toppe atwene in brede & longe  
Fyngers but III; eke deepe sette is their wronge;
- 76 And weede hem wel, so wol thai wex(en) fele.  
But forto hede hem greet trede downe the stele.

For African and common garlic prepare well-dug white earth without dung. Make trenches in the borders, and place in the highest parts four inches apart, not too deep. To have great heads tread down the stalk.

<sup>1</sup> louting fort.

## 12.

They say that if they are sown and also gathered when the moon is down, they will have no strong smell. Now sow onions, teasle, marjoram, and horse-radish.

- So shal the juce into thaire hedes goo.  
 And whenne the moone is downe also thai telle  
 80 Hem if me sowe, and pulle hem uppe also,  
 Of crueltee noo thing wol in hem smelle.  
 In chaf or smoke ykept wel wol thai dwelle.  
 Nowe onyons sowe, and tasul in his place  
 84 Lette plaunte ; and cunel sowe, eke Armarace.

*De persico, pinu, prunis, castaneis, et aliis pomis.*

## 13.

Where it is hot plant peach-stones in well-prepared ground two feet asunder. Transplant them when sprung. Plant them with the point of the stone downward.

- Nowe ther is hoote, and elles in Janyveer,  
 The peches boon in pastyn is to sette.  
 To sounder hem two footes best it weer.  
 88 The plauntes spronge into other places fette ;  
 And sette hem deepe III or II handes mette ;  
 But pitche adowne the pointe intort the grounde.  
 An other crafte yit other folk have founde.

## 14.

Others dry the peach-stones, mix with ashes and keep in baskets. I say keep them as you please, they will grow anywhere, But they last longer

- 92 The boones to be sette first wol thai drie  
 A dayes fewe, and thenne in askes moolde  
 Thay mynge, and it thai into skeppes trie ;  
 In this thaire dried boones wol thai holde.  
 96 I say that men myght kepe hem as thai wolde,  
 And everywhere also saye I thai sprynge.  
 Yit sum place hath best & lengest durynge,

## 15.

in warm air and wet gravel ; cold winds will kill them. Dig often and pull out weeds, transplant at two years in short trenches close together.

- Ther warme ayer is & gravel landes weete ;  
 100 For ther is colde and wyndy thai wol die  
 Yf noo defense awai the coldes bete.  
 And delve hem ofte, eke herbes bitter trie.  
 Transplaunte hem two yere olde to multiplie  
 104 In delves shortte, and nygh ichoon til other,  
 That from the strom of hete iche help his brother.

16.

- Ablaquiatyng hem in h(ar)vest hie,  
 Here oon foiles yeve hem as for donnge ;  
 108 And kytte of every roton thinge or drie.  
 For grene yf that me kytte of, that is wronge,  
 That sleeth hem uppe; eke seek if thai be longe  
 Wynedregges olde in water let infounde ;  
 112 Yeve hem this drinke, anoon thai wol be sounde.

Trim the roots in autumn and give them their own leaves for dung. It slays them if we cut off green shoots. If they are sick, old wine - dregs in water will cure them.

17.

- The Greekes sayen that Peches me may make  
 Ywriten growe, yf that me first hem sette  
 And after dayes vii up hem take.  
 116 By thenne oute wol a spronke of hem be lette  
 Upon the shelle, and oute the curnel fette,  
 And write oute whate the list with cynabare.  
 To close anoon the boon thereon do care.

Peaches grow with an inscription on them, if taken up seven days after planting, when the shell breaks. Take out the kernel and write what you like with vermilion, and carefully cover up the peach-stone.

18.

- 120 Thaire kyndes beth, oon is peche Armenye,  
 Precox is next, the thridde is duracyne.  
 But if this tree to sore in sonne drie  
 Hepe erthe aboute and humoure vespertyne,  
 124 Eke thing object the fervoure of declyne.  
 A serpent skynne doon on this tree men lete  
 Avaylant be to save it in greet hete.

Their sorts are the Armenian, the Precox, and the cling-stone. If the tree be too sorely sun-dried, heap earth about it. Let anything placed as a protection ward off the heat. Men think a serpent's skin avails to save it.

19.

- For frostes nowe do donnge aboute a peche,  
 128 Or water, mixt wynedregges, or the best  
 Of benes boyled water may be leche  
 To sle the frost; and if wormes unrest  
 Hem, aske, oildregges mixt, on hem be kest,  
 132 Or oxe talgh with the thridde parte aisel,  
 Her either cast on hem wol slee hem wel.

Against frost use dung or water mixt with oildregs, or boiled bean - water as Doctor; if worms disturb, ashes mixt with oildregs or beef fat, with one-third vinegar, — either of these will kill them.

## 20.

If the fruit fall off, drive a pin of fir or birch into the root or trunk; or if it threaten to rot, it is useful to bore a hole in the middle, and put in a willow stake.

- The fruite caduke is goodly thus to cure :  
 Of terebynte or briche into the roote  
 136 Or truncke indryve a pynne, and it is sure  
 For fallyng fruyte ; or holdyng forth to rote  
 The myddel into bore also is boote,  
 And putte a saly stake in it with crafte ;  
 140 Fro rotyng and ryving thay be beraffe.

## 21.

Cut the rind low down, and when the sap flows, bind the wound with clay and chaff: and when they flower wet them with goat's milk whilst the sun is thrice going round his course.

- Lowe on the truncke as wounde him in the rynde,  
 A lite humoure whenne oute of it is ronne,  
 With chaved cley the wounde ayein to bynde.  
 144 And whenne thaire flouring time is so begonne,  
 While thrie aboute his course gireth the sonne,  
 With sestres thre of gootes mylke hem wete,  
 And ther wol be the peches swete & greete.

## 22.

Hang Spanish broom from their boughs, or tie it to them. Graft according to their kind, in cold land in January, in hot land November, and take the grafts low.

- 148 Upon thaire bowes Spartea to honge  
 Is goode for hem, or sparte until hem bynde.  
 In Janyveer or Feveryere no wronge  
 Is graffyng hem, but cordyng to thaire kynde  
 152 If land be colde ; and hoote land if thai fynde  
 In November: but take thaire graffes lowe  
 And nygh the storcke, for gladdest wol thai growe.

## 23.

The tops do not take, or do not last. Graft the Armenian and Precox on the palm, the clingstone on almond. Inoculate in April or May where land is hot.

- The toppes taketh not, or nought endure.  
 156 Graffe in him self, or plumme, or Almandtree,  
 But Armenye and Precoqua beth sure  
 In plumme, in Almaunt Duricynes be  
 Lengest to growe in moost fertillitee,  
 160 Aprille and May hem wol enoculaire  
 Ther as the lande is hoote in places faire.

24.

Italiene enoculacion

In thende of May or nygh ther Juyn begynne

164 In peches saien goode occupacion.

Emplasturing (and) of hem eke is no synne,

And rede oute of the plane ygrafted wyne.

The Duracyne is kept in oxymelle

168 With dregges myxt wel for to taste and smelle.

Italian inoculation in May or beginning of June bespeaks good occupation: plastering them is also right. Grafted on the plane-tree they come out red.

25.

The bones oute, as figges summen drie

Hem and suspende; eke I have seen, the bonys

Detracte of Duracyne, in hony trie

172 So kept that gladder tasting never noon is,

Hoote pitche a droppe if into iche (n)avel<sup>1</sup> goone is;

That so thai be coart (coact?) to swymme in sape,

Enclude hem, and alle harme thai shal escape.

The stones being taken out, some dry peaches like figs. I have seen Cling-stone peaches, after the stones were removed, kept in honey, so that none were of better taste, if a drop of pitch be poured in the navel.

26.

176 Thai sayen the pyne<sup>2</sup> unto all thing under sowe

Is commodious, and his sowing is thus:

His kurnels wol in hoote & drier growe

In October, or November not mys,

180 In Feveryere or Marche ther colde weet is.

In smal lande nygh the see, amonge the hillys

And stones, wide and fresshe this tree at wille is.

The Pine does good to every thing sown under it. Plant in October or November in dry land; in February or March where wet. It delights in fine land amid hills and stones.

27.

In wyndy moiste encreseth thai right greet.

184 But with this tree what grounde ever shal growe,

As is for other treen is not to trete.

But plowe it, whete on it as me wolde sowe,

And right as wheet in it the seedes strowe;

188 And wrie it light, an handbrede it descende,

And let noo beste his tender youthe offende.

They grow large in windy places. But whatever the ground, it is not to be treated like that for other trees, but plough it as if wheat were to be sown in it.

<sup>1</sup> umbilicum.

<sup>2</sup> pinus.



## 28.

Steeping the kernels three days in water helps to make them grow large; 192 transplanting makes them mild. Place the seed under ground in baskets with mould.

- Three daies wattering up helpeth eke  
 To greet encrece, and his translacion  
 The pynes fruyte wol easy make & meke.  
 Eke plauntes have this procuracion  
 Unto thaire greet multiplicacion :  
 That first is doone the seede with moolde & dounge  
 196 In skeppes under lande to rere up yonge.

## 29.

Remove the weakest that the strongest may grow faster. After three years the baskets being burst, they shall strike down. Put on them alternate flakes of dung and mould.

- Whenne thai come up the smallest fro thai do  
 So that the saddest faster may ascende :  
 Atte III yere olde, this skeppes broken fro,  
 200 In delves large adowne shal thai descende.  
 And dounge asmoche as moolde aboute hem spende ;  
 A flake of this, a flake of that thai make,  
 So hath a kake of moolde of dounge a kake.

## 30.

See that the top-root, one and straight, be removed whole to its extremity. Cutting helps them to flourish, so that we shall see them grow twice as high as we expect.

- 204 But see wel that the chief roote oon directe  
 Be hool translate unto his summyte  
 Withouten hurte and in no wise enfecte.  
 Putacion so helpeth hem to thee  
 208 That two so high ascende hem shal me se  
 As me wol wene ; and thaire nuttes abide  
 Wol on the tree, and ripe until this tide.

## 31.

Pull them before they split asunder. Plum-stones steeped grow more cheerily.

- But pulle hem rather then thai flete atwynne.  
 212 Thaire nuttes must be clenسد forto kepe.  
 Newe erthen pottes summen kepe hem ynne,  
 So thai in erthe & with thaire shelles slepe.  
 Nowe plommes boon to sowe is two hande depe  
 216 In lande subact ; the same in Feveryere.  
 First stept in lye up goth with gladder chere.

32.

- His plaunte is sette uptake in Janyveer  
 As from the codde, and nygh the moones ende.  
 220 Or plaunte hem nygh the Ide of Feveryeer.  
 The rootes wel in donnging umbywende.  
 In fatte lande moist thay joyfulliche ascende.  
 And ther is warme eke hugely thai bold,  
 224 Yit not for thi thay may endure in colde.

The plant is taken from the stem in the end of January or middle of February. Surround the roots with dung. Where it is warm they grow bravely, but yet they can stand the cold.

33.

- Ther cleyi landes are & lapidose,  
 With dounge is goode to help hem & excuse  
 Lest thaire fruite falle and be vermyculose.  
 228 The plauntes from the rootes eke refuse  
 Not up to pulle; eke plauntes faire excuse  
 To stande unpuld, that thai be not to seke.<sup>1</sup>  
 And hele in this maner thi prunes seek: <sup>2</sup>

Where it is clayey dung them and give no cause for their falling wormeaten. Cut off all the suckers from the root, but leave the best unpulled. Heal your sick plums thus:

34.

- 232 Oildregges water tempered evenly  
 Let kest on hem, or oxe uryne alone,  
 Or oldé bryne admixt unevenly  
 With water parties two, or of an oone<sup>3</sup>  
 236 Askes, and rathest of sarment be doone  
 On hem, and if caduk thaire fruites be  
 Dryve in the roote of Oliastre tree.

Cast on them oil-dregs mixt equally with water, or old brine with two parts water, or ashes from an oven, and especially loppings.

35.

- Rubrik and taar<sup>4</sup> wormes & annes sleth;  
 240 Doon esy on for harmyng of the tree,  
 Lest medicyne eschaunge into the deth.  
 Ydolven ofte and wet holpen thai be.  
 Thai graffed are in Marche extremyte  
 244 In truncke or rynde; hem graffeth also summe  
 In Janyveer er thenne thay wepe gumme.

Red ochre and tar kill worms; put on lightly, not to harm the tree. Some graft in January before they weep gum.

<sup>1</sup> querendæ.    <sup>2</sup> languidas.    <sup>3</sup> furno.    <sup>4</sup> pix liquida.

## 36.

Plums are grafted on almonds, plums, apples, and peaches. Some dry them on hurdles, and gather selected ones in sea water or boiling dregs, and dry them in the sun or lukewarm oven.

- In Almaunt, in himself, in male, in peche,  
 Ys graffed plumme; and plommes summen drie,  
 248 And hem on fleykes kepe; and other teeche  
 Whenne see water or dregges boiling frie  
 The plommes fresshe collect ther into trie.  
 Hem taken uppe so drieth thai in sonne,  
 252 Or in an oven luke, and thai beth wonne

## 37.

The chestnut will grow from self-sown plants, or from seed. In two years it will be sick. Choose out good strong ones.

- Chasten<sup>1</sup> wol uppe of plauntes that alone  
 Uppgrowe, or of his seedes multiplie.  
 The plaunte in yeres two wol gynne grone  
 256 For seke, and peraventure he wol die.  
 Freshe, ripe, and grete of hem to sette oute trie.  
 In Novembør hem sette, and up thai crepe.  
 And thus to sowe in Feveryere hem kepe.

## 38.

Dry them in heaps and cover with river sand for twenty days. When that is done place them in water, where the sick swim, and the healthy sink. Again put the good ones under gravel, and try them thus three times.

- Drie hem in shade, and hem togeder hepe,  
 With floode gravel let diligence hem wrie,  
 And xxx dayes under that hem kepe:  
 Thenne, doone of that, hem into water trie.  
 264 Ther swymmeth seeke; and hool adowne wol hie.  
 Ayaine the goode under gravel be do,  
 And tried efte and thries preve hem so.

## 39.

You may plant them quite securely. Some keep them in gravel; but they do not like sandy land. Black earth is suitable, and carbuncle, and ragstone well broken.

- Hem that remain al sekur maist thou sowe.  
 268 Sumen in gravel hem closeth, and so kepe.  
 In lande solute and softe uppe wol thai growe  
 But as of gravel lande no thing thai kepe.<sup>2</sup>  
 In sandy lande thai stande if that it wepe  
 272 Black erthe is apte, and londe carbunculyne,  
 And ragstoon all to rapte is for hem digne.

<sup>1</sup> castanea.<sup>2</sup> optant.

40.

- Thai growe unneth in sadde lande or rubrike,  
 And for noothing the cley thai may not use,  
 276 The colde estate of heven wele thai like.  
 Aparty warme also thai not refuse,  
 Nor clyves ther humoure is not excluse.  
 Thai loveth derk septentrion beholde,  
 280 And best in pastynated lande thai holde.

They scarcely grow in strong or red land, or clay. They like a cold climate, but do not object to one partly warm, or to hills if there be moisture: they love a northern aspect, and do best in well - prepared land.

41.

- Pastyne it deep a foote and half, or plowe  
 It by and by, and wel with dounge it fede,  
 And therin do thi chastens forto growe  
 284 A foote depe the crafte is hem to seede.  
 Sette uppe a stick upon hem the to lede.  
 And sette in everie stede or III or v;  
 But footes iv asonder hem to thryve.

Dig one and a half foot deep, or plough here and there; feed well with dung; put in your chestnuts one foot deep, three or four in each hole, and four feet apart.

42.

- 288 Transplantyng hem is best atte yeres two.  
 So gutteryng the water from hem shelve;  
 If water stande on hem thai beth fordo.  
 Also this tree may pleched be him selve.  
 292 Eke besily the yonge it is to delve.  
 In Marche and September putacion  
 To chastens is incrementacion.

Transplant in two years, make gutters to keep off the water, which would destroy them. The chestnut may be propagated by suckers. Pruning is growth to them.

43.

- Thai graffed beth in rynde, as I have preved,  
 296 In Marche and in Aprille, and right wel do.  
 Inoculing also in hem hath cheved.  
 In saly if me graffe hem forth thai go.  
 And ripeth late and tasteth not but so.  
 300 Chasteynes kest in flakes me may kepe,  
 Or under sande asonder leyde to slepe.

Graft them in March. Inoculating is also successful. Grafted on willows they have an indifferent flavour. Keep them in wicker baskets, or in sand laid asunder.

## 44.

Others keep them in earthen pots, or dry holes, or beechen baskets, or they fold barley-chaff round them, or we may use thick baskets of sedge and cover them up.

And other hem in erthen pottes doo,  
 And delveth hem in places that beth drie.  
 304 In beechen baskettes men save also  
 This fruite, so thai with cley be stanche ywrie.  
 Or smallest barly chaf aboute hem plie,  
 Or baskettes of segges me may use,  
 308 So thai be thicke, and save hem ther recluse.

## 45.

The wild pear is now to be planted for grafting; the citron, olive, pomegranate, service, medlar, carob, mulberry, cherry, fig, almond, and walnut are to be renewed.

This moone in places (drie) and regions colde  
 The piry wilde is sette ygraffed to be,  
 Citur, (and) Olyve, eke Pomgarnat to holde  
 312 The Serve, and Meddleler, and Silique tree,  
 The Molbury, the Chery, and Fig-tree,  
 Almandes, and Juglande in semynaire,  
 As crafte is taught beforene, is to repaire.

*De mundandis & muniendis apium castris.*

## 46.

The bee picks some honey from tamarisk, etc., which should be left for their winter store. Cleanse their hives now, for it would harm them to move them in winter.

316 Atte gynnyng of this moone of thamarike  
 And other floures wilde useth the bee  
 Hony, though it be smal, sumdel to pike;  
 Thaire winter stoor is reson that it be.  
 320 Now clenled alle thaire houses is to se;  
 For wynter moeving like is hem to harme.  
 But do this in a faire day and a warme.

## 47.

Have them swept with a wing, pinion, or feather of a fowl where the hand cannot enter; stop every chink that is found, and spread a covering of broom over them.

Let sweepe hem with a wyng and with a penne,  
 324 Or fether of a foul there as an honde  
 May not come to; pike all the filthes thenne;<sup>1</sup>  
 Stoppe every cheve aboute her houses fonde  
 With cleyed dounge; and over ther thai stonde  
 328 A tegument of brom or such extende  
 Hem fro tempest and coldes to defende.

<sup>1</sup> inde.

*Remedium vitibus quæ sine fruge luxuriant.*

48.

In places glade and warme if vyne abounde  
 In leef, and have of fruited but poverttee,  
 332 Now kitte hem short and thai wol be feconde.  
 In colde lande this in Feryere doone be ;  
 And if thai amende not, yheped se  
 Askes or floode gravel aboute her roote,  
 336 That summen stoones dryve into for boote.

If vines abound in leaf, and have little fruit, cut them close, and they will be fruitful. If this do not succeed, heap ashes or river sand about the roots. Some drive stones into them.

*Remedium sterili viti.*

49.

The same place and tyme a bareyne vyne  
 Is thus to cure : his storke is first to cleve,  
 And ther enclude a stoone ; eke olde uryne  
 340 Let cotuls IIII aboute it helde at eve,  
 And alle the moulde aboute it to remeve,  
 That this licoure the rootes to descende,  
 Eke ley to lande and dounge, and thai wol mende.

To cure a barren vine, cleave the stalk and put a stone in it. Throw four pints of old urine upon it, and remove the earth from it, that the moisture may descend to the roots : then put to it earth and dung.

. . . . .

N.B.—Here several Stanzas have been torn out, and the following cannot be numbered.

For browsty<sup>1</sup> oil white wax is to resolve  
 In fynest oil, and therin throwe it so :  
 Hoot salt ygrounde is on it to dissolve  
 And in a vessel wried alle be do.  
 So wol it mende odoure and taste also.  
 In erthe ich oil to kepe is his nature,  
 Whom salt, or fire, or water hote may pure.

To cure rancid oil melt white wax in fine oil, and hot ground salt, and cover all up. Oil should be kept in earthenware, its nature is to be purified by salt, or fire, or hot water.

<sup>1</sup> rancid.



*De condiensis olivis.*

This month olives are made into preserves : there are several kinds. The light (or swimming) olive is preserved by sprinkling on alternate flakes of olives pennyroyal, honey, and a little salt. Or put thereon a layer of olive and fennel cuttings, or birch, or dill.

This moone is made olyve in condyment ;  
That is dyvers : Oon olyve columbare  
Ther flaketh first olyve as fundament ;  
And after that the pulioles are ;  
A flake on that hony and saltes rare,  
Or flake olyve and fenel graffes be  
Theron or birche, or dile, or olif tree.

. . . . .

N.B.—Another chasm.

So are they kept only eight days. Unbruised olive is placed in brine, which is fined in forty days. If you want it sweet add two parts of syrup, one of vinegar ; if sour, one part syrup, two vinegar.

So beth thai oonly daies viii endured.  
Olyve unhurt in barme<sup>1</sup> of oil is do,  
That after xl dayes up is pured.  
And swetter for to have it, do therto  
Two parties sape and aisel oon also.  
To have it sharpe, of aysel tweyne infounde  
And oon of sape, as may the sharpe abounde.

A pint of raisin wine, a double handful of cinder-ashes, a quantity of old wine, bruised cypress leaves : mix all this and steep it, make a crust upon it, and fill up to the brim.

A sester passe, a<sup>2</sup> yespon alto grounde  
Of cyner, of olde vyne a quantitee  
Foil of cupresse a parte in it contounde.<sup>3</sup>  
Let mynge all this ; olyves nowe let se,  
Suche as unhurt beth taken from the tree,  
Doon in and dreynt, a cruste upon it make,  
And fille it to the brinke until it take.

<sup>1</sup> muria.

<sup>2</sup> quantum manus utraque comprehendere possit.

<sup>3</sup> contunde.

## NOTES.

---

1/4. Gesner considers this to be a taunt aimed at Columella, though he gives no more occasion for it than Palladius himself; and the latter by his remark in the next line seems to be conscious that he is open to this retort.

4/8. "Us is to write," and 43/1165, "us to were honest is," are instances of the old dative: and so "the was saide"—it was said to thee, 81/570; and 96/1001, "is hem to stoppe"—they must stop: but "me moost enforme," 1/2, and "The floure me with the roos is not to take," 80/528, are different: in these latter instances *me* may be the nominative, like the French *on*.

2/23. "hole" should have been printed *hoole*. Qy. whether we are not wrong in writing *wholesome*, as if from *walg*, and not *holesom* from A.S. "hæl."

4/74. *To take*, probably "take to pieces," *subigis*; or it may be the *to* frequently redundant before the imperative.

4/80. *ataste alore*—"judicio saporis explores"; but which is the verb, and which the adverb, it does not seem easy to determine.

4/94. The metre seems to require that *Thater* should here be written in full "the water."

5/117. Sic in MS., but *Clerces* is more probably the right reading.

6/125. *obeye unto*, as in Chaucer, "to Nature obey," representing the Latin dative.

6/152. This redundant *as* is frequent in Chaucer, e.g. *Knigh't's Tale*, "As keep me from the vengans of thilk yre." See *infra*, 9/226, etc.

7/160. Sic in MS., but *selve* is more probable.

7/168. *synne* represents the old corrupt reading *vitium*, instead of *vicinus*.

8/199. *to thair above*—to an improved condition. See Professor Child, 'On Certain Peculiar Phrases in Gower and Chaucer,' in Ellis's *Early English Pronunciation*, Part I. This remarkable expression occurs also in Robert Manning of Brunne's *Chronicle*, Part I. Vol. I. p. 253 of Mr. Furnivall's edition:—

"Knyghtes, he seide, mykel I þow love,  
I have þow holpen to þoure above,  
And more y wolde yff y hadde ought."

9/227. So in MS., but "is" should be *it*.

9/230. Palladius says that virgin chastity, *i.e.* Minerva, is "promy-  
nent," *i.e.* patron, *presul*, of the olive; the translator has reversed the  
order.

10/254. *That manner molde*; so 27/723, *all manner puls*, like  
Chaucer's "No maner wight," in Prologue to Canterbury Tales, and  
elsewhere.

12/306. Sic in MS.: there is doubtless an omission of *South*, the  
original having "præcipue quæ ab Austro vel Occidente."

14/373. *Spongia* in original is a kind of stone. *Vide* Pliny.

15/383. The translator seems to have mistaken *tectorium* of the  
original—a kind of rough-cast, for *tectum*.

15/400. It will be observed that *tough* is made to rime with *yo*, as  
in Robert of Brunne's Chron. I. 357/10,218, *loughes* (lochs) rymes  
with *trowes* (trows, boats). There also *tow* (tough, A.S. *toh*) rymes  
with *drow* (drew), 452/13,038. In the Midland dialect, and standard  
speech, the final guttural was no doubt silent.

16/423. The comma should be at "foule"; and the meaning is  
*excused* (by themselves on the plea) lest they should lack water, or  
sea-fowl.

18/463. Chaucer uses the singular "gre" for a *step*; but I do not  
know another instance of the plural form *grece*.

20/544. The translator has inserted this line *proprio motu* in  
derision of these absurd superstitions.

25/659. This remarkable stanza is for the most part due to the  
translator. Palladius's account of the Pheasant in the original has been  
much applauded.

26/712. There is nothing in the Latin about this laughter; and it  
is not easy to see what gave rise to it.

27/728. *This is no nay*, is a phrase of Chaucer's.

29/790. *diche* here seems to be superfluous; and for the first *thi*  
one would be inclined to substitute *the*; but see *infra*, 30/815.

30/818. So in MS., but *thennes* seems required.

31/837. It is *shouell* in MS., and so I ought to have given it, as  
Mr. Skeat reminds me.

31/840. *for dyveres deres*—against divers injuries.

33/892. Democritus of Abdera wrote a book called *Georgicon*, which  
is referred to by all the Latin writers *de re Rustica*.

36/980. There is nothing in the original corresponding with

“aboute a quyk calf gridde”: the translator probably mistook the meaning of *viticulæ*.

37/1021. *fold*. We get the meaning of this word, 88/770, where it is explained by “ornus.” I have omitted to mention that these explanatory words are all in the MS. inserted by the translator between the lines: they are by no means always the same words as are used in the original. I do not find this name for the ash in the Dictionaries or Glossaries.

38/1035. So in MS., but *gutteres* is required.

39/1053. *into stonde*, i.e. to stand in.

40/1085. *The celles suspensures*, in original “cellarum suspensuras,” i.e. the arching, or vaulted work on which the Roman baths were built.

43. In the Latin distich at the end of this page Mr. Skeat saw at a glance that I had mistaken *unus* for *imus*. It is in fact meant to rime with *primus*, and to signify *last*. It is to little purpose to say that Horace would have written *summus*, not *imus*, vide Hor. Epist. 1. 1. I had taken *unus* in connexion, not with “*liber*,” but with the subject of the next line. I take this opportunity of thanking Mr. Skeat for this and several other services rendered me in his review in the *Academy*.

44/15. Barnaby Googe says of these balks: “The good husband must trie whether it be well plowed or no, & not onely trust your eyes, which (the balks being covered with mould) may easily be deceived, but trie it with your hand (which is a certainer prooffe) by thrusting downe a rod into the furrow, which if it pierce alike in every place, it sheweth that the ground is well plowed. If it be shallow in one place & deepe in another, it declares the ground to be evil handled in the plowing.”

46/67. =so much will grow to thee.

46/77. In this, and other places, where the metre requires a monosyllable, one would have expected *forwe*. See next line.

47/78. A full stop is required at *wyse*.

48/114. “*Dissensseth*,” so written in the MS., and it is evidently, as required by the context, a verb in the imperative: but as the Latin is *discuties*, I suspect “*dissensseth*” to be a mistake of the copyist for *discusseth*.

50/172. It would seem as if the pronunciation of this word varied with the spelling, and the same with *tough* and *ynough*, with which it is often made to rime. Compare the rimes of this stanza with those of stanza 4, p. 45: *plowe* there rimes with *growe*, and “*tough*,”

“ynough,” and “plough” are meant to correspond with each other in sound, I fancy according to the modern pronunciation of “tough”; and so in 85/672. “Ynowe,” like “plowe,” often occurs with the other sound, *e.g.* 52/231; but then we have “lough” (72/304, and 50/184) meaning *low*, and most probably with the same sound as “low”: so that it is not easy to come to a satisfactory conclusion on the matter.

50/184. The side-note, notwithstanding the gap in the printing, has said all that was intended; “and,” however, should have had its first letter, and *low* should have been given, without the (?), as the explanation of “lough,” not *longh*.

52/231. It is strange that our word *very* should have established itself as almost the sole representative of the intensive adverb. Our Early English was much more copious in this respect; and “right” and *ful* were often employed with good effect in this service: *right* occurs twice in this line, and in other places, where the substitution of *very* would be no improvement. In 172/42, where it seems used to signify excess of *badness*, it may be a little perplexing. In such phrases as “right by” (6/149), and “right as thou went” (36/968), it conveys a meaning of *local* exactness. In 45/49 the adverb “forth right” relates to *time*, and signifies *immediately*.

55/303. Gargilius Martial is several times quoted by Palladius as a writer on Agriculture, but little is known about him with certainty. There was an author of this name contemporary with Alexander Severus, whom Vopiscus speaks of as a second-rate writer; but whether he is the same person with the Martial in the text it is not possible to determine.

56/344. The meaning seems to be “the walnut is to be planted sideways, one of its sides downwards, the point, or thinnest end, looking towards the north.”

56/352. This represents the old reading *una* instead of *ima*.

57/371. The two misprints in the word “copron,” which I have noticed in the *Corrigenda*, have sadly disfigured it.

58/399. So in MS. for *er*, i.e. *ere*, before.

60/443. Notice “an other,” like *altera*—the second.

60/442-448. These hours are the divisions of the Roman day from sunrise to sunset. The sixth hour is always midday. The calculation is only for the first day of each month. The feet represent the length of the shadow of the gnomon of the Roman sundials when struck by the rays of the sun. Gesner and Schneider, in their respective editions of Palladius, have produced at length a learned dissertation of Aldus



on the subject, to which we refer the reader who may desire a thorough investigation of the questions involved.

61/12. The translator seems to speak of the same land as thin and fat at the same time: in the original it is “*solo tenui et resoluto, vel etiam pingui.*”

63/527. The old reading was *fecundas* for “*infecundas.*”

64/86. The Aminean vine has its name from an old town of Campania. Pliny says the bees gave their name to the Apianean.

66/153. There is a space left in the MS. for a word before “*besinesse*”; probably the word omitted is “*better.*”

67/167. *leves* in MS. is a manifest error of the transcriber.

67/187. Mago, a Carthaginian writer on Agriculture, of uncertain age, was translated into Greek, and is frequently quoted by Pliny and Columella, as well as by Palladius.

67/188. I have proposed to expunge the *d* from “*yerdes*” as a manifest error of the MS.

68/191. In the original it is *putrefient*; therefore there can be no doubt that *purifie* should give place to *putrifie*. The semicolon should have been placed after “*rootes*” in the next line, and not at the end of this.

69/236. This line labours under some defect, but I cannot say what it is.

72/318. I propose the substitution of *to* for “*the,*” in deference to the original “*formandam esse.*”

73/346. So in MS., but *of* seems to be required before “*graffynges.*”

75/397. “*her either*” here, and “*Ereither,*” 32/880, evidently represent the A.S. *Heora ægther*; but in these places the meaning seems rather to be *both of them together*, than *either of them* separately.

76/431. The original has here *in* the Pastine, or land prepared for vines; and two lines above the “*tables brinkes,*” or extremities of the beds, are spoken of as *in* the vineyard at the *Decumanus limes*; for the vineyards were laid out with all the precision and order of a fixed camp.

76/433. “*an handful*” seems a strange measure of length here, and in 119/429. In the original it is *palmus*—a handsbreadth, as in 80/536, or *manubrii crassitudine*. In Old English it was called a *shaftman*: thus, in Barnaby Googe, 78*a*, we read “*not exceeding a foot in length, nor a shaftman in shortness.*” *Vide* Halliwell. Bailey is more accurate, as becomes a lexicographer, and calls it “*Shaftment.*”

76/437. A verb is wanting in the MS., perhaps *cley* after “*hedes.*”

81/577. *i.e.* “*lete to plannte it*”—have it planted. The “*to*” is unusual.



82/600. "bere a belle." This proverbial expression occurs in Chaucer (*Troilus*, iii. 199):—

"And let see which of you shal beare the belle  
To speake of love aright."

83/612. It would help the metre to read *cleyi*, i.e. clayey.

84/645. "roote" in this line, though explained by "radicem," is not the accusative, but the nominative to "is sowe" in next line. The first "sowe" I think is a verb active, and that *is* has found its way into the text by an error of the copyist.

84/656. "synk." It is not easy to recognize the French *cing* under this grotesque form; but it seems to have been at one time the current spelling of the word Anglicized: thus in Lydgate's "Order of Fools," edited by Mr. Furnivall in *Queene Elizabethes Achademy*, 81/51, we read: "whos chaunce gothe neither yn synke or syse."

85/668. "goo too." This expression, of such frequent occurrence in the Authorized Version of the Scriptures, answers nearly to the Latin interjection *Heus*. We meet with it also in Spenser, e.g. F. Q. 5/43, Book I. :—

"Goe to, then, O thou far-renowned sonne  
Of great Apollo."

89/795. So in MS., but *olofte*, as in<sup>t</sup> 40/1088, seems certainly required.

90/829. I and the translator's scribe have made sad havoc of this line between us. I am responsible for the omission of the verb "trede" before "hem": he has inserted an unnecessary "and"; and in the next line he has written "peres" instead of "pure."

92/877. I have no doubt it should have been "populer," as in 93/900.

93/907. So in MS., as in other places, for "seyen"—seen.

98/1049. The "pynappultree" is the common pine, on which cones or apples grow.

99/1074. "thaire," in this place and many others, is the adverb *there*, i.e. *where*.

100/1088. *i.e.* over and above six consume or sell. *Vide supra* 1069.

100/1092. So in MS., instead of "wage."

100/1096. The meaning is, "let a basket made of palm-leaves strain this wine." The punctuation is wrong.

101/1140. *ὄπὸν Κυρηναϊκόν*. The first meaning of *Opium* was only vegetable juice.

103/1172. *Sarmentes* (*scions*). Both words are in the MS.; the second is unnecessary.

106/52. I suspect some error in this line. In the original it is :  
 “nec in sabulone solum, sed in arena quoque proveniunt.”

108/128. So in MS. for *dounged*.

110/169. “armorace” or “arborace.” The translator is not always so particular about the right spelling.

110/175. This, with several ejaculations of a similar character, is due entirely to the translator.

111/191. There is a redundant word, probably “flatte.”

111/217. =That will not be denied, but flourish in all weathers.

113/247. I have remarked already on the care of the translator to show that the words which he makes to rime together have a difference of meaning. It is sometimes very slight, but he is at great pains to point out that there *is* a difference. This stanza is a good example: the word “ferme” occurs no less than three times at the end of lines; and there are Latin words placed above to mark the difference of meaning. Unhappily, the explanation of the word in the second instance of its use is not very legibly written, and there is nothing in the original answering to it. It looks like *ad firmam*, but it is more probably *affirmare*, or some other part of the verb; perhaps *adfirmandum*. After saying that it was trouble to no purpose to break the plants off, instead of pulling them up, after the first year, he adds, “therefore, set it down as a thing to affirm (‘to ferme’) that places which before were fruitful ‘close themselves,’ and become unfruitful by so doing, by reason of the roots which cumber the ground.”

113/266. *all to braye*, written as three words. In other places “allete” is made one word; but I do not remember an instance in which either *to* or *alto* is joined with the verb.

114/275. “sette” is not in the MS., but is evidently necessary: “is” is a misprint for “in.”

114/291. What is the herb here called Blite, *Lat.* Blitum, is not very clear, perhaps Spinach.

114/294. *Wordes* of the MS. should probably be *worldes*, i.e. worlds in the sense of *ages*; as we say “world without end.” So I had written, but Mr. Skeat remarks that *werdes* and *wordes* occur so often for *worlds*, that they may be considered as only different forms of the same word. There still remains, however, its peculiar signification here.

116/342. The word here rendered “togh,” and in 118/395, “tenes,” is in the original *tenacibus*, and means *stalks*.

116/351. I have put the syllable “up” in brackets as redundant.

118/412. This means “some omit the boiling.”

120/446. *Hem* seems to be wanted before "hie."

120/454, 467. It is to be noticed that these remarks are not in the original, but insertions due to the translator. There have been many such, of which no notice is given.

121/470. "There" refers to Sardinia, and this line should be in a parenthesis; the next lines to the end of the stanza describe the "ootheringe worthie memorie" which "Marcial saugh in Sardyne."

121/472. "after harme." It may not be easy to trace the descent of this word, but I have little doubt that it represents, through some channel, the German *nachamen*, to imitate. The *r* seems to present an objection to this; but we have seen our translator writing "armonaike" (23/605) for *ammoniac*.

121/489. "clere" in this line should probably have been "clese," *i.e.* close.

122/501. "Is far to fetch," therefore is slow in coming.

125/593. The author has told us what *caprifyng* "is to signifie"; but, as his text is very uncertain, the translator is to be excused if he is not very intelligible. There is nothing in the original about "a tree made like a sawe"; but the green fruit of the wild figtree is to be suspended on the tree to be ripened, with a thread run through it like *serta*, garlands, not *serra*. Pliny tells us that this was in order that a kind of gnat, which was bred in the *caprificus*, might be induced to suck out the moisture of the figtree, and so hasten its maturity.

127/641. Two syllables are wanting in MS. to complete the sense and the metre, probably "leste wynde."

127/644. There should have been a stop at the end of line 643, and again at nought, the sense being: "it is (necessary) to refuse more or less than a year, as nought," *i.e.* good for nothing.

130/722. Sic in MS.

133/800. Mr. Skeat refers me to Dr. Morris's note on Chaucer (Clarendon Press Selections) for the meaning of "steep eyes"; but in the original it is "magni." Perhaps I ought to have explained it *projecting*.

134/839. I cannot account for the omission of this line. The gap must have been conspicuous enough in the proof, but some how or other it escaped my notice. It is perfectly legible in the MS. as follows:

"That thai may mylk her foles abundance."

141/46. "craffes" in the MS., but it should no doubt be "graffes."

142/68. We need not be surprised at the wrong done to the quantity of the word *σέλινον*.

144/107. So in MS., but I suspect it should be *fervent*, not "infervent," and that the words "is sette," or some equivalent expression, have been omitted.

144/118. To agree with the original this "by" ought to mean *against*; but whether the translator so intended it is at least doubtful: his words seem rather to signify "approaching the fat rather than the lean;" whereas the original is "proximam tenui atque jejunæ." It is hardly necessary to say that *by* does sometimes mean *against*, as in 1 Cor. iv. 4.

144/125. "Nowe" of the MS. apparently should be *noo*, i.e. no, none.

148/219. These prologues and epilogues afford some very curious specimens of in-riming. Here every line is made to rime in itself as well as with its neighbour. The sense is not always rendered the clearer by this process. It looks as if "doon is," in line 220, is meant to be a plural form of the gerund, i.e. *agenda*. "Jesse floure," in the next line, calls to mind the Jesse-trees of ancient art, on which our Lord's genealogy was depicted. In 224 I have put "s" in brackets as evidently an error of the MS. "Of floures flour" is Chaucer's expression in the prologue to his "Legend of Good Women," which seems to have been in the mind of the translator whilst writing this epilogue. There is a word omitted in the MS. in l. 225, probably *cloudes*, or *worldes*. Chaucer in the forecited prologue has, "That in this derke world me wynt."

151/61. See under Peculiar Order of Words in "Grammatical Notices," *suprà*, page xx.

153/129. The last word in this line, which ought to mean "mix," or something equivalent, is not completed in the MS.; the second syllable is wanting.

154/151. "and" seems wanting in the MS. before "yet."

157/218. "That" of the MS. should probably be "Take" at the beginning of this line.

157/225. The hours which are here represented by the technical names of the division of the day in A.S. times, in the original are simply described by their number, as 1st, 2nd, 3rd, etc. In the side-note I have made one agree with the other.

157/232. The same in-riming is observable in this epilogue, the meaning of which is tolerably clear. I ought to have printed *drope* in l. 237.

159/26. This picture of the wheat-field bending to greet and express thanks for its ripeness is due entirely to the translator.

159/27. From this knowledge of French husbandry, it has been concluded, perhaps too hastily, that our Palladius must be the

“Facundus juvenis Gallorum nuper ab arvis  
Missus”

mentioned by Rutilius, as related in our preface. With respect to the cart, Barnaby Googe's account is: “Palladius teacheth, besides the labour of men, a shorter way to be done with an oxe, that shall in short time cut downe all that groweth, which was woont to be used in Fraunce. The devise was a low kind of Carre with a couple of wheeles, and the front armed with sharpe sickles, which forced by the beast through the corne did cut downe all before it. This tricke might be used in levell and champion countries; but with us it would make but ill-favoured worke.”

160/74. There is nothing in the original to decide the meaning of these French words: but as *ache*, parsley, has been mentioned before, p. 142, they are most likely *comme devant*, as Mr. Furnivall has kindly pointed out to me, to whose advice, guidance, and encouragement, whenever I have consulted him, I am greatly indebted.

162/125. “multiplie” of the MS. should be “multiplie,” to rime with “drie” in the next line.

163/143. It is to be observed here that a difference is made between noon and midday by the translator. In the original we have only the fifth and sixth hour: *i.e.* eleven and twelve o'clock.

163/148. This epilogue is free from in-riming, and presents no especial difficulty: “umne” in the first line should have been “ymne” =hymn.

167/90. This is Chaucer's phrase: he calls Constance, in the *Man of Lawe's Tale*, “the sely innocent.” Spenser speaks of “a silly lambe” becoming “the innocent prey” of a lyon in *F. Q.*, b. 1, c. 6.

168/129. There is in the MS. a faint tail to the end of *well*, which may be meant for a *y*.

170/162. The in-riming of this epilogue is most extraordinary; and in addition to the final rimes, every two lines are made to rime together in the middle. The latter part is very obscure, and the misprints make bad worse. In l. 168 it should of course be *Prince*, and *I* should be inserted before the first “mene.” For “she mine ignorance” compare 171/9. “faust nygh” in line 169 I take it to be =*hard by*, as in Spenser, *F. Q.* 1, 12, 25, “Fast before the king”; and in *F. Q.* 2, 2, 37, “Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sansloy.”

172/42. The translator has mistaken the meaning, if “fungous



stronge" are epithets of praise; but perhaps he meant the contrary, and referred "thereof" to *dounge*, not to *chaf*.

173/54. This notion of the rape and the cabbage refusing to land at the same port is due to the translator.

178. Here again observe the lines riming in the middle as well as at the end. In 213 "make" is Chaucer's word for writing poetry, adopted from the Greek *ποιητής*. In 216 "the Prince" occurs again. I do not clearly see to whom *he* refers in l. 217.

179/11. In the original it is plainly "cum minuitur Luna." The translator probably wrote, or meant to write, *Phæbe*.

179/17. So in MS., but "As" seems necessary instead of "And."

180/43. *Sic*; but there is in MS. a flourish, which may indicate an *e*. I have no doubt that Mr. Skeat is right about "Hopre"—a seed-basket, in the Latin *modium*; but for "cloth," or "clothe," we have *vestieris*. I had mistaken *hoppit* for *Hopper*, a word used twice by Chaucer in the Miller's Tale, ll. 924 and 927.

183/126. This line, printed just as in the MS., is evidently out of its place. It ought to have come before l. 124.

186/211. In this epilogue we again have the double rimes and the same sentiment, but in language more easily intelligible. I have bracketed the syllable "un" as unnecessary.

187/5. I have put the superfluous "is" in brackets. "on ende" at the close of the line is carefully explained to mean *diligently*, to justify the rime with "atte end" in the line before. The phrase generally means *completely*.

188/46. It is difficult to follow the translator here. I see nothing in the original about balancing on tiptoe, or three toes growing for one.

190/96. The word which looks like *heiry* is probably *heivy*, or some form of "heavy." It should have been printed separately from *lete*, which I take here in the intransitive sense of *stopping*, or sinking. The Latin is "propter naturæ gravitatem remanens aqua subsidet, et translatum vinum pure servabitur, relicto quicquid se ex illi ex imbre miscuerit."

191/116. There is space left in the MS. for a word before "playne."

191/128. The MS. is here manifestly faulty. One would expect it to be "And *feede* (i.e. food) it is to dust it ofte and weede." In the original we have "sarculari debet assidue, ut respergatur pulvere, quo fovetur." In what follows the translator had the old reading *nimis* instead of *minus*, which makes all the difference.



196/266. Castration of bees. The translator would seem to have read "de apibus castrandis" instead of "de alvearibus castrandis."

196/271. This benevolence towards the bees is expressed in the original without the unceremonious severity upon those who deprive them of their stores.

197. There is surely a mistake in the MS. in the heading of this section, which intimates that all these wines are made of the larger fruits, such as apples or pomes. Barnaby Googe shall tell what these are. He says, "*Pomum*, generally spoken, is to be understood of all that the Greekes comprehended in the word ὄπωρα, as peaches, quinces, and peares, whereunto the Lawyer agreeth."

197/296. In the original it is eightieth here, and fiftieth in the next line, which the metre seems to require, to say nothing of the wine.

198/305. This is rather a free translation of *utrum vendenda sit*.

198/308. The translator must have had another reading before him, or else he has strangely mistaken the meaning of *diuretica*.

199/334. *ydroken* looks like a slip of the pen for *ydronken*. The Latin word is *aperies*, and perhaps this sense may be got out of A.S. *dreogan*, German *drücken*.

200/358. This plant, the *Italian clover*, should have been written *meliblot quasi melle lotus*. *Gliciride*, or rather *glycyrize*, sweet root, is the liquorice.

200/369. A syllable is wanting; perhaps *and* before "clene."

201/404. I have at a venture supplied a syllable in brackets.

202/418. In the MS. the three last words are written separately. Modern editors incline to unite the three together. In similar expressions we may have had the prefix *to* joined to the verb or participle; and frequently *alto* written as one word; but in no case, as far as I remember, are the three words amalgamated.

203/443. *me trete*, divided in the MS., is the Greek *μετρητής*.

205/513. I have added a syllable in brackets to help the metre.

205/519. The feet spoken of are, of course, those that trod out the wine.

205/525. *Musty* bread has not a very attractive sound to our notions; but the Romans used the term to signify *new, fresh, and good*, of apples, cheeses, honey, and even books. A *musty* book would hardly be considered now-a-days one to be desired.

206/547. It will of course have been observed that all these epilogues are in the stanza of eight lines, and that they have, for the most part, been very carelessly copied by the translator's scribe. Chaucer,

probably, would not have had milder words for him than he bestowed upon his own immortal "Adam Scrivener." This stanza is provokingly full of omissions, which it is impossible to supply. The translator's freak this time is to make both the last and antepenult syllables rime: thus, "light superne" with "might eterne," "honoure, empire," with "houre and gire;" but the fourth and sixth lines limp terribly for want of their proper feet. Here again I fail to see distinctly who it is saving whose brightness there is no star in our hemisphere.

207/14. I have referred "Thei" to the harrowers; I fancy, however, from what follows, that it belongs rather to the beans. In v. 18 the MS. has the superfluous "n," which I have bracketed.

208/23. That is before sunrise: for after the full moon, sun and moon are both above the horizon at the same time.

209/69. Another redundant word.

209/76. I have here supplied the syllable in brackets.

213/165. The MS. inserts this unnecessary "and."

213/173. The initial letter of "navel," omitted in the MS., is evidently wanted, and "coart" in the next line must be a slip of the pen.

218/309. I have supplied *drie* from the Latin, and two lines below I have marked a redundancy of the MS. The brackets in every case indicate a proposed departure from the MS., whether by insertion or suppression.

220, last line but one: *dreynt*. Spenser, F. Q., also uses "drent" for *drowned*. *E.g.* in 2, 6, 49, where Archimago calls to Pyrochles in the *Idle Lake*:

"What flames," quoth he, "when I thee present see  
In danger rather to be drent than brent?"

The rest of November and the whole of December have been torn out of the MS., and destroyed. I question whether the fourteenth book, "de Insitionibus," was ever done by the same hand. Probably if he had translated it, he would have done it in prose.



## GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

---

- A, And, 34/915.  
 Ablaqueacion, Lat. (see side-note), 44/1.  
 Aboundable, abundant, 207/19.  
 Abounde, be abundant, 203/255.  
 Above seems used as a substantive, superior condition, 8/199.  
 Abrood, broadwise, across, 158/5.  
 Abroode, across, 125/586.  
 Adell, much, a deal, 19/502.  
 Admyssure, Lat. pairing of horses, 136/875.  
 Adolent, grown up, 105/30.  
 Advail, advantage, 78/497.  
 Adorate, Adorify, sweet smelling, 110/180.  
 Ador, Lat. a fine wheat, 180/41.  
 Afere, frighten, 131/750.  
 Afer, afar, 150/47.  
 Affray, commotion, 185/186.  
 Afterharme, to imitate (note), 121/472.  
 Afterlonges, lengthways, 66/139.  
 Agoo, *ad.* agoing,  
 Agrest, Lat. wild, 198/324.  
 Aisel, vinegar, 169/134.  
 Alete, to melt, be softened, 174/103.  
 Alethe, *vide* Alete, allay, 202/434.  
 Alfor, alto, thoroughly, 205/506.  
 Alight, lighted, kindled, 147/208.  
 Alite, a little, lightly, 23/621.  
 Allyng, A.S. *eallunga*, entirely, 208/42.  
 Als, else, besides, 35/948.  
 Amydwarde, towards the middle, 126/631.  
 Amende, correct, 6/139.  
 Amonge, at times, 174/86.  
 Amorwe, on the next day, torn leaf, sub finem.  
 An, one, 150/40.  
 Anende, anent, opposite, 40/1094.  
 Anende, to finish, 158/9.  
 Anende, diligently, 109/138.  
 Anyghtes, *adv.* in night time, 173/379.  
 Anoie, annoy, 108/131.  
 Anoon, anon, presently, 10/263.  
 Aparty, not apart, but somewhat, sumdel, 83/629, 85/679.  
 Apert, Lat. open, uncovered, 189/151.  
 Appeire, Fr. to deteriorate, impair, 62/41.  
 Appeson, appease, 120/418.  
 Ar, ere, before, 50/173.  
 Are, ere, before, 155/184, 181/75.  
 Arew, in a row, 25/678.  
 Arm-greete, as big as the arm, 75/412.  
 As with adjective or adverb, intensive, like *quam*, Lat., but often redundant with imperative, 16/429.  
 Ascaunce, a slope, 150/39.  
 Aslepe, sleepy, as said of ripe fruit, 59/429.  
 Askes, ashes, 22/592.  
 Aslake, *v.* remove, 38/1041.  
 Aspy, aspie, espy, 145/160.  
 Assise, to place, 16/431.  
 Assise, to adjust, to measure or weigh, 177/180.

- Assure, *verb neut.* as in Chaucer's "Troilus," 1358, rely upon, 9/214.
- Assure, "In resting thai assure," *i.e.* they are sure to rest, 146/185.
- Asswithe, quickly, 126/623.
- Astate, state, estate, 98/1036.
- Astite, quickly, soon, 16/409.
- Ataste alore, learn by the taste, 16/404.
- Athide, cover, A.S. *thydan*, 35/955.
- Atte alle, altogether, quite, 202/414.
- Atteones, once only, 94/927.
- Atteroppes, spiders, 138/945.
- Atwynne, between, 15/396.
- Atwynne, apart, 66/134.
- Auntceant, ancient, 200/364.
- Avale, to go down, descend, 177/167, 178/193.
- Avance, advance, improve, 42/1144.
- Avaylant, availing, 211/126.
- Avisily, carefully, 4/73, 73/357.
- Avowe, vow, 42/1145.
- Avyse, attend to, cure, 140/14.
- Axe, ask, 44/2, etc., etc.
- Ayenie, again, 140/1, 195/237.
- Aysell, vinegar, 93/904.
- Bake, Bak, back, 39/1068, 42/1156.
- Balk, to leave land unplowed, 8/184.
- Balke, s. land so left, 44/15.
- Barme, sauce, preserve, 220/9.
- Bay, berry, globule, 61/198.
- Begoon, adorned, covered. gold begoon, overspread with gold, as woe-begone, full of woe, *vide* Coleridge's "Glossary," 23/630.
- Begripe, grip, contain, 54/279.
- Berafte, snatched, saved, 212/140.
- Berayned, rained upon, 198/310.
- Bernetes represents the old corrupt reading for "Vervacta," fallows ploughed in spring, 105/48.
- Besily, busily, anxiously, 23/612.
- Bete, beat, to make (a fire), 19/501.
- Bethought, thoughtful, 40/1080.
- Bette, better, 113/270.
- Betwet, *qu.* bewet? wetted, 45/26.
- Bey, buy, 11/281.
- Bicornes, Lat. pitchforks, 42/1161.
- Bifornys, *pr.* anterior, in front, 159/43.
- Bigge, rich, strong, *vide* Morris's Specimens E.E., 41/1130.
- Bipedal, Lat. two feet long, 155/185.
- Blichenyng, mildew, blight, 31/827.
- Blyve, quickly, 21/521.
- Blyve, as blyve, as quick as possible, 60/445.
- Bolde, to make bold, embolden, 105/24, 151/77.
- Bold, *v. intrans.*, become strong, 215/223.
- Bole, bull, 41/1133.
- Bonchief, opposite to mischief, 5/115.
- Boon, bones, or stones, or pips of fruit, 144/110.
- Boote, A.S. benefit, 9/238.
- Borde, border, or bed, 109/150.
- Bosshing, making bushy, 188/33.
- Boteler, butler, 86/696.
- Bragot, a British liquor, 90/812.
- Brawnes, muscles, 129/575.
- Bray, bruise, 111/195.
- Brede, broad, breadth, 18/466, 47/85.
- Brede, bread, 34/911.
- Brede, make broad, spread out, 190/101.
- Breres, briars, 42/1160.
- Breses, locusts, 24/654.
- Briche, brick, 212/135.
- Broke, brook, 190/92.
- Brolles, heads, brows, 43/1166.

- Browsty, rancid, mouldy, 219/15.  
 Brustles, bristles, 27/724.  
 Brymme, brim, *subare*, *vide* Albert Way's *Prompt.*, 98/1051, 99/1070.  
 Bryning, Brenning, burning, 9/224, 127/665, 153/117.  
 Burgyne, to bud, 53/307, 74/376.  
 But, unless, 35/949, 94/934.  
 But, boot, benefit, 113/269.  
 But if, unless, 137/910, etc.  
 Buxom, obedient, 6/126.  
 By, towards, against, 1/7.  
 By & by, frequently, 208/46.  
 By, hard by, close (compare "Right by," 6/149), 108/119.  
 By dene, altogether, wholly, *vide* Stratmann's O.E. Dict., 8/184.  
 Bygrounde, to the bottom, completely, 41/1132.  
 Byraine, *v.* shower, 35/952.  
 Byrayned, rained upon, 198/307.  
 Byspreyntt, sprinkled, 106/70, 168/111.  
 Bystrowed, strowed, 92/889.  
 Bywette, Bewette, wetted, 65/125, etc.  
 Caduc, Lat. ready to fall, mellow, 89/785.  
 Caire, to go, to creep, perhaps an error of the transcriber, for *carie*, riming with *necessarie*, 143/88.  
 Calcatory, wine-press, 17/461.  
 Callum, Lat. any hard substance, 125/599.  
 Calvair, Lat. skull, 36/984.  
 Caniculer, Dog-star, hounde, 164/13.  
 Cannibe, crooked, applied to knife, suggests inquiry, 62/1157.  
 Caprify, to ripen figs (see note), 125/892.  
 Carbunculine, consisting of carbuncles, or stone coal, 216/272.  
 Carene, *vide* side-note, 204/484.  
 Carenaynes, Lat. *carenarias*, boilers, 168/130.  
 Cast, determine, 9/234.  
 Caul, Lat. stalks, 200/381.  
 Caule, Lat. stalks, 165/39.  
 Cause, to cast or shed teeth, 135/862, 135/864.  
 Cave, upon (does not seem to correspond very intelligibly with the Lat. "in quem frumenta transfusa refrigerentur"), 37/996.  
 Certayne, a certain quantity, 185/185.  
 Chappe, crack, split, 116/339.  
 Chare, chair, car, 35/957.  
 Charge, dispute, 28/744.  
 Chasten, a chestnut, 216/253.  
 Chaufe, Fr. warm, 40/1088.  
 Chaule, jaw, jowl, here the front of a cart, 159/34.  
 Chaunging, *subs.* a change, 71/63.  
 Chave, to cover or mix with chaff, 108/119.  
 Chese, chuse, 11/281.  
 Chene, chink, 17/441.  
 Chere, countenance, 196/250.  
 Chesbolles, poppies, 184/134.  
 Cheve, achieve, 50/168.  
 Cheved, succeeded, 217/297.  
 Chich, to chuck as a hen, *vide* Bailey, 25/661.  
 Childe, *v.* to bear, 190/90.  
 Chyne, chyning, a chink or crack, 41/1116.  
 Chyne, *v.* to crack, 156/199.  
 Clave, Lat. a large truncheon, 119/415.  
 Cleche, to grasp at, clutch, 145/158.  
 Cleen, claws, hoofs, 68/5.  
 Cleme, daub, smear, A.S. *clæmian*, 39/1078.  
 Cleme, to plaster up, 199/339.  
 Clenliche, cleanly, 115/311.  
 Clere (qy. clese ?), to close, 121/489.  
 Clese, close, enclose, 27/721.



- Cleve, Lat. *clivus*, declivity, 50/167.  
 Clock, to cluck as a hen, 25/660.  
 Clonge, withered, A.S. *clingan*, 55/339.  
 Cloos, close confinement, 169/141.  
 Cloothe, a cloth, 199/338.  
 Clorded, contracted, 137/919.  
 Closter, cluster, 186/194.  
 Clype, clip, 43/1164.  
 Coact, Lat. compelled, 213/174.  
 Coärted, Lat. kept close, confined, 101/1131, 213/174.  
 Cocurs, leggings, *cothurus*, vide Albert Way's *Prompt.*, 43/1167.  
 Codde, the stock of a tree, Lat. *codex*, 144/119.  
 Coffyns, boxes, 128/672.  
 Coloquynt, colocinth, colocintida, bitter apple, 34/913.  
 Columbine, dove-coloured, 14/372.  
 Colver-hous, A.S. pigeon-house, 21/554.  
 Commysure, Lat. joint, 141/42.  
 Complayne, to suffer hardships, or perhaps make level, 158/14.  
 Complose, Lat. knocked together, 175/167.  
 Comprehende, Lat. take, strike, as plants, 141/46.  
 Comyn, moderately, commonly, 142/55.  
 Condite, Lat. *condire*, to flavour, to season, 203/449.  
 Condymnt, *v.* to flavour, 205/525.  
 Condyte, Lat. stored, or preserved, 157/222.  
 Confray, to rub together, 111/196.  
 Congius, six sextarii, 169/109.  
 Congys, the Roman *congii*, 183/117.  
 Connyng, skill, 97/1015.  
 Contende, hasten, 206/532.  
 Cool, colewort, cabbage, 32/879.  
 Coors, corse, body, 4/85.  
 Cordyng, according, agreeing, 156/214, 157/224, etc.  
 Cornel, corner, 13/326.  
 Cornels, kernels, 185/163.  
 Corser, Fr. horsedealer, vide Halliwell, 135/846.  
 Cote, pigstye, 99/1081.  
 Cotul, Lat. a measure, containing about a pint, 200/383.  
 Counter, counteract, 63/66.  
 Courage, Fr. heart, mind, spirit, 190/90.  
 Couthe, could=*couth*, *cū* notus, 39/167. Stratmann's Dict. 109.  
 Covert, to cover, 6/146, 15/385.  
 Crafte, *v.* to make skilfully, 16/428, but see Stratmann.  
 Crece, increase, 9/227.  
 Crese, crush, 142/77.  
 Crodded, curded, 154/141.  
 Crofte, small field or garden, 89/796.  
 Croppe, to cut off the top, 143/92.  
 Croppes, tops of branches, 96/990.  
 Crucke, bend, twist, 51/210.  
 Crudde, curd, or rennet, 154/142.  
 Crueltee, harshness, foulness, 210/81.  
 Cuculle, Lat. hood, 43/1116.  
 Cure, care, 84/655.  
 Curiage, a herb, 37/1016.  
 Cyment, cement, 17/449.  
 Cynarbare, cinnabar, vermilion, 211/118.  
 Cyner, cinder-ash, 220/16.  
 Dalk, a hollow, 125/608.  
 Deche, *v.* cover, Germ. *decken*, 41/1124.  
 Dechyng, covering, 175/185.  
 Dede, die, 28/752.  
 Defaicte, defeat, 3/44.  
 Defervyng, boiling down, 204/485.  
 Defie, to steep, digest, 102/1160.  
 Defrut, a kind of wine, 204/484.  
 Dele, divide, distribute, 66/150, 201/395.  
 Delf, a trench, 144/117.  
 Delves, trenches, 44/6, 52/239.  
 Deme, to judge, 4/83, 163/151.

- Demene, manage, arrange, 5/95,  
19/497,  
Dene, ten, 22/587.  
Depart, *v. trans.* separate, part,  
29/779.  
Dependent, hanging, 99/1060.  
Dere, dear, 11/279.  
Dere, injury, 31/840.  
Dere, *v. to injure*, 31/840.  
Desolve, dissolve, reduce to a  
pulp, 204/496.  
Detraete, Lat. extracted, 213/171.  
Devise, Lat. *divisus*, being divided  
or distributed, 199/348.  
Devolve, roll down, remove,  
204/497.  
Devyse, Fr. to order, arrange, ad-  
vise, 61/21, etc.  
Digne, Lat. worthy, 187/7.  
Disclude, disclose, 152/84.  
Discuss, Lat. *divide*, *vide* Corri-  
genda.  
Dispense, to excuse, not to require,  
157/235.  
Distempre, to put out of health,  
11/273.  
Distreyn, subdue, 16/415.  
Disyoynt, destroy, put out of  
place, 32/273, 170/164.  
Divyne, guess, doubt, 75/410.  
Do, make, 21/561.  
Do fro, withdraw, subtract,  
214/197.  
Dolve, delved, dug, 125/582.  
Dolven, dug, 14/353.  
Doo, make, place, *e.g.* "Doo the  
rootes to," place on the roots,  
16/417, 116/356.  
Doom, judgment, 20/525.  
Doone of that, done with that,  
had enough of it, 216/263.  
Dote, decay, 28/752.  
Do to, do with, add (do fro,  
subtract, 214/197), 200/370,  
205/510.  
Dover, a hole, *vide Pr. Parv.*,  
127/654.  
Draff, refuse, lees of wine, 22/580.  
Dragmes, drachms, 169/145.  
Drenche, to drown, plunge,  
204/482.  
Dresse, Fr. prepare, 79/501.  
Drestes, A.S. dregs, 35/944.  
Dreynt, drained, drenched, strain-  
ed, pressed, 220/20.  
Drie, thirst, 132/777.  
Dripe, drop, put down, A.S.  
*dripan*, 54/277.  
Drope, drop or stain, 157/237.  
Drove, herd, 134/826.  
Drury, dreary, sad, 196/250.  
Dwyne, dwindle, 63/75.  
Echate, Hecate, the moon, 22/526.  
Eche, add, 41/1122.  
Eddres, adders, 38/1036.  
Edifie, build, 14/364.  
Eere, ear of corn, 158/16.  
Effloure, to cease flowering, 64/82.  
Efte, again, or after, 16/416.  
Efte and tries, a second and third  
time, 216/266.  
Eftsones, again, 62/27.  
Egestion, Lat. the issue or pro-  
duction of the new wine, or its  
removal from the vats, 204/449.  
Egge, edge, 16/411.  
Eghen, eyes, 23/604.  
Eitheres, either, 30/808.  
Either, both, 186/203.  
Eke, also, 38/1049, etc.  
Eke, destroy, *vid.* Halliwell, 23/608.  
Elebre, hellebore, 38/1044.  
Elles, else, 38/1031, 60/488.  
Elleveth, eleventh, 60/448.  
Elonge as the liketh, make as long  
as you like, 47/80.  
Elonge, to keep long, 126/631.  
Enable, become able, 134/834.  
Enarme, embrace, protect, 19/502.  
Enaye, annoy, 50/163.  
Encluse, inclosed, 113/261.  
Enclyne, to bend, 159/126.  
Encre, increase, 209/66.

- Encrisped, curly, 154/139.  
 Ende, on ende, diligently, diligenter in MS., 187/5.  
 Endure, harden, 90/816.  
 Endured, kept, Lat. *custodiri*, 220/8.  
 Endwell, dwell in, 17/437.  
 Ene, only, 45/44.  
 Eneye, to inoculate, 166/53.  
 Enfecte, affect, injure, 155/177.  
 Enfecte, become infected or tainted, 199/350.  
 Englame, to stick, 26/692.  
 Enlyne, anoint, 152/105.  
 Enmyne, *v.* sink or dig, 28/768.  
 Ennoyes, *adj.* annoying, 126/612.  
 Enoculer, to inoculate, 166/53.  
 Enrounde, surrounded, 22/590.  
 Enter, between, Lat. *inter*, 77/455.  
 Entere, an intimate, favourite, 11/289.  
 Enterspace, intermediate space, 47/88.  
 Epatike, Lat. *hepatic*, relating to the liver, 200/361.  
 Ere amonge, ever amonge, ever and anon, 174/86, 175/132.  
 Ere, an ear, "Enclyne an ere," 199/341.  
 Eree, *v.* to plough, to ear, 61/10.  
 Eree, ever, 62/40.  
 Ereither, either of them (or rather the two together, *vide* Note, 397/75), 32/880.  
 Erthen, sooner than, before, 208/34.  
 Erthes, ploughings, from *ere*, *q. v.* 106/68.  
 Eschewe, *adj.* Fr. odious, 20/528, 125/586.  
 Eschewe, *v.* shun, 21/553.  
 Estivons, Lat. summery, 124/580.  
 Estuant, Lat. raging, boiling, 202/304.  
 Esy, agreeable to the taste, 203/503.  
 Even, to level, 150/39.  
 Ever amonge, every now and then, 105/29.  
 Excluse, Lat. excluded, 217/278.  
 Excodication, see side-note, 44/3.  
 Exile, Lat. poor, weak, thin, 201/387.  
 Exon, oxen, 19/513.  
 Expert, experienced, 120/454.  
 Expresse, open, clear, manifest, experienced, 66/154, 188/27.  
 Externe, *v.* alienate, 186/218.  
 Eyles, eyeless, 81/564.  
 Eyron, eggs, 22/582.  
 Eyther, *conj.* either, 2/25.  
 Fande, tried, attempted, 80/551.  
 Far, Lat. a kind of corn, 207/1.  
 Fare, to go, to be, to fare, 102/437.  
 Faust, fast, *i.e.* faust nygh, hard by, near, 170/169.  
 Faute, failure, 129/699.  
 Fayne, desirous, 188/38.  
 Fecundare, fruitful, 36/985.  
 Feel, many, 92/869.  
 Feestern, to fester, 188/49.  
 Feetly, actively, carefully, 169/142.  
 Feint, *v.* to make faint, 100/1090.  
 Feire, fair, also to go, 125/550.  
 Felawe, fellow, 80/553.  
 Fele, A.S. many, 41/1109, etc.  
 Fenestell, Lat. window, 20/546.  
 Fer or ferre, far, 18/471.  
 Fer of, to be afraid of, 48/130.  
 Ferdfull, terrible, 130/704.  
 Fere, frighten, 159/44.  
 Fere, *v.* to remove, 36/1036.  
 Ferme, first, 113/547.  
 Ferment, Lat. leaven, 205/524.  
 Ferne, to cover with fern, 13/338.  
 Fers, fierce, 111/206.  
 Fervence, boiling heat, 203/444.  
 Feste, feast, entertainment, 153/106.  
 Fette, fetched, brought, 76/437, 111/192.  
 Fette, remove, 210/88.

- Feture, breeding, 131/731.  
 Feverer, February, 50/178.  
 Firthe, fourth, 126/621.  
 Flappe, to beat, "To all to flappe,"  
 to beat much, 156/194.  
 Flete, *v.* flit, part, 214/211.  
 Flette, flat, a floor, 18/474.  
 Flevme, phlegm, 168/125.  
 Fleyke, basket, hurdles, wattles,  
 11/275, 92/881, 216/248.  
 Flonge, flung; to flonge, flung on,  
 179/11.  
 Foil, leaf, 145/144.  
 Fold, wrapped, folded, 144/127.  
 Folde, bend, 81/557, 88/774.  
 Fonde, strive, try to go, 185/168.  
 Fonde, found, 187/11.  
 Fonge, to lay hold, 189/76.  
 Fonne, catch, be caught, 33/910.  
 Foolde, mountain-ash tree,  
 27/1021, 88/774.  
 Foote, to found, to establish,  
 12/318.  
 Foothoote, speed (with foothoote,  
 immediately), see Warton,  
 52/228.  
 For, in many places, against,  
 19/512.  
 Fordoo, destroy, 168/112.  
 Fore, for, 62/25.  
 Forfare, fare ill, 138/931.  
 Forferde, greatly afraid, 109/160.  
 Forkes, Lat. *furcas*, props used in  
 building, 20/922.  
 Forme, first, 60/447.  
 Formest, first, foremost, 72/317,  
 190/93.  
 Fornis warde, towards the fur-  
 nace, 40/1086.  
 Forthi, therefore, for this, 22/582.  
 Fortunate, *v. act.* to make fortu-  
 nate, 7/180.  
 Forwe, furrow, 150/36, etc.  
 Forwepe, waste by weeping,  
 102/1149.  
 Foryelde, requite, 12/311.  
 Foule, fowl, 22/627.  
 Founde, try, endeavour, 42/1137.  
 Frame, blend, 42/1138.  
 Frape, Fr. *frappe*, beaten, pounded,  
 203/418.  
 Frayels, frails, light baskets,  
 204/494.  
 Fresshe, to make freshe, 11/291.  
 Frete, eat (forfreaten, eaten away),  
 73/331.  
 Frigiditee, cold or cool place,  
 108/124.  
 Frough, crisp, brittle, short to the  
 taste, 84/662, 85/671, etc.  
 Frote, rub, 16/433, 25/683.  
 Frottes, probably a mistake of the  
 MS. for frostes, frosts, 55/302.  
 Fundament, foundation, 12/316.  
 Fungous, spongy, 172/42, but *vide*  
 Note.  
 Gage, Fr. measure, 119/427.  
 Gage, to engage, claim, 190/79.  
 Garth, garden, 29/778.  
 Gaseyn, marsh, Fr. *gazon*, 2/36.  
 Gedroken, see Ydroken, 199/334.  
 Geet, jet, 129/471.  
 Gentil, generous, thoroughbred,  
 86/71, 132/779.  
 Gentillesse, Fr. good birth, 188/28,  
 Germyne, to bud, 208/48.  
 Geson, rare, 106/65. See Strat-  
 mann's Dictionary.  
 Gesse, guess, or do by guess,  
 200/385.  
 Gestes, guests, 21/574.  
 Gey (qy. Wey), weigh, balance,  
 188/46.  
 Gire, gird, protect, 13/327.  
 Gireth, Lat. encircles, 186/203.  
 Gisily, ingeniously (from gise, a  
 method), 75/409.  
 Gladde, cheerful, sunny, of land,  
 44/8.  
 Glade, gladden, 84/648.  
 Gliry, glutinous, 16/412.  
 Glocke, to shake violently,  
 168/131.

- Glose, fondle, 132/758.  
 Goldes, marigolds, 110/174.  
 Gomes, gums, 58/389, 135/863.  
 Gouldes, endive, 26/702.  
 Grave, to dig, bury, 150/45.  
 Grece, steps, 18/863.  
 Gree, degree, 121/471.  
 Greet, grit, 15/405.  
 Greithe, *v.* prepare, 128/689.  
 Grene, a gren, a snare, 110/164.  
 Grete to make great, 52/241 ;  
 grow great, 97/1025, 149/6.  
 Grete, to greet, salute, 159/25.  
 Greves, groves, 49/149.  
 Greyne, grain or pips, 89/805.  
 Greythed, prepared; in the original  
*parata*, see Morris's Specimens,  
 62/35.  
 Grobbe, to grub, or dig up, 164/6.  
 Grobbes, grubs, 160/63.  
 Groissyng, explained by *stridens*,  
 14/357, perhaps the French  
*grossir*, gritty, 3/59.  
 Gross, Lat. a green fig, 126/633.  
 Grount, ground, bottom, 176/154.  
 Gurgolions, weevils, 18/485.
- Haftte, spear-handle ; it is also a  
 rough measure called haft-man ;  
*vide* Ray, 115/311.  
 Halde, poured, 101/1115.  
 Hale, to drag, 132/771.  
 Hale, *v. intrans.* pour, hail,  
 197/284.  
 Half, part, side, 37/1002. (So in  
 Sir J. Mandeville, "O griffon is  
 more strong than viii Lyons  
 such as been of this half.")  
 Half, side, every half, on all sides,  
 154/144.  
 Halvendele, half-part, 41/1123.  
 Happe, chance, 86/710.  
 Happe, Fr. fasten, 68/214.  
 Haras, Lat. stables, pigsties, etc.  
 Here it seems to represent the  
 French *haras*, studs, 134/820.
- Hardes, shells, husks, 169/135.  
 Hardnesse, Lat. *duramenta*, the  
 hard wood of vines, 69/240.  
 Harme, *vide* after, 21/472.  
 Haunt, practise, follow, O. Fr.  
*hanter*, 61/196.  
 "He" is used in a peculiar manner,  
 like the Greek *τις*, 105/52.  
 Hede, grow to head, 192/156.  
 Heedles, headless, 32/881.  
 Heer, here, or rather *higher*,  
 "supra hæc podia," 39/1058.  
 Heer, hair, 193/180.  
 Hegge, hedge, 59/438.  
 Helde, A.S. to pour, 41/1132.  
 Heldes, slopes, 165/22.  
 Hele, heal, 22/597.  
 Hele, healthy, hale, 3/46.  
 Heled, covered, 20/524.  
 Helthes, health, 12/301.  
 Hent, to catch or throw, 42/1151.  
 Hente or hende, kind, gracious,  
 186/216.  
 Her, their, 11/291, etc.  
 Herde, *adj.* hard, 41/1122.  
 Herde, *sub.* tow, 41/1122.  
 Her on, here on, 317/383.  
 Here oon, their own, 211/107.  
 Herre, higher, 77/445.  
 Hervest, autumn, 10/260, 113/252,  
 etc.  
 Hery, hairy, 78/874.  
 Hete, promise, 94/936.  
 Heven, *intrans.* to rise, 181/75.  
 Hewe, hue, colour, 99/1063.  
 Hie, hasten, 99/1076, 208/32.  
 Hie, high, 209/58.  
 Hinge, hang, 148/223.  
 Hocked, hooked, 42/1154.  
 Hockes, caterpillars, 32/882.  
 Hode, cover as with a hood,  
 86/717.  
 Hokes, hooks, bills, 42/1159.  
 Hoketh, curved into a hook,  
 111/202.  
 Holgh, hollow, 70/757.  
 Holsum, wholesome, 2/34.



- Home, closely, thoroughly, 147/192.  
 Honge, hang, 114/285.  
 Hoote, hotly, quickly, 179/7.  
 Hopre, seed basket, or measure, 186/43.  
 Hoole, whole, wholesome, sound, 42/77.  
 Horne, hoof, 133/795.  
 Howe, to hew down, 151/60.  
 Huls, to reap hastily, *cum strepitu metere*, 160/56.  
 Husbonde, husbandman, 40/1080, 43/1168, 75/593.  
 Hutte, clod, 60/188.
- Iche, each, 114/291.  
 Idus, Lat. 13th or 15th day of Roman months reckoned from the Nones, 45/29.  
 Iliche, equality, 7/167.  
 Immyn, free from, 157/237.  
 Implayne, plaster, 18/479.  
 Incrementacion, means of increase, 217/294.  
 Indistinctly, without distinction, 98/1064.  
 Inflatoun, flatulence, 205/504.  
 Insolent, Lat. unaccustomed, 209/57.  
 Instinct, instigated, 167/104.  
 Intort, towards, 56/344.  
 Inwith, within, 101/1133.
- Jape, trick, deceit, 100/1104.  
 Joyfulliche, joyfully, 215/222.
- Kades, Lat. *cadus*, casks, 199/331.  
 Kalendes, Lat. the first day of the Roman month, 62/29.  
 Kake, cake, 214/203.  
 Kark, to care, 129/701.  
 Katrefoil, i.e. *quatrefeuille*, having four leaves, 191/118.  
 Kepe, *sub.* care, taketh keep, cavete, 58/406, 104/6.
- Kepe, *v.* to care, "No thing thai kepe," *nil curant*, 216/270.  
 Kerve, carve, cut, 72/308.  
 Kirf, cutting, 8/190.  
 Kirtils, coats, 16/417.  
 Kitte, kytte, to cut, "to doone to kitte," to have cut, 151/67.  
 Konne, know, 208/26.  
 Ky, cow, 166/65.  
 Kyen, cows, 130/707.  
 Kynde, kind or nature, 65/123, 163/132, etc.  
 Kytte, cut, 6/127.
- Laak, fault, lack, 136/895.  
 Laier, *vide* Leir, from A.S. *leger*.  
 Lamber, lambron, lambs, 145/155.  
 Langh, long, 38/1033.  
 Lappe, *v.* to wrap, 57/373.  
 Lappe, lop, loppings, 150/45.  
 Laste, late, 184/155, etc.  
 Latte, late, 198/303.  
 Lattest, latest, last, 14/364.  
 Latteth, makes late, 192/133.  
 Leche, leach, doctor, 211/129.  
 Lede, cover with lead, 177/175.  
 Lede, to lade or load; overlede, oppress, 182/101.  
 Leef, desirable, 129/687.  
 Leendes, loins, 129/683.  
 Lefte, dear, beloved, 142/55.  
 Legge, to lay, 22/583.  
 Leide, laid, 129/683.  
 Leir, lair, place. So Barnaby Goodge (p. 17, B.), says "a good Husbond must consider what crop is best for every layer," 3/52.  
 Lemes, lights, *vide* Way's Notes, Prompt. Parv., 157/229.  
 Lene, make lean, macerate, 90/810.  
 Lene, leanness, 140/14.  
 Lere, learn, 3/45.  
 Lerved, taught, 144/128.  
 Lese, lose, destroy, 35/948, 87/737.  
 Lese, to select, gather, 165/48.



- Leson, loosen, 71/292.  
 Lest, lost, 77/462.  
 Lesure, injury, 87/733, 134/825.  
 Lete make, let make, to have made, 12/310.  
 Lethe, mitigate, regulate, adjust, 159/45.  
 Lette, hinder, 45/39.  
 Leve, to grow to leaf, 71/276.  
 Leve, A.S. to remain, 176/150.  
 Lever, preferable, rather, more desirable, 38/1046.  
 Levy, leafy, 121/486.  
 Leys, fallows, novales, see Tusser on January, "Ley lands or lease, Break up if you please," 46/76.  
 Leyt, lightning, 70/272.  
 Lief, leave, 72/315.  
 Lift, left, 130/718.  
 Lifte, lively, 133/793.  
 Ligge, lie, 109/157.  
 Like, likely, 156/199.  
 Like, mild, 45/32.  
 Liking, aspect, favour, 3/46.  
 Likyng, pleasing thing, dainty, 132/699.  
 List, listen, attend, 159/145.  
 Lite, little, 26/689, 31/836.  
 Lithe, kind, 61/8.  
 Loith, for *leith*, lays it down, 25/661.  
 Loken, locked, 163/153.  
 Loment, Lat. a mash, a mess, 200/366.  
 Lomes or Loomes, A.S. vessels, 203/447, 204/478.  
 Lone, lane, passage, 177/170.  
 Longe, owing to, "On the soil it is longe," *i.e.* it is owing to the soil, 61/194.  
 Longe-woo, lung-woe, consumption, 3/50.  
 Longes, lungs, 3/49.  
 Longeth, belongeth, 189/66.  
 Lough, rich, *vide* lough, 50/184.  
 Lorne, lost, 25/663.  
 Loues, loaves, cakes, 205/522.  
 Lough, low, 72/304.  
 Loure, to look dull, or ill, 144/121.  
 Louting, bending, bowing, 209/62.  
 Luke, lukewarm, tepid, 131/731.  
 Luys, lice, 23/608.  
 Lyarde, grey-coloured horse, 133/806.  
 Lygge, to lie, *vide* Ligge.  
 Lymous, Lat. muddy, 176/139.  
 Lyne, flax, 208/28.  
 Lynyment, Lat. a substance to smear casks with, 202/440.  
 Lysardes, lizards, 39/1056.  
 Lyst, *imp.* the lyste, you please, 17/466, etc.  
 Maath, maketh, 120/457.  
 Magma, Lat. dregs, Crocomagma, dregs of saffron, 199/351.  
 Magre, Fr. *malgre*, in spite of, mauger, 206/551.  
 Make, timber, 59/437.  
 Mal, *v.* to hammer, 44/17, 122/517.  
 Male, apple, 216/246, etc.  
 Malthes, cements, stuccos, Lat. 41/115.  
 Malves, mallows, 147/206.  
 Margh, marrow, 21/479.  
 Mary, marrow, 195/236.  
 Mascul, male, 201/412.  
 Mater, matter, material, 208/49.  
 Matier, Lat. *materia*, wood, 70/282.  
 Mayne, vigour, main, 36/870.  
 Me. This is not always the personal pronoun, but seems to be an abbreviation of "men," and corresponds to the French *on*. Thus, in the first stanza, "What mon me moost enforme," what man is to be instructed, or one has to inform, and so on. See Stratmann's Dict. voce *man*.  
 Meath, mead, 54/282, 90/812.  
 Meddel, to mix, 118/413.  
 Mede, meadow, 208/29.

- Medessyng, medicine, 29/799.  
 Medietee, half, 208/34.  
 Medled, mixed, 27/596.  
 Meene, less, minor, 64/81.  
 Meete, sufficient quantity, 199/336.  
 Melch, *adj.* full of milk, 99/1080.  
 Mele, apple, and any tree bearing fruit of that kind, *vide* Barnaby Googe, 91/838, etc.  
 Mele, tablemele, bed by bed, tabulatin, 66/148. See Stratmann's Dict. in voce *mêl*.  
 Melincoly, ill-temper, 136/883.  
 Melle, to mix, 92/868.  
 Mene, middle, intermediate, 4/79.  
 Mene, centre, Fr. *moyen*, 75/389.  
 Menge, or mynge, mix, 13/350.  
 Merge, Lat. a layer, 208/34.  
 Mervaille, Fr. marvellous, like wonder, 143/96.  
 Messe, mass, 86/708.  
 Mete, meat, 86/708.  
 Mete, measure, 75/406.  
 Mete, *adj.* moderate, 49/158,  
 Metrete, *Μετρητης*, a measure of about twelve gallons, 203/443.  
 Mette, measure, 86/708.  
 Mewe, aviary, 20/526, 125/583.  
 Mirt, myrtle, 21/568.  
 Mo, moo, more, 42/1152, etc.  
 Molde, moldewarp, mole, 34/924, 108/130.  
 Molsh, soft, 49/141.  
 Molton, melted, liquid, 54/281.  
 Mon, man, 1/2.  
 Mone, month, 45/29.  
 Moost, must, 78/849.  
 Morter, Lat. *mortarium*, a hole in the ground, like a mortar, 108/116.  
 Mose, to cover with moss, 74/365.  
 Moughthes, moths, 138/945.  
 Mousdon, dun-coloured, like a mouse, 133/812.  
 Moushered, dun-haired, 136/893.  
 Munyte, Lat. fortified, 157/223.  
 Must, new wine, *passim*.  
 Musty, made with must or leaven, 205/525.  
 Myddyng, dunghill, 28/750.  
 Myght, strength, 39/1068.  
 Mylde, millet, 21/556.  
 Mylge, dig round, molsh, 74/365.  
 Myliair, Lat. a vessel with pipes for supplying a bath, 40/1093.  
 Myne, mineral, 14/374.  
 Myne, dig, as in undermine, 73/34.  
 Mynge, mix, 13/350.  
 Mynt, money, 99/1069.  
 Myres, *gen.* of mire, miry, marshy, 35/966.  
 Myrous, wonderful, 117/858.  
 Myscheve, fare ill, 23/614.  
 Myslike, displeas, 122/515.  
 Myttens, gloves, mittens, 43/1167.  
 Myxe, a damson, 98/1032.  
 Nal, nail, 51/199.  
 Namely, especially, 12/306.  
 Nare, are not, 136/888.  
 Nasse, was not, 136/886.  
 Nath, hath not, 7/176.  
 Neet, bull, 19/506.  
 Nelde, needle, 22/662.  
 Ner, nor or never, 135/860.  
 Nere, never, 154/154.  
 Neute, newt, eft, 92/865.  
 Nolde, would not, 186/215.  
 Nones, fifth or seventh day of Roman month, reckoned from the Calends, 98/131.  
 Noothing, nothing, "for noothing," on no account, 217/275.  
 Norice, nurse, 24/646.  
 Nors, nurse, 105/35.  
 Nought, useless (nought atte al, altogether worthless), 205/507, etc.  
 Nowe, no, *nullus*, 144/155.  
 Nowe and nowe, immediately, 178/189.  
 Noyous, noisome, annoying, 18/485.  
 So Spenser, F. Q. 1, 11, 50, "noyous night."

- Nygh, to approach, 9/226.  
 Nyghtertale, night-time, 33/910.  
 So in Chaucer's Prologue to  
 C. T. v. 97.  
 Nyl, will not, 53/246.  
 Nys, is not, 77/450, 204/488.
- Object, *part.* placed in the way,  
 131/743, 211/124.  
 Observed, kept, preserved,  
 116/332.  
 Obumbre, Lat. shade, 207/13.  
 Occasion, Lat. harrowing, 207/11.  
 Offed, divided into cakes, *offas*,  
 26/687.  
 Olde, old age, waning, eld,  
 59/439.  
 Olofte, above, 40/1080.  
 Ones, once, 25/672.  
 Ones, "atte ones," at one time,  
 180/22.  
 Onys, once, 98/1033.  
 Oo, one, or  $1\frac{1}{2}$  *sesquipedalibus*,  
 96/994.  
 Oon, one, 18/469, 116/833.  
 Oone, oven, 215/235.  
 Or, ere, before, 6/138.  
 Or, o'er, *i.e.* over, 38/1032.  
 Or long, overlong, 14/59. So in  
 Hampole's *Pricke of Conscience*.  
 Ose, ooze, 175/116.  
 Oste, oven, kiln for malt, 17/457.  
 Other, otherwise, else, 26/687.  
 Other, outhor, or, else, 26/687,  
 110/174.  
 Otherwhiles, time after time,  
 occasionally, year after year,  
 166/65.  
 Ough, ought, anything, 3/53.  
 Oures, hours, 168/131.  
 Outetake, except, 28/758.  
 Oute-trie, to choose out, 216/257.  
 Outher, either, 36/976.  
 Outseeth, project, or look out-  
 wards, 135/868.  
 Outtrie, choose out, 19/514.  
 Outwith, without, beyond, 12/317.
- Over-colde, excessive cold, 189/54.  
 Overflame, spread over, 42/1139.  
 Overheled, covered over, 44/15.  
 Overward, across, 66/139.  
 Overwhelve, overwhelm, as in  
 Chaucer, 29/781.  
 Overwrie, cover over, 113/260.  
 Owe, ought, 149/5. *Vide* Corri-  
 genda.  
 Owen, own, *suus*, 25/674.
- Palmy, made of palm-leaves,  
 203/458.  
 Pane, pain, malady, 52/879.  
 Parcel, a part, 189/73.  
 Parget, plaster of a wall, 16/414.  
 Partie, part, a partie, partly,  
 197/278.  
 Parties, parts, 27/725.  
 Pastyne, Lat. well - prepared  
 ground, 210/86.  
 Pastynyng, Lat. preparing ground  
 for vines, 29/772.  
 Pedifect, tendrils, little feet,  
 117/375.  
 Pere, *intrans.* to pour, 195/243.  
 Peire, Lat. perish, 95/964.  
 Peire, impair, 180/28.  
 Pellet, a pellicle or skin, 154/144.  
 Penne, pen, pipe, 177/186.  
 Pensel, pencil, or brush, 146/165.  
 Perflable, Lat. pervious to the  
 wind, 37/1002.  
 Pese, pea, 181/64.  
 Peson, peas, 106/68.  
 Petifet, Lat. *pediculos*, small  
 stalks, 93/902.  
 Picke, pitch, 186/194.  
 Picoys, pickaxe, 42/1153.  
 Pik, pitch, 157/223.  
 Pike, 186/194.  
 Piles, pillars, 40/1089.  
 Pilgramage, pilgrimage, 198/305.  
 Pipe, large cask, 57/382.  
 Pipes, veins, 58/389.  
 Piste, spikenard, 201/411.

- Pitch, to place, 127/657.  
 Pitche, cover with pitche, 89/795.  
 Pichelonges, headlong, 150/42.  
 Plage, Lat. wound, 75/396.  
 Pleche, plash, interlace, 73/330.  
 See Shakespear, *Much Ado*,  
 "thick pleached."  
 Plie, fold, spread, apply, 55/306.  
 P'ymment occurs in 9/231, and  
 11/278. It is evidently an  
 abbreviation, intended perhaps  
 for *prominent*, used substantively  
 for a president, or foreman. In  
 each case it is the same word in  
 the original, viz. *præsul*.  
 Poche, bag, 118/408.  
 Pointe, *v.* to prick, 208/46.  
 Poire, poor, 61/3.  
 Pole, pool, 17/442.  
 Pomly, spotted, dapple (as in  
 Chaucer, Prologue to C. T., 616),  
 133/809.  
 Ponne, pan, 33/909.  
 Portulake, Lat. *pursulain*, 23/603,  
 196/246.  
 Pose, lay down, assert, 11/285.  
 Potage-ware, potherbs, 160/57.  
 Potte, a hole, Lat. *puteus*, 17/564.  
 Poury, Fr. *pourri*, corrupt, 3/39.  
 Povert, poverty, 296/270.  
 Powder-caste, covered with dust  
 or fine earth, *pulveratae*, 164/12.  
 Prasocoride, Gk. a kind of moth,  
 35/953.  
 Prickker, rider, 135/845.  
 Prike, to race, ride, 135/858.  
 Prike, search for, select, 182/87.  
 Procuracion, Lat. care, attention,  
 214/193.  
 Profluent, Lat. spreading, 209/56.  
 Prophaned, revealed, made public,  
 31/147.  
 Propurtee, property, peculiarity,  
 165/23.  
 Provyne, to prepare the vine,  
 208/31.  
 Prow, profit, advantage, 98/1040.  
 Pryk, a pointed instrument, a  
 skewer, 11/214.  
 Pugges, refuse of corn (see Halli-  
 well), 99/1079.  
 Pulle, *v.* to stagnate with pools,  
 4/89.  
 Pulles, pools, 38/1032.  
 Punyk, Carthaginian, *punicum*  
*malum*, pomegranate, 95/951.  
 Pure, pour, 55/327.  
 Pusk, Lat. *posca*, wine and vine-  
 gar, 121/526.  
 Putacioun, Lat. pruning, 209/50.  
 Puttes, pots, 53/253.  
 Pyjon, pigeon, 184/145.  
 Pynne, pain, injury, 37/1006.  
 Pypyned, furnished with pips,  
 63/72.  
 Quenche, *ob. int.* to be extin-  
 guished, 175/127.  
 Querne, mill, 31/831.  
 Quod, said, 76/420.  
 Quysht, quist, couscot, Strat-  
 mann's Dictionary, "avis palus-  
 tris," 28/758.  
 Quyte, *v.* quit, acquit, requite,  
 8/185.  
 Radish, root, 32/876.  
 Raf, rubbish, 31/827.  
 Rain-beronne, overrun by rain,  
 160/73.  
 Ramal, old wood, 71/292. Lat.  
*rami inutilis*. See Halliwell,  
 under Ramel-wood.  
 Rancoure, rancidity, 191/111.  
 Rapte, Lat. seized, crushed,  
 216/273.  
 Rathe, early, to rathe, too soon;  
 ratherest, soonest, 45/39, 67/151.  
 Rather thenne, sooner than,  
 173/66.  
 Raught, reached, developed,  
 stretched, A.S. *ræcan*, 129/682.  
 Raves or rabes, rapes, 110/170.  
 Rebel, rebellious, 131/756.

- Reclude, shut, 39/1069, 218/1308.  
 Rede, to advise, 57/370, 192/159.  
 Redes, ridges, 112/219, 209/73.  
 Reke, rush, hasten, 8/194.  
 Relent, loosened, 137/908.  
 Remewe, remove, 29/777, 54/280.  
 Rene, rank, row, reign, domain,  
*réne*, Dr. Stratmann takes to be  
 O.Dutch *ren* (*reen*), Dan. Swed.  
*ren* (*reen*), O.Fr. *rein* f., M. H.  
 Germ. *rein* m. limes, which in  
 Yorkshire is *rain*, 3/61, 7/159.  
 So in Spenser, F. Q. 6, 2, 9,  
 "In all this forest and wild  
 woody raine."  
 Repe, a handful or sheaf, 163/135.  
 Repercusse, Lat. reflected, driven  
 back, 208/23.  
 Repman, reaper, 158/18.  
 Repose, put back, 56/334.  
 Repreve, reproof, 49/151. The  
 old reading was "reprobatu-"  
 Gesner's "approbatur."  
 Restyf, restive, stiff, 181/73.  
 Revire, revive, *revivere*, 53/259.  
 Rewe, row, turn, 71/290.  
 Rewe, have pity, rue, 137/911.  
 Reyne, rain, 77/442.  
 Rigges, ridges, 42/1151.  
 Right by, close by, near, 105/27.  
 Risshy, rushy, made of rushes,  
 204/494.  
 Robell, rubble, 13/340.  
 Rody, ruddy, red, 159/25.  
 Roggy, rough, rugged, 180/86.  
 Rong, rank, uliginous, 50/169.  
 Rope, reaped, 183/127.  
 Rote, rot, 28/750.  
 Route of, Fr. drive off in confu-  
 sion, mix all of a heap, 201/397.  
 Rovyng, roofing, 15/383.  
 Rowe, rough, 150/31.  
 Rowe, to cut in rows, 160/54.  
 Rowne, scream, or roar like the  
 wind, 154/156.  
 Rucul, the animal, cankerworm,  
 32/355.  
 Rucul, the plant, rocket, 31/353.  
 Ruge, Lat. wrinkle, 20/704.  
 Rule, line, row, 123/156.  
 Runcle, wrinkled, 129/679.  
 Russet, brown, 31/830.  
 Ryving, splitting, 212/140.  
 Ryvullynge, wrinkling, 196/258.  
 Sadd, *v.* to sadden, 14/378.  
 Sadde, firm, steady, 8/193.  
 Saluting, bowing, bending, *vide*  
 Louting, 209/62.  
 Saly, sallow, willow, 212/139.  
 Sape, Lat. a kind of new wine,  
 102/1143.  
 Sarce, to strain, 202/414.  
 Sation, Lat. sowing, 207/9.  
 Saufly, safely, 18/483.  
 Saunez, Fr. *sans*, without, 101/1122.  
 Save, safe, 36/973.  
 Save of, safe from, 36/982.  
 Savelles, Fr. *sable*, sands, 14/353.  
 Saver, smell, 28/751.  
 Sayne, seyne, say, 35/346-7.  
 Scalls, scab, 154/138.  
 Scars, sparingly, 124/557.  
 Scathe, detriment, harm, 40/1106,  
 41/1115.  
 Selak (qu. slack), loose, crumbling,  
 173/72.  
 Scobes, Lat. sawdust, 93/901.  
 Scole, school, discipline, 44/14.  
 Scopes, Lat. bundles, 84/643.  
 Score, to shear, to cut, 153/119.  
 Scorf, scurf, dandruff, 154/138.  
 Scorne, cutting, sharpness, 151/50,  
 154/147.  
 Scrapes, scrapers, 125/849.  
 Scriple, scruple, 59/418.  
 Scyment, cement, 156/190.  
 Sede, to plant, 151/71.  
 Sedness, saving, 10/256.  
 Seeforth, seaweed, 116/335.  
 Seek, sick, 211/110.  
 Seekle, sickly, 107/99.  
 Sek or seek, sick, 25/665, 94/939.



- Seetes, seats, 49/1094.  
 Seeth, boil, seethe, 17/445, 10/256.  
 Segges, sedges, 17/445, 20/525.  
 Sekirly, surely, 31/843.  
 Sekkul, sickly, 192/139.  
 Sekur, secure, confident, 175/115,  
 216/267.  
 Selde or seelde, seldom, 94/922.  
 Sely, simple, weak, harmless,  
 167/190.  
 Semycicle, half, 169/148.  
 Sene, look, examine, 16/410.  
 Senowy, sinewy, 129/684.  
 Senvey, mustard, 169/149.  
 Seriol, Lat. a small cask, 118/393.  
 Sete, suitable, pleasant, sweet,  
 59/420, 120/457.  
 Seth, since, 27/735.  
 Sevum, Lat. tallow, 42/1141.  
 Sewe, follow, pursue, 21/474,  
 146/181.  
 Sewe, pursuit, 146/184.  
 Sextar, Lat. *sextarius*, a pint,  
 58/146.  
 Shalkes, chalk, 94/927.  
 Share, sharp, rough, A.S. *scearp*,  
 137/900.  
 Sharnebodde, sharnbug, beetle,  
 173/60. Mr. Furnivall refers  
 me to the E.E.T.S. ed. of *Ayen-*  
*bite of Inwyt*, p. 61, "þet byeþ  
 þe ssarnbodes þet beuleþ (= fly  
 from) þe floures, and louieþ  
 þet dong." Also Gower's "Like  
 to the sharnebudes kynde." In  
 the Eastern Counties *boud*=  
 weevil; *boud*, Lat. *mals*.  
 Shent, ruined, 8/189.  
 Shog, to shake, 198/322.  
 Shor, short, soon, 182/88.  
 Side or syde, wide, vast, 98/1052.  
 Sie, sink, descend, 198/326.  
 Sith, A.S. afterwards, 111/215.  
 Sithe, times, 141/28.  
 Skeppes, baskets, 190/105.  
 Skewed, piebald, variegated,  
 skewbald, spotted, 26/703.  
 Slade, valley, 177/176.  
 Slake, to pour gently, 145/146;  
 to slacken, fall off, retire, 158/56.  
 Sle, slay, 34/912.  
 Sleek, a kind of earth like coal,  
*carbunculus* 49/152.  
 Slen, to slay, 77/453.  
 Slevying, a slip of a vine or cut-  
 ting, 67/162, 185/164.  
 Sloute, to slit, perhaps *slonte*,  
 104/12.  
 Slygh, ingenious, 145/162. So  
 in Chaucer's *Troilus*.  
 Slyke, sleek, 26/689.  
 Smeke, smoke, 160/69.  
 Smert, smart, 35/940.  
 Smolder, *sub.* smoke, 34/929.  
 Smyke, smoke, 200/362.  
 Smylle, smell, 183/122.  
 Snewe, to snow, to scatter, 199/332.  
*So so* after *but*, indifferently,  
 217/294.  
 Soconde, assistance, 37/1019.  
 Socoure, afford succour, 36/978.  
 Solar, Lat. *solarium*, summer  
 apartment, 155/176.  
 Sonder, separate, 94/145.  
 Soote, A.S. sweet, 77/446, 192/147.  
 Soote, sooty, black, 94/942.  
 Sore, severely ("to sore," too  
 decidedly, 211/122), 106/74.  
 Sough, sewer, "locus pro fimo  
 boum," 19/515.  
 Souke, suck, 187/16.  
 Sowne, sound, 147/194. So in  
 Spenser, F. Q. 1, 41.  
 Splatte, to press down flat, 48/123.  
 Splay, display, spread, 23/625,  
 83/683.  
 Spende, *v.* to expend, to con-  
 sume, 99/1069.  
 Spende, *part.* consumed, used (not  
 sold, *vide* 167/100), 123/540.  
 Spild, ruined, 118/402.  
 Spille, failure, 170/164.  
 Spir, sprout, 98/1034.  
 Spreyne, sprinkle, 192/161.



- Spring, spryng, sprinkle, scatter, spread in 32/876, "springeth their radishes," *i.e.* sprinkle their root, 24/649, etc.
- Sprongen, risen, 74/377.
- Spronke, shoot, sprout, 211/116.
- Squorges, scourges, *flagella*, vine cuttings, 65/113.
- Stale, stalk, plant, 194/194.
- Stalons, stallion-horses, 132/779.
- Stalons, bulbs, onions, 113/267, 126/635.
- Stampe, to bruise or press down in any way, 218/305.
- Stanche, closely, staunchly, 208/315.
- Stanry, stony, probably an error in the MS., 86/701.
- Staphisagre, *staphis agria*, wild vine, 32/596.
- Stede, a place, 8/204, 141/40.
- Steine, stone, jar, amphora, 102/1165.
- Steke, to stick, to be crowded, 150/32.
- Stele, stalk, but *vide* Stile, 209/77.
- Stene or stone, Lat. *amphora*, about nine gallons, 116/334.
- Stept, steeped, 214/217.
- Stere, to stir, 158/12.
- Stering, stirring, loose, said of ground, 49/141; active, said of mules, 135/852.
- Sterve, die, Ger. *sterben*, 34/931.
- Stewe, fishpond, 28/769.
- Steyth, steady, 136/892. See *stith* in Stratmann's Dict.
- Stile, wood, 88/770.
- Stocke, to root up, 150/46, 182/92.
- Stonde, Lat. *cupa*, a cask, 39/1051.
- Stont, stop, make to stand, 102/1167.
- Stonte, an hour, Ger. *stunde*, 186/207.
- Stortes, stalks, 118/387, 206/528.
- Stounde, a short time, Ger. *stunde*, 180/44.
- Straite, straightway, immediately, 153/121.
- Strange, strong, 4/88.
- Stre, straw, 6/146.
- Streine, narrow, strait, 177/181.
- Streite, narrow, 41/1100.
- Strength, *v.* strengthen, 69/239.
- Streve, shave, cut, also strew, 101/1127, 190/103.
- Streyne, to stretch, 70/268.
- Strom, stream, 210/105.
- Stry, strie, to strew, to scatter, 61/10, 128/670.
- Stulpes, posts, 39/105.
- Stynte, forbear, 1/7.
- Subact, Lat. subdued, well-worked, 214/216.
- Sue, sewe, follow, pursue, 125/585.
- Succedent, a follower, 101/1125.
- Sumdele, some portion, somewhat, 10/252.
- Summyter, summit, top, 111/240.
- Sure of, safe from, 197/294.
- Surtray, Fr. to strain, 100/1097.
- Surtreet, Fr. to withdraw, subtract, 120/460.
- Swage, assuage, 136/883.
- Swelle, to make to swell, 110/188.
- Swerde, sword, 153/119.
- Swerde, sward, 3/58.
- Sweete, sweat, 18/486, 59/424.
- Swete, level, 49/146.
- Swethed, swathed, bound, 149/19.
- Swon, swineherd, 100/1086.
- Swynke, labour, 202/439.
- Syde, vast, 129/679.
- Syngrene, houseleek, 31/853.
- Synk, Fr. five, *vide* side-note, 84/656.
- Sysame, sesame, a kind of wheat, 181/67.
- Table-mele, in beds, bed by bed, *tabulatin*, 66/148.
- Tables, garden beds, 30/810.
- Tabulette, small tablets, 156/195.

- Take, lay hold as a plant does, 49/153.
- Tale, account, number, 194/193.
- Talgh, tallow, 17/444.
- Talions, Lat. *talea*, truncheons, 96/991.
- Talpes, Lat. moles, 24/931.
- Targe, delay, 99/1075.
- Targyng, tarrying, delay, 86/720.
- Te, 34/934. In the MS. *te* seems an error for *the*, and so I have printed it.
- Teete, Lat. covered. "Do be tecte," make to be covered, 155/180.
- Tempur, temperate, 52/534.
- Tende, tendency, 166/60.
- Tendron, Fr. young shoot, tendril, 88/774.
- Tened, excited, A.S. *teón*, 130/725.
- Tenes, stalks, tendrils, 118/395.
- Tente, heed, attention, 196/273.
- Tere, to tear, 102/1150.
- Tere, to draw, 102/1152.
- Teye, tie, 131/752.
- Thair, there, or where, 68/191, etc.
- That, "the," as in Chaucer, "that oon," and in next line, "that other," 74/359, etc.
- Thater, the water, 4/94.
- The or thee, succeed, prosper, 97/1012, 111/216.
- Thenne, thence, 218/325.
- There, Thereas, where, *e.g.* "there as thowe thou casteth dwell," where you resolve to live, 9/234.
- Thereto, in addition, besides (but in 46/67, so much, *catenus*), 199/339.
- Thewes, tempers, 129/695.
- Theye, the eye, 161/87.
- Thilles, shafts of a cart, 159/38.
- Thinke, I think fit, 197/275.
- Thitherwarde, witherward, in the direction in which, 146/177.
- Thitherwarde, in that direction, 146/180.
- Tho, Thoo, then, 65/109.
- Thonke, to thank, 159/26.
- Thoo, those, 68/194.
- Thorgh, through, (go) through, 151/36,
- Thorle or Thurle, bore, perforate, A.S. *thirlian*, 34/925, 111/198.
- Thoste, A.S. dung, 39/1077, 116/348.
- Threste, thrust, 190/86.
- Thriddendele, a third part, 14/478.
- Thrie, thrice, 35/959, 179/2.
- Thrive do, make thrive, 190/89.
- Throu, Theroute, thereout, outside, 33/896, 117/399.
- Thyne, thin, 200/382.
- Tibertine, brought from Tibur, or Tivoli, 14/378.
- Til, to; intil, into, 152/80, 163/138.
- Tile, till, 81/567.
- Tilette, small tile, cube, or tessera, 156/195.
- Tobreke, break to pieces, 159/16.
- Tobrent, burnt up, 104/21.
- Tofore, before, 152/88.
- Togoon, *v.* go to, *adire*, 27/740.
- To grounde, ground to pieces, 42/1135.
- Togh, *i.e.* tough, stalk, or tow, 116/342.
- Tole, tool, 43/1164.
- To-shake, shake to pieces, 52/240, 100/1095.
- To, too, *e.g.* to sore, too sore, too decidedly, 152/88.
- To take, take to pieces, 4/74.
- Toon, toes, 188/49.
- Tort, towards, 107/82.
- Toshake, shake well, 163/128.
- Towe, instrument, 159/36.
- Travaille, Fr. to work, 201/403.
- Tre, three, 142/72.
- Tree, wood; rule of tree, wooden rule or frame 153/120.
- Treen, *adj.* made of trees, 137/916. So Spenser, F. Q. 2, 39.
- Trete of, use, dispose of, 87/741.

- Triclyne, Lat. *triclīnium*, dining-room, 15/391.  
 Trie, choose, see Try.  
 Triste, trust, 69/224.  
 Trouble, *adj.* Fr. dark, muddy, disturbed, 201/400.  
 Trowe, believe, trust, 76/425.  
 Trowe, trough, 137/916.  
 Trowes, troughs, 127/164.  
 Trumpes, trumpets, tubes, 177/179.  
 Trunke, to truncate, 107/86.  
 Try, Fr. to select, pull out, 130/707.  
 Trymenstre, three-monthly, 61/10.  
 Tway, two, 169/161.  
 Tweyne, two, 25/672.  
 Twie, twice, 35/959.  
 Two, twice, 214/208.  
 Twyble, axe, 42/1153.  
 Twye, twice, 35/957.  
 Twyk, tweak, pull, 150/26.  
 Tymber, *v.* to build with wood, 13/335.  
 Tynnen, made of tin, 152/99.  
 Uch, each, 17/450.  
 Uchoon, each one, 51/191.  
 Umbe, around, 162/106.  
 Umbigoon, surrounded, 51/197.  
 Umber, Lat. *umbra*, shade, 198/329.  
 Umbidelve, dig round, 115/327.  
 Umbiyonge, surround, 51/214.  
 Umbiwette, watered all round, 85/675.  
 Umbywende, go round, 214/221.  
 Umvironne, surrounded, 13/824, 119/437.  
 Unces, ounces, 102/1158.  
 Uncomber, cease to cumber, 154/51.  
 Unconnyngly, unskilfully, 107/87.  
 Understande, persuaded or minded, 68/196.  
 Undrie, become wet, 189/70.  
 Undure, unhard, *i.e.* soft, crumbled, 103/1174.  
 Uned, made one, 128/680.  
 Uneled, unbaked, A.S. *alan*, 174/103.  
 Unese, to make uneasy, 81/562.  
 Uneven, *v.* to make rough, 182/100.  
 Unleest, not least, 18/487.  
 Unlene, unlean, *i.e.* fat. 5/96.  
 Unneth, scarcely, 97/1004, etc.  
 Unolde, young, 104/9.  
 Unrest, *v. trans.* disturb, 211/130.  
 Unresteth, disturbs, 155/114.  
 Unscomed, unscummed, 168/128.  
 Unthryue, thrive not, 122/507.  
 Until, unto, 101/1138.  
 Unwynk, open, 105/25.  
 Upon, *adv.* up; as closed upon, closed up (compare 37/996), 193/353.  
 Upsette, raise up, 15/395.  
 Upshette, shot up, thrown up, 36/993.  
 Upsodowne, upside down, 11/275.  
 Ure, *sub.* use, custom, 9/215.  
 Ure, *v.* to be accustomed, 91/845.  
 Usyng, wearing, 184/223.  
 Utter, out, 126/614.  
 Utter, outwards. "Utter trie," choose out, 54/294.  
 Utter, out, away; utterdoon, removed, taken away, 144/120.  
 Vaporositee, Lat. vapour, occurs on a fragment of a torn leaf at the end of the book.  
 Veer, the spring, 113/251, etc.  
 Verrey, true, 179/91.  
 Vessel, to put into a vessel, to pot, 200/362.  
 Vives, wives, 25/669.  
 Voide, depart, 13/936.  
 Voide, remove, clear, 88/762.  
 Voide, superfluous, 150/23.  
 Vulturnus, Lat. N.E. wind, 6/144.  
 Wag, to shake, 209/68.  
 Wage, payment, produce, 143/82.  
 Wake, watch, 44/11.  
 Wanteth, faileth, 88/752.  
 War, beware of, 9/213.  
 Ware, lot, collection, 28/756.

- Wary, to curse, A.S. *werigan*, 20/530.  
 Way, Ger. *Weg*, away, 70/273.  
 Wede, garment, 31/330.  
 Weethe, to twist, bind, 128/676.  
 Wegge, wedge, 53/246.  
 Weiveth, waives, forbears, 135/846, 20/530.  
 Wellesay, *interj.* alas! well a day! 167/91.  
 Welner, well near, wellnigh, 52/235.  
 Wem, spot, stain, 176/157.  
 Wende, let it go, or be moved, 149/13.  
 Wending, end of furrow, 44/12; id quod, went, 44/20, 47/26. See a most interesting note in Horne Tooke's *Diversions of Purley*, vol. ii. p. 374, Taylor's ed.  
 Wende, weened, thought, 148/219.  
 Wene, deem, ween, 11/280.  
 Went, space dug, 47/96.  
 Wermode, wormwood, 199/334.  
 Werne, warn, forbid, 170/20.  
 Wers, worse, 190/101.  
 Wesshe, wash, dirty water, 40/1105.  
 Wexed, *i.e.* waxed, grown, enlarged, 67/181.  
 While, *sub.* time, 164/3, 201/389.  
 Wick, evil, wickedness, 36/973.  
 Wide, to widen, set apart, 94/925.  
 Wimble, a gimlet, 190/85.  
 Winche, tank, 16/426, 93/894.  
 Wirche, to work, as in Chaucer, 10/259.  
 Wist, direct, bend, 40/1103.  
 Wist, known, *scitum*, 40/1104.  
 Wite, defend, 20/546.  
 Wite, know, 31/842.  
 With, therewith, *passim*, 90/829.  
 With, therewith, at same time, 149/10, etc.; with and with, every now and then, 26/711, 193/175.  
 Withi, withy, willow, 75/412.  
 Withouten, without, 29/789.  
 Wlonk, rich, A.S. *wlon*, 77/449. See Stratmann's Dict. 571.  
 Wode, Woode, mad, 6/133.  
 Wombe, stomach, 3/53.  
 Wonde, wand, a stick, 123/537.  
 Wonder, *adj.* See Wounder.  
 Wonder, *adv.* 14/378.  
 Wones, apartments, 13/331.  
 Wonte, *v. neut.* want, fail, 26/700.  
 Wonte, *sub.* deficiency, 26/701.  
 Worching, working, 15/398.  
 Worlde (see Note on 114/294), a vast quantity, a world, 159/28; also time, an age, 193/162, 204/482.  
 Wortes, cabbage, 35/952.  
 Wough or Wowe, wall, 29/785.  
 Wounder, wonderful, 143/99.  
 Wride, spread abroad, A.S. *wridan*, to flourish, 51/207.  
 Wrie, to cover, 6/143.  
 Wrie, to twist or bend the root of awry, 13/347.  
 Writhe, bend, 65/118.  
 Wronge, crooked, twisted, awry, oblique, 115/312.  
 Wrote, rot, 30/803.  
 Wrote, collect, heap, 77/445.  
 Wrynge, press, 19/495, 118/408.  
 Wylous, willows, 92/878.  
 Wynche, tank, 16/426.  
 Wyne-tree, vine, 151/57.  
 Wynne, *sub.* gain, 61/5.  
 Wynne, *v.* to gain, 61/4.  
 Wynne, to gain one's way, 142/75.  
 Wyse, lead, 47/708.  
 Yates, gates, 35/964.  
 Ye, yea, 7/161.  
 Yeme, to care, to attend, 163/154.  
 Ydroken, error of MS. for ydronken, see Note.  
 Yerde, twig or rod, *virga*, 125/596.  
 Yerdes, twigs, *virgas*, 194/212.  
 Yespon, a double handful, *Scotticè* Gowpen, 220/15. Ray calls it an Essex word.

- Yette, yet, 142/57.  
 Yeve, give, 24/644.  
 Yfere, together, 13/320, 72/319.  
 Yford, intended. For yfonde,  
 intended for, 94/940.  
 Yfretted, decked out, furnished.  
 A.S. *frætan*, 130/705. See  
 Morris's Alliterative Poems,  
 p. 339.  
 Ygone, gone; umbygone about,  
 surrounded, 29/788.  
 Yhed, hidden, 121/487.  
 Yheped, heaped up, 219/334.  
 Yliche, alike, 94/940.  
 Ymmote, Lat. *immoveas*, apply,  
 108/109.  
 Ymne, hymn, 163/148.  
 Ympe, plant, 66/142.  
 Yo, A.S. clay, plaster, 15/402.  
 Yole, pour, 16/431.  
 Yolgh, yellow, 22/579.  
 Yonge, *subj.* let go, 127/641.  
 Yorne, often, 17/447.  
 Yqueinte, quenched, 175/111.  
 Yre, iron, 153/121.  
 Yre, rage, 106/54, 153/123.  
 Yronles, without iron tools,  
 85/685.  
 Ysels, ashes, 177/185.  
 Yshrad, shredded, cleared of the  
 husks, 169/139.  
 Yshogged, shaken, 198/322.  
 Yspronge, sprinkled, 33/907.  
 Ythied, having its thigh, 69/226.  
 Ytilde, tilted, set (a trap), 110/164.  
 Ywesh, washed, 28/762.  
 Ywrie, covered, 33/895, 128/167.

## RYME INDEX.

*Rymes apparently not identical, or not authorized by grammarians' rules, are marked with a star (\*).*

### -a

Comminia, *prop. n.*  
 Pausia, *prop. n.* 77/456  
 Pausia, *prop. n.*  
 Comminia, *prop. n.* 77/458

### -aak

blaak, *adj. sing.*  
 laak, *obj.* 136/895  
 taak, *imper.* 136/894  
 laak, *obj.*  
 blaak, *adj. sing.* 136/892  
 taak, *imper.* 136/894  
 taak, *imper.*  
 blaak, *adj. sing.* 136/892  
 laak, *obj.* 136/895

### -aaste (see -aste)

haaste, *inf.*  
 waste, *inf.* 91/841

### -able

able, *a. sing.*  
 notable, *a. sing.* 17/460  
 profitable, *a. sing.* 14/352, 84/  
 638  
 profitable, *adj. pl.* 132/783  
 stable, *obl.* 17/457, 132/780  
 unable, *a. sing.* 9/222  
 unprofitable, *a. pl.* 9/219  
 unvariable, *a. sing.* 14/354  
 able, *a. pl.*  
 profitable, *a. sing.* 66/149, 93/  
 900  
 table, *obl.* 66/151, 93/898

aboundable, *adj. sing.*  
 hable, *adj. sing.* 207/18  
 profitable, *adj. sing.* 207/16  
 dampnable, *a. sing.*  
 profitable, *a. sing.* 8/182  
 hable, *adj. sing.*  
 aboundable, *adj. sing.* 207/19  
 profitable, *adj. sing.* 207/16  
 notable, *a. sing.*  
 able, *a. sing.* 17/459  
 stable, *obl.* 17/457  
 perflable, *a. sing.*  
 profitable, *a. pl.* 37/1004  
 profitable, *a. sing.*  
 able, *a. sing.* 14/355, 84/640  
 able, *a. pl.* 66/152, 93/901  
 aboundable, *adj. sing.* 207/19  
 dampnable, *a. sing.* 8/181  
 hable, *adj. sing.* 207/18  
 table, *obl.* 66/151, 93/898  
 unvariable, *a. sing.* 14/354  
 profitable, *a. pl.*  
 able, *adj. sing.* 132/782  
 perflable, *a. sing.* 37/1002  
 spectable, *adj. pl.* 128/672  
 stable, *obl.* 132/780  
 spectable, *adj. pl.*  
 profitable, *adj. pl.* 128/673  
 stable, *obl.*  
 able, *a. sing.* 17/459, 132/  
 782  
 notable, *a. sing.* 17/460  
 profitable, *adj. pl.* 132/783  
 table, *obl.*  
 able, *a. pl.* 66/152, 93/901  
 profitable, *a. sing.* 66/149, 93/  
 900



unable, *a. sing.*

able, *a. sing.* 9/221

unprofitable, *a. pl.* 9/219

unprofitable, *a. pl.*

able *a. sing.* 9/221

unable, *a. sing.* 9/222

unvariable, *a. sing.*

able, *a. sing.* 14/355

profitable, *a. sing.* 14/352

### -ace

Armarace, *obj.*

place, *obl.* 210/83

armorace, *nom.*

place, *obl.* 110/171

difface, *inf.*

place, *obl.* 66/142

space, *obl.* 66/145

place, *obl.*

Armarace, *obj.* 210/84

armorace, *nom.* 110/169

difface, *inf.* 66/144

space, *obl.* 59/440, 66/145

trace, *inf.* 146/183

space, *obl.*

difface, *inf.* 66/144

place, *obl.* 59/441, 66/142

trace, *imper.* 48/118

trace, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 157/234

trace, *v. 1 sing. pres.*

space, *obl.* 157/232

trace, *imper.*

space, *obl.* 48/119

trace, *inf.*

place, *obl.* 146/182

### -acle

spiracle, *nom.*

miracle, *nom.* 202/437

miracle, *nom.*

spiracle, *nom.* 202/435

### -adde

hadde, *pp.*

sadde, *adj. sing.* 136/891

sadde, *adj. sing.* (A.S. *sæd*)

hadde, *pp.* 136/893

### -ade

blade, *obj.*

glade, *inf.* 85/676

spade, *obl.* 85/677

fade, *inf.*

glade, *inf.* 184/153

glade, *a. pl.*

made, *pp.* 73/346

glade, *inf.*

blade, *obj.* 85/674

fade, *inf.* 184/154

made, *pp.* 41/1112, 66/156

slade, *obl.* 66/159

spade, *obl.* 85/677

made, *pp.*

glade, *inf.* 41/1113, 66/158

glade, *a. pl.* 73/344

slade, *obl.* 66/159, 177/176

slade, *obl.*

glade, *inf.* 66/158

made, *pp.* 66/156, 177/178

spade, *obl.*

blade, *obj.* 85/674

glade, *inf.* 85/676

### -af (see -affe)

chaf, *obj.*

raf, *obj.* 31/827

raf, *obj.*

chaf, *obj.* 31/829

saf, *a. pl.*

\*graffe, *inf.* 95/948

### -affe (see -af)

graffe, *inf.*

graffe, *obj.* 58/395

\*saf, *a. pl.* 95/946

graffe, *obj.*

graffe, *inf.* 58/393

### -afte (see -efte)

berafte, *pp.*

crafte, *obl.* 212/139

crafte, *obl.*

berafte, *pp.* 212/140

craftē, *obj.*

\*leftē, *pp.*<sup>1</sup> 75/403

shafte, *obj.* 75/404

shafte, *obj.*

craftē, *obj.* 75/401

\*leftē, *pp.*<sup>1</sup> 75/403

### age

Avage, *nom. sing.*

age, *obl.* 143/83

wage, *obl.* 143/83

age, *obl.*

Avage, *nom. sing.* 143/80

citriage, *obl.* 147/199

courage, *obl.* 147/202

dotage, *obl.* 91/861, 190/82

gage, *inf.* 204/479

gage, *nom. sing.* 135/862

gage, *imper.* 119/427, 190/79

wage, *obl.* 143/82

age, *obj.*

mariage, *obl.* 105/27

citriage, *obl.*

age, *obl.* 147/201

courage, *obl.* 147/202

courage, *obl.*

citriage, *obl.* 147/199

age, *obl.* 147/201

sage, *adj. pl.* 190/91

dotage, *obl.*

age, *obl.* 91/860, 190/81

gage, *imper.* 190/79

gage, *imper.*

age, *obl.* 119/426, 190/81

dotage, *obl.* 190/82

tillage, *obl.* 8/207

vindage, *obj.* 8/205

gage, *inf.*

age, *obl.* 204/487

gage, *nom. sing.*

age, *obl.* 135/861

gage, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

pilgramage, *obl.* 198/305

vyndage, *nom. sing.* 198/303

mariage, *obl.*

age, *obj.* 105/28

pilgramage, *obl.*

gage, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 198/306

vyndage, *nom. sing.* 198/303

rage, *obl.*

swage, *inf.* 136/883

sage, *adj. pl.*

courage, *obl.* 190/90

swage, *inf.*

rage, *obl.* 136/882

tillage, *obl.*

gage, *imper.* 8/208

vindage, *obj.* 8/205

usage, *obl.*

vindage, *obl.* 6/134

vindage, *obj.*

gage, *imper.* 8/208

tillage, *obl.* 8/207

vindage, *obl.*

usage, *obl.* 6/136

\*wages, *obl.* 100/1092

vyndage, *nom. sing.*

gage, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 198/306

pilgramage, *obl.* 198/305

vyndage, *obl.*

\*wages, *nom. pl.* 100/1092<sup>2</sup>

wage, *obl.*

age, *obl.* 143/83

Avage, *nom. sing.* 143/80

### -ages (see -age)

wages, *obl.*

\*vyndage, *obl.* 100/1091

### -ai, -ay (see -aie and -ey)

affray, *obl.*

allay, *inf.* 185/187

array, *obj.* 236/27

<sup>1</sup> Strictly *leftē* should be the perfect tense; *levēd* or *left* the perfect participle.

<sup>2</sup> On this ryme, irrespective of the flexion, compare *stenes, clene*, 1750, 1776; *seche, leches*, 1550; *confessours, socour*, 1842; *jerneies, seize*, 220, etc., in the *Kindheit Jesu*, from MS. Laud, 108, in Dr. Horstmann's *Allenglische Legenden*, 1875, p. xliii.

- May, *obl.* 185/184  
 splay, *inf.* 23/625  
 allay, *inf.*  
   affray, *obl.* 185/186  
   May, *obl.* 185/184  
 always, *adv.*  
   haliday, *obj.* 7/176  
   May, *obl.* 157/224  
   may, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 67/176  
 array, *nom.*  
   assay, *imper.* 12/317  
   clay, *obl.* 12/319  
 array, *obj.*  
   affray, *obj.* 23/628  
   splay, *inf.* 32/625  
 assay, *imper.*  
   array, *nom.* 12/320  
   clay, *obl.* 12/319  
 away, *adv.*  
   bay, *obl.* 191/112  
   withnay, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1151  
 ay, *adv.*  
   May, *obl.* 148/226  
 bay, *obj.*  
   may, *v.* 2 *pl. pres.* 51/203  
 bay, *obl.*  
   away, *adv.* 191/111  
 bray, *imper.*  
   confray, *imper.* 111/196  
 clay, *obl.*  
   array, *nom.* 12/320  
   assay, *imper.* 12/317  
 confray, *imper.*  
   bray, *imper.* 111/195  
 day, *obl.*  
   nay, *adv.* 27/728  
   splay, *inf.* 83/633  
   tway, *adj. pl.* 169/161  
 haliday, *obj.*  
   always, *adv.* 7/178  
 hay, *obl.*  
   say, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 26/704  
   thay, *pron.* 26/705  
 May, *obl.*  
   affray, *obl.* 185/186  
   allay, *inf.* 185/187  
   always, *adv.* 157/223  
   ay, *adv. pl.* 148/224  
   may, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 160/52  
   may, *v.* 2 *pl. pres.*  
     bay, *obj.* 51/202  
   may, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*  
     \*awaie, *prep.* 36/988  
   may, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
     always, *adv.* 67/178  
     May, *obl.* 160/50  
   nay, *adv.*  
     day, *obl.* 27/727  
   say, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
     hay, *obl.* 26/702  
     thay, *pron.* 26/705  
   splay, *inf.*  
     affray, *obj.* 23/628  
     array, *obj.* 23/627  
     day, *obl.* 83/631  
   thai, *pron.*  
     twey, *adj. pl.* 50/169  
   thay, *pron.*  
     hay, *obl.* 26/702  
     say, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 26/704  
   tway, *num. adj.*  
     day, *obl.* 169/160  
   withnay, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
     away, *adv.* 102/1149  
  
   -aie, -aye (*see* -ay)  
   awaie, *prep.*  
     may, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 36/990  
   braye, *inf.*  
     slaye, *pp.* 113/265  
   slaye, *pp.*  
     braye, *inf.* 113/266  
   enaye,<sup>1</sup> 3 *subj. pres.*  
     \*trie, *imper.* 50/165  
     \*die, 3 *subj. pres.* 50/166  
  
   -aiier, -ayer (*see* -aire and -eire)  
   aiier, *nom.*  
     laier, *obl.* 91/847

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps miswritten for *denaye*, and that for *denye*, which gives a perfect ryme.

ayer, *nom.*

\*feire, *a. pl.* 86/705

\*feire, *adv.* 114/296

\*leire, *nom.* 86/704, 114/299

ayer, *obl.*

\*faire, *adj. sing.* 172/35

laier, *obl.*

aier, *nom.* 91/846

**-aies, -ayes (see -ayis)**

arayes, *nom. pl.*

daies, *nom. pl.* 27/730

play is, 27/733

baies, *nom. pl.*

\*day is, 81/567

bayes, *obl.*

dayes, *obl.* 59/416

daies, *obl.* 100/1096

surtray is, 100/1097

daies, *nom. pl.*

arayes, *nom. pl.* 27/732

bayes, *nom. pl.* 100/1094

\*nay is, 45/38

\*play is, 27/733

\*surtray is, 100/1097

dayes, *obl.*

bayes, *obl.* 59/414

delaiies *obj.* 65/122

delaiies, *obj.*

dayes, *obl.* 65/120

**-ayis, -ay is**

ay is

dayis, *nom. pl.* 153/111

bay is

bay is, 58/407, 58/409

dayis, *nom. pl.*

ay is, 153/112

nay is

daies, *nom. pl.* 45/36

playis

arayes, *nom. pl.* 27/732

daies, *nom. pl.* 27/730

surtray is

bayes, *nom. pl.* 100/1094

daies, *nom. pl.* 100/1096

**-ail**

advail, *nom.*

tail, *obj.* 78/496

tail, *obj.*

advail, *nom.* 78/497

**-aile**

advaile, *inf.*

traile, *inf.* 70/246

availe, *inf.*

travaille, *inf.* 31/846

availe, *obl.*

traile, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 208/36

traile, *inf.*

advaile, *inf.* 70/248

traile, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

availe, *obl.* 208/38

**aile is (see ayles)**

availe is

snayles, *nom. pl.* 31/852

**-ayles (see aile is)**

snayles, *nom. pl.*

availe is, 31/850

**-aileth**

availeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.*

faileth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 45/34

faileth, *v. 3 sing. pres.*

availeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 45/35

**-aile**

assaille, *inf.*

travaille, *v. 3 sing.* 4/94

availe, *nom. sing.*

travaille, *nom. sing.* 87/735

availe, *inf.*

travaille, *nom. sing.* 46/66

countervaille, *inf.*

travaille, *obl.* 9/223

travaille, *nom.*

availe, *nom.* 87/734

availe, *inf.* 46/64

travaille, *obl.*  
 countervaille, *inf.* 9/224  
 travaille, *v. 3 sing.*  
 assaille, *inf.* 4/92  
 travaille, *inf.*  
 availle, *inf.* 31/846

-ayne (see -eyne)

agayne, *adv.*  
 mayne, *nom.* 36/969  
 complayne, *inf.*  
 \*veyne, *nom. sing.* 175/1111  
 complayne, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 strayne, *imper.* 158/13  
 disdayne, *obj.*  
 playne, *adv.* 182/86  
 slayne, *pp.* 182/88  
 fayne, *adj. sing.*  
 rayne, *obl.* 188/36  
 grayne, *obl.*  
 implayne, *inf.* 18/479  
 playne, *adv.* 137/914  
 sayne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 18/489  
 implayne, *inf.*  
 grayne, *obl.* 18/477  
 mayne, *nom.*  
 agayne, *adv.* 36/967  
 mountayne, *obj.*  
 playne, *obl.* 176/161  
 playne, *adv.*  
 disdayne, *obj.* 182/89  
 grayne, *obl.* 137/912  
 rayne, *obl.* 172/36  
 slayne, *pp.* 182/88  
 playne, *obl.*  
 mountayne, *obj.* 176/160  
 trayne, *imper.* 38/1032  
 rayne, *nom. sing.*  
 sayne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 190/94  
 rayne, *obj.*  
 slayne, *pp.* 64/87  
 rayne, *obl.*  
 fayne, *adj. sing.* 188/38  
 playne, *adv.* 172/38

sayne, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 grayne, *obl.* 18/490  
 rayne, *nom. sing.* 190/92  
 slayne, *pp.*  
 disdayne, *obj.* 182/89  
 playne, *adv.* 182/86  
 rayne, *obj.* 64/85  
 strayne, *imper.*  
 complayne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 158/14  
 trayne, *imper.*  
 playne, *obl.* 38/1030

-ayne is (see -anys)

yslayne is,  
 \*planys, *obl.* 94/919  
 \*tranys, *obj.* 94/921

aire (see -aier, -arie, -eire)

aire, *obj.*  
 faire, *a. sing.* 2/24  
 aire, *obl.*  
 faire, *a. pl.* 3/55  
 columbaire, *obj.*  
 paire, *nom.* 20/537  
 repaire, *inf.* 20/536  
 dispaire, *obl.*  
 eire, *obl.* 39/1070  
 enoculaire, *inf.*  
 faire, *adj. pl.* 212/161  
 faire, *a. pl.*  
 aire, *obl.* 3/56  
 enoculaire, *inf.* 212/160  
 semynaire, *obl.* 189/66  
 faire, *a. sing.*  
 aire, *obj.* 2/22  
 \*ayer, *obl.* 172/34  
 paire, *nom.*  
 columbaire, *obj.* 20/534  
 repaire, *inf.* 20/536  
 repaire, *inf. resort*  
 columbaire, *obj.* 20/534  
 paire, *nom.* 20/537  
 repaire, *inf. renew* (see *repare*<sup>1</sup>  
 under *are*)  
 semynaire, *obl.* 218/314

<sup>1</sup> On *ay* a ryming, see those rymes of *slayne* (with *-ane*) altered to *slane* in Prof. Zupitza's *Guy of Warwick*, 2nd or 15th century version, E.E.T.S. MS. about 1450.

semynaire, *obl.*faire, *adj. pl.* 189/64repaire, *inf.* renew, 218/315**-aith**faith, *obl.*saith, *v. 3 pres. sing.* 197/276saith, *v. 3 pres. sing.*faith, *obl.* 197/274**ake**ake, *v. pl.*overtake, *pp.* 3/51awake, 3 *pl. pres.* 3/54ammonyake, *nom.*take, *inf.* 41/1127armonyake, *obl.*portulake, *obl.* 23/603aslake, *imper.*make, *inf.* 38/1041take, *inf.* 38/1038aslake, *inf.*shake, *inf.* 132/768take, *imper.* 132/766asslake, *inf.*make, *imper.* 63/75take, *inf.* 63/72awake, *imper.*make, *inf.* 69/240take, *imper.* 69/242awake, 3 *pl. pres.*ake, *v. pl.* 3/53overtake, *pp.* 3/51rake, *obl.* 113/260bake, *obl.*take, *inf.* 42/1158betake, *imper.*take, *imper.* 24/641undertake, *inf.* 24/642blake, *adj. pl.*make, *inf.* 166/77take, *imper.* 130/712take, *inf.* 200/375undertake, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 130/

713

wake, *inf.* 200/376blake, *adj. sing.*undertake, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 133/809take, *imper.* 130/712blake, *v. 3 pl. pres.*take, *pp.* 82/602brake, *inf.*hony-onfake, *obj.* 178/197forsake, *imper.*make, *inf.* 28/761outake, *imper.* 28/758shake, *inf.* 163/128take, *imper.* 38/1049take, *inf.* 163/130forsake, *inf.*take, *pp.* 127/643forsake, *v. 3 pl. pres.*slake, *inf.* 77/453take, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 77/450hony-onfake, *obj.*brake, *inf.* 178/199kake, *obj.*make, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 214/202lake, *obj.*make, *imper.* 26/700make, *imper.*asslake, *inf.* 63/74lake, *obj.* 26/701shake, *inf.* 58/410shake, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 141/23slake, *imper.* 145/146stake, *obl.* 72/312symphoriake, *obj.* 196/254shake, *inf.* 52/240take, *imper.* 58/408, 72/313,

145/143, 196/257

take, *inf.* 13/349, 17/462, 63/72take, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 90/825take, *subj.* 229/371make, *inf.*aslake, *imper.* 38/1040awake, *imper.* 69/243blake, *adj. pl.* 166/76forsake, *imper.* 28/760make, *inf.* 82/593outake, *imper.* 28/758outetake, *pp.* 56/332



- shake, *inf.* 100/1095  
 slake, *imper.* 44/12, 55/311  
 slake, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 188/26  
 stake, *imper.* 118/397  
 stake, *inf.* 97/1027  
 take, *imper.* 69/242, 82/592,  
 118/394, 173/52  
 take, *inf.* 11/275, 13/349, 38/  
 1038, 47/101, 67/167, 80/  
 528, 102/1158, 109/148, 185/  
 185, 188/23, 196/273, 203/  
 465  
 take, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 97/1024,  
 185/169, 204/493  
 take, *subj.* 100/1102, 211/115  
 undertake, *inf.* 11/278  
 wake, *inf.* 44/11  
 ytake, *pp.* 93/906  
 make, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 kake, *obj.* 214/203  
 outetake, *imper.* 27/723  
 take, *inf.* 159/29, 206/528  
 take, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 27/725, 128/  
 675, 158/3  
 make, *v. subj.*  
 take, *imper.* 52/243, 101/1115  
 Tyriake, *nom.* 101/1118  
 outake, *imper.*  
 forsake, *imper.* 28/760  
 make, *inf.* 28/761  
 outetake, *imper.*  
 make, *inf.* 56/330  
 make, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 27/726  
 take, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 27/725  
 overtake, *pp.*  
 ake, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 3/53  
 awake, *3 pl. pres.* 3/54  
 portulake, *obl.*  
 armonyake, *adj.* 23/605  
 slake, *inf.* 196/248  
 rake, *obl.*  
 awake, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 113/262  
 take, *inf.* 140/16  
 shake, *inf.*  
 aslake, *inf.* 132/769  
 forsake, *imper.* 163/131  
 make, *imper.* 58/411  
 make, *inf.* 100/1093  
 make, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 52/242  
 Siriake, *adj. sing.* 137/913  
 take, *imper.* 58/408, 132/766  
 take, *inf.* 137/915, 163/130  
 take, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 52/243  
 undertake, *pp.* 8/203  
 shake, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 make, *imper.* 141/25  
 take, *imper.* 94/924  
 Siriake, *adj. sing.*  
 shake, *inf.* 137/916  
 take, *inf.* 137/915  
 slake, *imper.*  
 make, *imper.* 145/145  
 make, *inf.* 44/9, 55/309  
 take, *imper.* 145/143, 169/148  
 wake, *inf.* 44/11  
 slake, *inf.*  
 forsake, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 77/452  
 Portulake, *obl.* 196/246  
 take, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 77/450  
 slake, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 make, *inf.* 188/25  
 take, *inf.* 188/23  
 stake, *imper.*  
 make, *inf.* 118/396  
 take, *imper.* 118/394  
 stake, *inf.*  
 make, *inf.* 97/1026  
 take, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 97/1024  
 stake, *obl.*  
 make, *imper.* 72/310  
 take, *imper.* 72/313  
 symphoriake, *obj.*  
 make, *imper.* 196/256  
 take, *imper.* 196/257  
 take, *imper.*  
 aslake, *inf.* 132/769  
 awake, *imper.* 69/243  
 betake, *imper.* 24/639  
 blake, *adj. pl.* 130/710  
 forsake, *imper.* 38/1050  
 make, *imper.* 58/411, 72/310,  
 145/145, 196/256  
 make, *inf.* 69/240, 82/590, 82/  
 593, 118/396, 173/50

- make, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*  
 make, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 52/242,  
 101/1117  
 shake, *inf.* 52/240, 58/410, 132/  
 768  
 shake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 94/923  
 slake, *imper.* 145/146, 169/150  
 stake, *imper.* 118/397  
 stake, *obl.* 72/312  
 symphoriake, *nom.* 196/254  
 Tyriake, *nom.* 101/1118  
 undertake, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 130/  
 713  
 undertake, *inf.* 24/642  
 wake, *imper.* 12/301  
 take, *inf.*  
 ammonyake, *nom.* 41/1126  
 aslake, *imper.* 38/1040  
 asslake, *inf.* 63/74  
 bake, *obl.* 42/1156  
 forsake, *imper.* 163/131  
 make, *imper.* 63/75, 17/461  
 make, *inf.* 11/277, 13/350, 38/  
 1041, 47/99, 67/168, 80/526,  
 102/1156, 109/150, 185/183,  
 188/25, 196/272, 203/463  
 make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/726,  
 159/31, 206/526  
 rake, *obl.* 140/18  
 shake, *imper.* 137/916  
 shake, *inf.* 163/128  
 Siriake, *adj. sing.* 137/913  
 slake, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 188/26  
 undertake, *inf.* 11/278  
 wake, *a. sing.* 49/154  
 wake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 166/59  
 take, *pp.*  
 blake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 82/601  
 forsake, *inf.* 127/644  
 undertake, *inf.* 59/434  
 take, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*  
 make, *imper.* 90/826  
 take, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 make, *inf.* 97/1026, 185/171,  
 204/491  
 make, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 128/673,  
 158/1  
 outetake, *imper.* 27/723  
 stake, *inf.* 27/1027  
 take, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*  
 blake, *adj. pl.* 200/373  
 forsake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 77/452  
 make, *imper.* 220/370  
 make, *inf.* 100/1100, 173/50,  
 211/113  
 slake, *inf.* 77/453  
 tiriake, *obl.* 100/1107  
 wake, *inf.* 200/376  
 tiriake, *obl.*  
 take, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 100/1109  
 Tyriake, *nom.*  
 make, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 101/1117  
 take, *imper.* 101/1115  
 underslake, *inf.*  
 take, *pp.* 59/433  
 undertake, *inf.*  
 betake, *imper.* 24/639  
 make, *inf.* 11/277  
 take, *imper.* 24/641  
 take, *inf.* 11/275  
 undertake, *pp.*  
 shake, *inf.* 8/202  
 undertake, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*  
 blake, *adj. pl.* 130/710  
 blake, *adj. sing.* 133/807  
 take, *imper.* 130/712  
 wake, *a. sing.*  
 take, *inf.* 49/193  
 wake, *imper.*  
 take, *imper.* 12/300  
 wake, *inf.*  
 blake, *adj. pl.* 200/373  
 make, *inf.* 44/9  
 slake, *imper.* 44/12  
 take, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 200/375  
 wake, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 take, *inf.* 166/57  
 ytake, *pp.*  
 make, *inf.* 93/904  
 \*violate, *adj.* 103/1170  
 -akes  
 stakes, *obl.*  
 takes, *imper.* 72/325

takes, *imper.*

stakes, *obl.* 72/323

al (*see* -all and -alle)

al, *adj. pl.*

Marcial, *nom.* 194/216

smal, *adv.* 205/505

general, *adv.*

\*alle, *a. sing.* 77/463

Marcial, *nom.*

al, *adj. pl.* 194/217

\*alle, *adj. sing.* 143/97

shall, *v. 1 sing. fut.* 143/94

medicinal, *adj. sing.*

smal, *adj. sing.* 169/146

smal, *adj. sing.*

medicinal, *adj. sing.* 169/147

smal, *adv.*

al, *adj. pl.* 205/507

-ale

avale, *imper.*

dale, *obj.* 204/481

smale, *adj. pl.* 204/478

avale, *inf.*

dale, *obl.* 177/172

hale, *inf.* 177/168

hale, *imper.* 177/170

dale, *obl.*

avale, *inf.* 177/173

hale, *imper.* 177/170

vale, *obl.* 4/90

dale, *obj.*

avale, *imper.* 204/480

smale, *adj. pl.* 204/478

female, *obl.*

hale, *inf.* 136/879

hale, *inf.*

avale, *inf.* 177/167

pale, *adj. sing.* 197/282

smale, *adj. pl.* 132/770, 197/285

female, *obl.* 136/877

hale, *imper.*

avale, *inf.* 177/173

dale, *obl.* 177/172

pale, *adj. sing.*

hale, *inf.* 197/284

smale, *adj. pl.* 197/285

smale, *adj. pl.*

avale, *imper.* 204/480

dale, *obj.* 204/481

hale, *inf.* 132/771, 197/284

pale, *adj. sing.* 197/282

stale, *nom. sing.* 194/194

tale, *obl.* 194/193

stale, *nom. sing.*

smale, *adj. pl.* 194/191

tale, *obl.* 194/193

tale, *obl.*

smale, *adj. pl.* 194/191

stale, *nom. sing.* 194/194

vale, *obl.*

dale, *obl.* 4/91

-ales, -ale is

females, *obj.*

males, *obj.* 130/721

males, *obj.*

females, *obj.* 130/722

tale is

femalys, *nom.* 167/97

female is

malys, *nom.* 134/821

-alf

calf, *obl.*

half, *adj. sing.* 154/144, 154/145

half, *adj. sing.*

calf, *obl.* 154/142

half, *adj. sing.* 154/145

-alys

femalys, *nom.*

tale is, 167/98

malys, *nom.*

female is, 134/823

-alk (*see* -alke)

stalk, *obj.*

\*dalke, *obl.* 125/607

\*walke, *inf.* 125/606

**-alke** (*see -alk*)

dalke, *obl.*  
 \*stalk, *obj.* 125/604  
 walke, *inf.* 125/606  
 walke, *inf.*  
 dalke, *obl.* 125/607  
 \*stalk, *obj.* 125/604

**-all** (*see -al and -alle*)

all, *a. pl.*  
 castimoniall, *a. sing.* 90/827  
 all, *a. sing.*  
 stall, *obj.* 19/505  
 castimoniall, *a. sing.*  
 all, *a. pl.* 90/829  
 shall, *v. 1 sing. pres.*  
 \*alle, *adj. sing.* 143/97  
 Marcial, *nom.* 143/96  
 shall, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 \*alle, *adv.* 53/260  
 small, *adv.* 169/149  
 therwithall, *adv.* 169/151  
 small, *a. sing.*  
 \*alle, *a. pl.* 91/855  
 small, *adv.*  
 shall, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 169/152  
 therwithall, *adv.* 169/151  
 stall, *obj.*  
 all, *a. sing.* 19/507  
 therwithall, *adv.*  
 shall, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 169/152  
 small, *adv.* 169/149

**-alle** (*see -al and -all*)

alle, *adj. pl.*  
 falle, *inf.* 34/922  
 falle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 122/515,  
 150/42  
 falle, *imper.* 151/62  
 galle, *obj.* 137/924  
 galle, *obl.* 34/919, 92/867, 116/  
 344  
 malle, *inf.* 122/516

\*small, *a. sing.* 91/857  
 tytymalle, *obl.* 117/365  
 alle, *a. sing.*<sup>1</sup>  
 \*general, *a. pl.* 77/465  
 \*Marcial, *nom.* 143/96  
 \*shall, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 143/94  
 alle, *adv.*  
 \*shall, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 53/262  
 superficialle, *adj. sing.* 202/416  
 calle, *inf.*  
 titimalle, *nom.* 38/1043  
 falle, *inf.*  
 alle, *a. pl.* 34/921  
 galle, *obl.* 34/919  
 falle, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 alle, *adj. pl.* 122/513, 150/41  
 falle, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 alle, *adj. pl.* 151/63  
 malle, *inf.* 122/516  
 galle, *obl.*  
 alle, *a. pl.* 34/921, 92/868, 116/  
 346  
 falle, *inf.* 34/922  
 galle, *obj.*  
 alle, *adj. pl.* 137/925  
 malle, *inf.*  
 alle, *adj. pl.* 122/513  
 falle, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 122/515  
 superficialle, *adj. sing.*  
 alle, *adv.* 202/414  
 titimalle, *nom.*  
 calle, *inf.* 38/1042  
 tytymalle, *obl.*  
 alle, *adj. pl.* 117/367

**-alles, -alle is, -allis**

walles, *nom.*  
 halle is, 20/535  
 halle is  
 walles, *nom.* 20/533  
 Wallis, *nom.*  
 walle is, 151/52  
 walle is  
 Wallis, *nom.* 151/50

<sup>1</sup> Here the scribe, by writing *alle* instead of *all*, has made the ryme imperfect.

**-ame**

blame, *inf.*  
 same, *adj. sing.* 186/209  
 the same, *adv.* 1/7  
 blame, *obl.*  
 fame, *obl.* 11/291  
 name, *obj.* 181/53  
 name, *obl.* 131/755  
 same, *pron.* 11/292  
 same, *adj. sing.* 181/51  
 tame, *inf.* 131/752  
 fame, *obj.*  
 blame, *obl.* 11/289  
 same, 11/292  
 frame, *inf.*  
 overflame, *imper.* 42/1139  
 same, *pron.* 42/1136  
 game, *obl.*  
 shame, *obl.* 20/531  
 lame, *adj. sing.*  
 tame, *adj. sing.* 132/772  
 name, *obj.*  
 blame, *obl.* 181/54  
 same, *adj. sing.* 181/51  
 name, *obl.*  
 blame, *obl.* 131/754  
 tame, *inf.* 131/752  
 overflame, *imper.*  
 frame, *inf.* 42/1138  
 same, *pron.* 42/1136  
 same, *adj. sing.*  
 blame, *inf.* 186/210  
 blame, *obl.* 181/54  
 name, *obj.* 181/53  
 same, *pron.*  
 blame, *obl.* 11/289  
 fame, *obj.* 11/291  
 frame, *inf.* 42/1138  
 overflame, *imper.* 42/1139  
 shame, *obl.*  
 game, *obl.* 20/532  
 tame, *adj. sing.*  
 lame, *adj. sing.* 132/774  
 tame, *inf.*  
 blame, *obl.* 131/754  
 name, *obl.* 131/755

the same, *adv.*

blame, *inf.* 1/6

**-ance** (*see -annce and -aunce*)

abundance, *obl.*

avance, *inf.* 42/1144

avance, *inf.*

abundance, *obl.* 42/1142

enhance, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*

avanncce, *inf.* 124/579

distance, *obj.* 124/576

gouvernance, *nom.*

avaunce, *inf.* 5/109

perchance, *adv.* 5/110

gouvernance, *obl.*

consideraunce, *nom.* 2/19

plesaunce, *obl.* 2/18

**-and, -ande** (*see -ond and -onde*)

land, *obl.*

stande, 3 *pl. pres.* 8/198

stande, *inf.* 8/201

fande, *pp.*

lande, *obl.* 80/548

stande, *inf.* 80/550

hande, *obl.*

lande, *nom.* 44/15, 113/268

lande, *obj.* 9/211

lande, *obl.* 3/57, 35/966, 113/259, 144/117, 184/156

sande, *obl.* 13/342

stande, *inf.* 85/679, 113/270, 115/315, 184/158

stande, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 144/118

lande, *nom.*

\*fonde, *pp.* 47/103

hande, *obl.* 44/17, 113/271

stande, *inf.* 2/15, 47/102, 113/270, 123/537, 176/141

stande, 3 *subj.* 2/28

\*wonde, *nom.* 123/537

lande, *obj.*

hande, *obl.* 9/213

\*hond, *obl.* 47/81

stande, *inf.* 106/55, 181/70

\*stond, *inf.* 47/82

upstande, *v.* 3 *subj.* 75/392

lande, *obl.*  
 fande, *pp.* 80/551  
 hande, *obl.* 3/59, 35/965, 113/258, 144/115, 184/159  
 stande, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 99/1074, 124/556  
 stande, *inf.* 80/550, 115/304, 124/567, 144/109, 152/91, 184/158, 187/21  
 stande, *v. subj. pres.* 107/94, 144/118  
 understande, *pp.* 68/198  
 understande, *inf.* 62/26  
 \*yfond, *pp.* 62/23  
 sande, *obl.*  
 hande, *obl.* 13/343  
 stande, *inf.* 97/1004  
 stande, *inf.*  
 fande, *pp.* 80/551  
 \*fonde, *pp.* 47/103  
 hande, *obl.* 85/678, 115/314, 113/271, 184/159  
 land, *obl.* 8/200  
 lande, *nom.* 2/17, 47/100, 113/268, 123/534, 176/143  
 lande, *obj.* 106/56, 181/69  
 lande, *obl.* 80/548, 115/302, 124/566, 144/107, 152/90, 184/156, 187/20  
 \*londe, *nom.* 67/174  
 sande, *obl.* 97/1002  
 stande, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 \*wonde, *nom.* 123/537  
 stande, 3 *subj.*  
 lande, *nom.* 2/27  
 stande, *v.* 3 *pres.*  
 land, *obl.* 8/200  
 lande, *obl.* 99/1072, 124/554  
 stande, *inf.* 8/201  
 stande, *v. subj.*  
 hande, *obl.* 144/115  
 lande, *obl.* 107/92, 144/117  
 understande, *inf.*  
 lande, *obl.* 62/23  
 \*yfond, *pp.* 62/25  
 understande, *pp.*  
 lande, *obl.* 68/195

upstande, *v. subj.*  
 lande, *obj.* 75/391  
 -ane  
 bane, *nom. sing.*  
 henbane, *obl.* 32/877  
 pane, *obl.* 32/879  
 henbane, *obl.*  
 bane, *nom. sing.* 32/880  
 pane, *obl.* 32/879  
 pane, *obl.*  
 bane, *nom. sing.* 32/880  
 henbane, *obl.* 32/877  
 -ange (*see* -annge and -ongge)  
 lange, *a. pl.*  
 \*elonge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 4/89  
 strange, *a. pl.* 4/88  
 strange, *a. pl.*  
 \*elonge, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 4/89  
 lange, *a. pl.* 4/86  
 strange, *a. sing.*  
 channge, *nom.* 64/90  
 -anys  
 planys, *obl.*  
 tranys, *obj.* 94/921  
 \*yslayne is, 94/922  
 tranys, *obj.*  
 planys, *obl.* 94/919  
 \*yslayne is, 94/922  
 -aunce (*see* -ance, -aunce)  
 aboundance, *nom. sing.*  
 advance, *inf.* 166/66  
 advance, *inf.*  
 aboundance, *nom. sing.* 166/64  
 avance, *inf.*  
 distance, *obj.* 124/576  
 enhance, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/578  
 distance, *obj.*  
 avance, *inf.* 124/579  
 enhance, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/578  
 -annge (*see* -ange, -aunge)  
 channge, *nom.*  
 strange, *a. sing.* 64/91



**-annte** (*see -aunte*)

avannte, *inf.*  
 transplannte, *imper.* 151/76  
 transplannte, *imper.*  
 avannte, *inf.* 151/77  
 transversannte, *a. pl.*  
 chaunte, *inf.* 21/565  
 plesaunte, *a. sing.* 21/562

**-ape**

escape, *inf.*  
 grape, *obj.* 100/1101  
 jape, *nom.* 100/1104  
 sape, *obl.* 213/174  
 escape, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 grape, *obl.* 8/190  
 escape, *v. 3 subj. pres.*  
 frape, *inf.* 202/418  
 grape, *obj.* 202/415  
 frape, *inf.*  
 escape, *v. 3 subj. pres.* 202/417  
 grape, *obj.* 202/415  
 grape, *obj.*  
 escape, *inf.* 100/1103  
 escape, *v. 3 subj. pres.* 202/417  
 frape, *inf.* 202/418  
 jape, *nom.* 100/1104  
 grape, *obl.*  
 escape, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 8/192  
 jape, *nom.*  
 escape, *inf.* 100/1103  
 grape, *obj.* 100/1101  
 sape, *obl.*  
 escape, *inf.* 213/175

**-appe**

gappe, *obj.*  
 happe, *imper.* 68/214  
 wrappe, *imper.* 68/215  
 happe, *imper.*  
 gappe, *obj.* 68/212  
 wrappe, *imper.* 68/215  
 wrappe, *imper.*  
 gappe, *obj.* 68/212  
 happe, *imper.* 68/214

**-ardde** (*see -arde*)

hardde, *a. sing.*  
 downward, *adv.* 48/122

**-arde** (*see -ardde*)

downward, *adv.*  
 hardde, *a. sing.* 48/120  
 harde, *a. sing.*  
 harde, *inf.* 57/365  
 harde, *inf.*  
 harde, *a. sing.* 57/367  
 harde, *a. pl.*  
 upward, *adv.* 89/787  
 larde, *obl.*  
 rewarde, *inf.* 16/434  
 rewarde, *inf.*  
 larde, *obl.* 16/433  
 upward, *adv.*  
 harde, *a. pl.* 89/785

**-ardes** (*see -arde is*)

hardes, *obj.*  
 myddelwardes, *adv.* 169/137  
 harde is, 169/138  
 myddlewardes, *adv.*  
 hardes *obj.* 169/135  
 harde is, 169/138

**-arde is** (*see -ardes*)

harde is,  
 hardes, *obj.* 169/135  
 myddlewardes, *adv.* 169/137

**-are**

are, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 capare, *obj.* 110/172  
 columbare, *adj. sing.* 220/352  
 declare, 197/275  
 fecundare, *a. pl.* 36/985  
 mare, *obl.* 36/984, 136/885  
 nare, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 136/888  
 rare, *a. pl.* 5/99, 80/533, 84/  
 650, 220/355  
 rare, *a. sing.* 4/85, 98/1043  
 164/20

repare, *inf.* 107/85  
 spare, *inf.* 110/173, 197/278  
 square, *a. sing.* 47/104  
 square, *adv.* 129/674  
 bare, *adj.*  
   declare, *inf.* 107/90  
 capare, *obj.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 110/170  
   spare, *imper.* 110/173  
 care, *obj.*  
   cynabare, *obl.* 211/118  
 care, *obl.*  
   forfare, *pp.* 138/931  
   spare, *inf.* 42/1148  
 columbare, *adj. sing.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 220/354  
   rare, *adj. pl.* 220/355  
 cynabare, *obl.*  
   care, *obj.* 211/119  
 declare, *inf.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 197/277  
   bare, *adj.* 107/91  
   spare, *inf.* 197/278  
 fare, *inf.*  
   chare, *obl.* 159/42  
 fecundare, *a. pl.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 36/982  
   mare, *obl.* 36/984  
 forfare, *pp.*  
   care, *obl.* 138/932  
 mare, *obl.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 36/982, 136/  
   887  
   fecundare, *a. pl.* 36/985  
   nare, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 136/888  
 nare, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 136/887  
   mare, *obl.* 136/885  
 pare, *inf.*  
   repare, *inf.* 80/531  
 rare, *a. pl.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 5/101, 80/535,  
   84/651, 220/354  
   columbare, *adj. sing.* 220/352  
 rare, *a. sing.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 4/87, 98/1042,  
   164/21

rare, *adv.*  
   spare, *adv.* 110/185  
 repare, *inf.* renew (*see* repaire)  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 107/87  
   pare, *inf.* 80/532  
   stare, *inf.* 208/48  
 spare, *inf.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 110/170, 197/  
   277  
   capare, *obj.* 110/172  
   care, *obl.* 42/1147  
   declare, *inf.* 197/275  
 spare, *adv.*  
   rare, *adv.* 110/183  
 square, *a. sing.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 47/105  
 square, *adv.*  
   are, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 129/676  
 stare, *inf.*  
   repare, *inf.* 208/49

-ares (*see* -are is)

hares, *nom.*  
   tares, *obj.* 62/36  
 tares, *obj.*  
   hares, *nom.* 62/38  
 mares, *nom.*  
   \*ware is, 28/756

-are is (*see* -ares, -arys)

ware is  
   mares, *nom.* 28/755  
 bare is  
   marys, *obj.* 132/779

-arge

charge, *nom.*  
   large, *obl.* 28/746  
   charge, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 28/747  
 charge, *obj.*  
   large, *adj. pl.* 120/442  
   charge, *v. 1 sing. pres.*  
   charge, *nom.* 28/744  
   enlarge, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 6/138  
   large, *adv.* 6/135, 27/720  
   large, *obl.* 28/746

charge, *inf.*  
 large, *adj. pl.* 134/819  
 enlarge, *imper.*  
 large, *a. sing.* 40/1100  
 enlarge, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 charge, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 6/137  
 large, *adv.* 6/135  
 large, *adj. pl.*  
 charge, *inf.* 134/820  
 charge, *obj.* 120/444  
 large, *a. sing.*  
 enlarge, *imper.* 40/1102  
 large, *adv.*  
 charge, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 6/137,  
 27/721  
 enlarge, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 6/138  
 large, *obl.*  
 charge, *nom.* 28/744  
 charge, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 28/247

**-arie**

adversarie, *nom.*  
 necessarie, *a. sing.* 20/527  
 warie, *imper.* 20/530  
 carie, *inf.*<sup>1</sup>  
 necessarie, *adj. sing.* 159/49  
 necessarie, *a. sing.*  
 adversarie, *nom.* 20/529  
 carie, *inf.* 159/48  
 warie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 14/353  
 warie, *imper.* 20/530  
 unnecessary, *adj. sing.*  
 carie,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 143/88  
 warie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 necessarie, *a. sing.* 14/351  
 warie, *imper.*  
 adversarie, *nom.* 20/529  
 necessarie, *a. sing.* 20/527

**-ary**

pampinary, *a. pl.*  
 vary, *inf.* 65/116  
 wary, *inf.* 65/117  
 rosary, *obj.*  
 seminary, *obj.* 108/125

seminary, *obj.*  
 rosary, *obj.* 108/126  
 vary, *inf.*  
 pampinary, *a. pl.* 65/114  
 wary, *inf.* 65/117  
 wary, *inf.*  
 pampinary, *a. pl.* 65/114  
 vary, *inf.* 65/116

**-arys (see -are is)**

marys, *obj.*  
 bare is, 132/781

**-ark (see -erk)**

kark, *inf.*  
 \*werk, *obl.* 129/700

**-arme**

charme, *obj.*  
 harme, *obj.* 20/540  
 enarme, *inf.*  
 harme, *inf.* 19/501  
 warme, *a. pl.* 23/622  
 warme, *inf.* 19/499  
 harme, 3 *subj. pres.*  
 warme, *a. pl.* 45/41  
 harme, *inf.*  
 enarme, *inf.* 19/502  
 warme, *a. pl.* 99/1063, 194/202  
 warme, *adj. sing.* 93/897, 218/  
 322  
 warme, *inf.* 19/499  
 harme, *obj.*  
 charme, *obj.* 20/542  
 warme, *a. pl.* 96/981  
 warme, *a. sing.* 13/344  
 harme, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 warme, *adj. pl.* 121/470  
 warme, *a. pl.*  
 enarme, *inf.* 23/623  
 harme, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 121/472  
 harme, 3 *subj. pres.* 45/42  
 harme, *inf.* 99/1064 194/203  
 harme, *obj.* 96/983

<sup>1</sup> Miswritten in MS. *caire*.

warme, *a. sing.*

harme, *inf.* 93/899, 218/321

harme, *obj.* 13/346

warme, *inf.*

enarme, *inf.* 19/502

harme, *inf.* 19/501

-art (*see* -arte)

part, *obj.*

\*departe, *inf.* 202/423

-arte (*see* -art)

departe, *inf.*

\*part, *obj.* 202/421

-arted

coarted, *pp.*

darted, *pp.* 101/1132

departed, *pp.* 101/1129

darted, *pp.*

coarted, *pp.* 101/1131

departed, *pp.* 101/1129

departed, *pp.*

coarted, *pp.* 101/1131

darted, *pp.* 101/1132

-asse

asse, *obl.*

nasse, *v.* 3 *sing. past.* 136/886

brasse, *a. sing.*

passe, *imper.* 40/1095

nasse, *v.* 3 *sing. past*

asse, *obl.* 136/884

passe, *imper.*

brasse, *a. sing.* 40/1093

passe, *inf.*

passe, *obj.* 205/500

passe, *obj.*

passe, *inf.* 205/498

-aste (*see* -aaste)

caste, *imper.*

caste, *inf.* 164/9

laste, *adv.* 164/11

caste, *inf.*

caste, *imper.* 164/12

laste, *adv.* 164/11

faste, *adv.*

haste, *inf.* 85/686

haste, *inf.*

faste, *adv.* 85/685

haste, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*

waste, *inf.* 140/3

laste, *adv.*

caste, *imper.* 164/12

caste, *inf.* 164/9

waste, *inf.*

haaste, *inf.* 91/843

haste, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 140/1

-at (*see* -ate)

ablaqueat, *adj. pl.*

\*astate, *obl.* 151/59

-ate (*see* -at and -atte)

abate, *inf.*

desolate, *inf.* 44/4

temporate, *a. pl.* 44/2

adorate, *adj. pl.*

desiccate, *adj. sing.* 110/179

pastynate, *adj. pl.* 110/177

astate, *nom.*

moderate, *a. sing.* 98/1035

astate, *obl.*

\*ablaqueat, *adj. pl.* 151/57

fortunate, *v.* 3 *sing. imper.* 7/180

temporate, *a. pl.* 7/177, 61/1

ate, *prep.* (*see* atte)

temporate, *adj. pl.* 153/127

celebrate, *pp.*

variate, *adj. sing.* 209/52

concate, *a. sing.*

dilate, *inf.* 70/254

revocate, *a. sing.* 70/256

desiccate, *adj. sing.*

adorate, *adj. pl.* 110/180

pastynate, *adj. pl.* 110/177

desolate, *inf.*

abate, *inf.* 44/5

temporate, *a. pl.* 44/2

dilate, *inf.*

concate, *a. sing.* 70/257

revocate, *pp.* 70/256

emplastrate, *adj. pl.*  
   enoculate, *inf.* 144/131  
   temperate, *adj. pl.* 144/129  
 enoculate, *inf.*  
   emplastrate, *adj. pl.* 144/132  
   temperate, *adj. pl.* 144/129  
 estate, *obj.*  
   refrigerate, *pp.* 160/62  
 fortunate, *v. 3. sing. imper.*  
   astate, *obl.* 7/179  
   temporate, *a. pl.* 7/177  
 inclinate, *a. sing.*  
   temporate, *a. pl.* 94/918  
 inoculate, *pp.*  
   mediate, *adj. sing.* 127/647  
 mediate, *adj. sing.*  
   inoculate, *pp.* 127/645  
 moderate, *a. sing.*  
   astate, *nom.* 98/1036  
 pastynate, *pp.*  
   adorate, *adj. pl.* 110/180  
   desiccate, *pp.* 110/179  
   state, *nom.* 63/52  
 refrigerate, *pp.*  
   estate, *obj.* 160/63  
 revoke, *a. sing.*  
   concavate, *a. sing.* 70/257  
   dilate, *inf.* 70/254  
 state, *nom.*  
   pastynate, *a. pl.* 63/50  
 temperate, *adj. pl.*  
   emplastrate, *adj. pl.* 144/132  
   enoculate, *inf.* 144/131  
 temporate, *a. pl.*  
   abate, *inf.* 44/5  
   astate, *obl.* 61/3, 7/179  
   ate, *prep.* 153/129  
   \*atte, *prep.* 192/150  
   desolate, *inf.* 44/4  
   fortunate, *v. 3. sing. imper.* 7/180  
   inclinate, *a. sing.* 94/920  
 temporate, *a. sing.*  
   \*atte, *prep.* 45/31  
 variate, *adj. sing.*  
   celebrate, *pp.* 209/50  
 violate, *a. sing.*  
   \*ytake, *pp.* 103/1172

## -ateth

abateth, *v. 3. pl. pres.*  
   hateth, *v. 3. sing. pres.* 23/618  
   prateth, *v. 3. sing. pres.* 23/620  
 hateth, *v. 3. pl. pres.*  
   abateth, *v. 3. pl. pres.* 23/621  
   prateth, *v. 3. sing. pres.* 23/620  
 prateth, *v. 3. sing. pres.*  
   abateth, *v. 3. pl. pres.* 23/621  
   hateth, *v. 3. sing. pres.* 23/618

## -athes (see -athe is)

bathes, *nom. pl.*  
   scathe is, 40/1106, 41/1116

## -athe is (see -athes)

scathe is  
   bathes, *nom. pl.* 40/1106, 41/1116.

## at is (see attes)

that is  
   gnattes, *obl.* 32/869

## -atte (see -ate)

atte, *prep.*  
   \*temporate, *adj. pl.* 192/148  
   \*temporate, *a. sing.* 45/29

## -attes

cattes, *nom.*  
   gnattes, *obj.* 33/905  
   rattes, *obj.* 33/907  
 gnattes, *obj.*  
   cattes, *nom.* 33/908  
   rattes, *obj.* 33/907  
 gnattes, *obl.*  
   that is, 32/871  
 rattes, *obj.*  
   cattes, *nom.* 33/908  
   gnattes, *obj.* 33/905

## -aunce (see -ance, annce)

abundaunce, *obj.*  
   perchaunce, *adv.* 51/217  
 avaunce, *inf.*  
   gouernance, *nom.* 5/107  
   perchaunce, *adv.* 5/110

consideraunce, *nom.*  
 gouvernance, *obl.* 2/16  
 plesaunce, *obl.* 2/18  
 fecundaunce, *obl.*  
 pleasaunce, *obl.* 134/836  
 perchaunce, *adv.*  
 abundaunce, *obj.* 51/217  
 avaunce, *inf.* 5/109  
 gouvernance, *nom.* 5/107  
 pleasaunce, *obl.*  
 consideraunce, *nom.* 2/19  
 fecundance, *obl.* 134/838  
 gouvernance, *obl.* 2/16

**-aunge**

chaunge, *obj.*  
 straunge, *adj. pl.* 129/688  
 straunge, *adj. sing.* 143/98  
 chaunge, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 eschaunge, *obl.* 9/236  
 estraunge, *a. sing.* 9/235  
 eschaunge, *obl.*  
 chaunge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 9/233  
 estraunge, *a. sing.* 9/235  
 estraunge, *a. sing.*  
 chaunge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 9/233  
 eschaunge, *obl.* 9/236  
 straunge, *adj. sing.*  
 chaunge, *obj.* 122/690, 143/99

**-aunt (see -aunte)**

denaunt, *prep.*  
 haunt, *obj.* 160/75  
 \*plaunte, *inf.* 160/72  
 haunt, *inf.*  
 plesaunt, *adj. sing.* 113/253  
 haunt, *obj.*  
 denaunt, *prep.* 160/74  
 \*plaunte, *inf.* 160/72  
 plesaunt, *adj. sing.*  
 haunt, *inf.* 113/255

**-aunte (see -aunte and -aunt)**

chaunte, *inf.*  
 plesaunte, *a. sing.* 21/562  
 transversaunte, *a. pl.* 21/564

haunte, *inf.*  
 plesaunte, *adj. pl.* 134/828  
 plaunte, *inf.*  
 \*denaunt, *prep.* 160/74  
 \*haunt, *obj.* 160/75  
 plesaunte, *adj. pl.*  
 haunte, *inf.* 134/830  
 plesaunte, *a. sing.*  
 chaunte, *inf.* 21/565  
 transversaunte, *a. pl.* 21/564

**-aunted**

haunted, *pp.*  
 transplaunted, *pp.* 51/195  
 transplaunted, *pp.*  
 haunted, *pp.* 51/196

**-ave**

cave, *obl.*  
 have, *inf.* 147/194  
 shave, *imper.* 147/195  
 chave, *imper.* 2 *sing.*  
 have, *imper.* 13/340  
 pave, *imper.* 13/341  
 clave, *nom. sing.*  
 have, *inf.* 119/441  
 clave, *obl.*  
 crave, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 119/417  
 have, *inf.* 119/418, 119/430  
 crave, *imper.*  
 have, *inf.* 184/139  
 crave, *inf.*  
 have, *inf.* 85/667  
 save, 3 *pl. pres.* 85/670  
 crave, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 clave, *obl.* 119/415  
 have, *inf.* 91/854, 119/418  
 have, *imper.*  
 chave, *imper.* 2 *sing.* 13/338  
 pave, *imper.* 13/341  
 pave, *inf.* 155/176  
 have, *inf.*  
 cave, *obl.* 147/192  
 clave, *obl.* 119/415, 119/428,  
 119/440  
 crave, *imper.* 184/140



crave, *inf.* 85/669  
 crave, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 91/853, 119/  
     417  
 save, *inf.* 100/1086  
 shave, *imper.* 147/195  
 have, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*  
     save, *imper.* 118/395  
 pave, *imper.*  
     chave, *imper.* 2 *sing.* 13/338  
     have, *imper.* 13/340  
 pave, *inf.*  
     have, *imper.* 155/178  
 save, *imper.*  
     have, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 118/393  
 save, *inf.*  
     have, *inf.* 100/1088  
 save, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
     crave, *inf.* 85/669  
     have, *inf.* 85/667  
     shave, *pp.* 74/370  
 shave, *imper.*  
     cave, *obl.* 147/192  
     have, *inf.* 147/194  
 shave, *pp.*  
     save, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 74/371  
  
     -aved  
 graved, *pp.*  
     saved, *pp.* 150/43  
 saved, *pp.*  
     graved, *pp.* 150/45  
  
     -awe  
 drawe, *inf.*  
     lawe, *obl.* 166/68  
     withdrawe, *pp.* 166/65  
 lawe, *obl.*  
     drawe, *inf.* 166/67  
     withdrawe, *pp.* 166/65  
 withdrawe, *pp.*  
     drawe, *inf.* 166/67  
     lawe, *obl.* 166/68  
  
     -axe  
 laxe, *adj. sing.*  
     waxe, *inf.* 197/283

waxe, *inf.*  
     laxe, *adj. sing.* 197/281  
  
     -e (see -ee and -ie)  
 be, *imper.*  
     fle, 3 *pl. pr.* 201/397  
     three, *adj. pl.* 200/378  
     peretre, *obl.* 185/176  
     quantitee, *nom.* 192/157  
     quantitee, *obl.* 201/397  
 be, *inf.*  
     chiritree, *obl.* 102/1147  
     bee, *obj.* 39/1064  
     countree, *obl.* 79/512  
     difficultee, *obl.* 150/25  
     eternitee, *obl.* 86/721  
     extremitee, *obj.* 119/436  
     fecunditee, *obl.* 70/253  
     \*fecunditie, *nom.* 11/282  
     felicitee, *obl.* 207/5  
     feracitee, *obl.* 209/68  
     fertilitee, *obj.* 11/284, 171/12  
     fig-tree, *obj.* 218/313  
     fle, *inf.* 34/929, 54/297  
     free, *a. sing.* 46/75  
     he, *pron.* 29/785  
     hillaritee, *obl.* 135/852  
     humyditee, *nom.* 183/112  
     libertee, *obl.* 130/724  
     necessitee, *obl.* 49/134  
     poverttee, *obl.* 188/37  
     puritee, *obj.* 201/405  
     pynappultree, *obl.* 98/1049  
     qualitee, *obl.* 83/628, 86/694,  
     188/40  
     quantitee, *nom. sing.* 168/117  
     se, *imper.* 39/1055, 117/362,  
     162/110, 199/333, 204/472  
     se, *inf.* 9/226, 36/986, 69/235,  
     72/306, 83/627, 84/661, 112/  
     243, 119/438, 171/9, 185/173  
     se, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 58/397  
     see, *inf.* 104/111, 135/850  
     see, *obl.* 130/726, 168/114, 120/  
     443, 184/145  
     she, *pron.* 26/695  
     solempnitee, *obl.* 207/2

- stre, *obl.* 93/890  
 stre, *obj.* 112/223  
 summittee, *obl.* 112/240  
 summyte, *obl.* 119/433  
 the, *art.* 131/741  
 the, *pron.* 69/236  
 the, *inf.* 111/216  
 thee, *pron.* 120/446  
 thre, *adj. pl.* 26/697, 46/72,  
 109/143, 199/331  
 three, *num.* 34/926, 185/170  
 tre, *num. adj.* 142/72  
 tree, *nom.* 58/394, 67/180, 209/  
 65  
 tree, *obj.* 39/1052, 72/303, 104/  
 12, 189/62, 218/312  
 tree, *obl.* 58/391, 68/204, 69/  
 220, 78/488, 87/731, 88/773,  
 92/876, 117/359, 121/484,  
 122/519, 150/26, 162/107,  
 198/328  
 ubertee, *obl.* 64/104  
 utilitee, *nom. sing.* 184/144, 78/  
 485  
 utilitee, *obl.* 131/738  
 virginitee, *obl.* 9/229  
 ye, *pron.* 51/190  
 be, *obl.*  
 flee, *inf.* 146/180  
 see, *inf.* 146/178  
 be, *pp.*  
 see, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 20/541  
 the, *pron.* 20/544  
 be, *subj.*  
 asperitee, *obl.* 86/712  
 figtree, *obl.* 204/490  
 flee, *imper.* 6/150  
 frigiditee, *nom. sing.* 108/124  
 he, *pron.* 126/610  
 humyditee, *obl.* 95/957  
 kepe, *imper.* 183/123  
 lepe, *v. 3. sing. pres.* 183/121  
 libertee, *obl.* 94/938  
 me, *pron.* 75/393  
 propurtee, *obl.* 165/23  
 quantitee, *obj.* 115/325  
 quantitee, *obl.* 198/312  
 se, *inf.* 108/123, 198/313  
 se, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 96/984, 189/52  
 see, *inf.* 146/178, 165/25  
 see, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 109/151  
 the, *art.* 109/152  
 the, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 97/1012  
 three, *a. pl.* 72/324, 88/758,  
 90/819, 153/107  
 tree, *nom.* 95/956  
 tree, *obl.* 72/327, 86/711, 88/  
 760, 96/985, 97/1013, 108/  
 113, 153/109  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 Almandtree, *obj.* 212/156  
 bee, *nom. sing.* 155/170  
 contumacitee, *obj.* 128/691  
 extremyte, *obl.* 215/243  
 felicitee, *obl.* 124/555  
 fertilittee, *nom. sing.* 174/89  
 fertilittee, *obj.* 124/557  
 fertilittee, *obl.* 212/159  
 firmittee, *obl.* 134/829  
 flee, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/81  
 he, *pron.* 127/648, 195/221,  
 195/228  
 iniquitee, *obl.* 167/89  
 naturalitee, *obj.* 134/832  
 propretee, *obl.* 128/688  
 qualitee, *obl.* 129/689  
 quan[t]itee, *obl.* 77/464  
 rotunditee, *obl.* 133/803  
 se, *inf.* 171/5, 104/5  
 se, *v. 1 pl. pres.* 32/865  
 see, *imper.* 149/19  
 see, *inf.* 129/692  
 see, *obl.* 149/10, 171/4  
 see, *v. 3. pl. pres.* 174/88  
 sle, *inf.* 32/863  
 slee, *inf.* 155/173  
 solempnitee, *obj.* 104/2  
 stre, *obl.* 121/491  
 three, *num. adj.* 47/92, 149/18,  
 67/177  
 tree, *obl.* 120/463, 126/631,  
 127/649, 161/92, 195/219,  
 195/226, 215/238, 215/240,  
 220/357

- ubertee, *obj.* 167/88  
 ubertee, *obl.* 174/79  
 we, *pron.* 164/19  
 ye, *pron.* 133/804, 164/16  
 be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*  
   Amynee, *nom.* 64/86  
   bee, *nom. sing.* 218/317  
   bee, *obj.* 173/60  
   fecunditee, *obl.* 182/79  
   fertilitee, *obj.* 182/82  
   fertilitee, *obl.* 65/106  
   flee, *inf.* 146/176  
   he, *pron.* 11/279, 143/84, 170/166  
   peryttee, *obj.* 173/58  
   poverttee, *obj.* 219/331  
   se, *imper.* 77/467, 203/460, 219/334  
   se, *inf.* 61/17, 218/320  
   se, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.* 195/235  
   she, *pron.* 170/165  
   the, *pron.* 170/163  
   three, *num. adj.* 7/153  
   three, *num. adj.* 64/89, 142/65  
   tree, *obj.* 182/92, 195/233  
   tree, *obl.* 73/351, 128/683, 147/196, 190/78, 203/457  
 cle, *obl.*  
   sle, *inf.* 109/155  
 extremyte, *obl.*  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 215/242  
   tree, *obl.* 215/240  
 fecunditee, *obl.*  
   felicitee, *nom.* 138/933  
 fle, *inf.*  
   be, *inf.* 34/928, 54/295  
   three, *obl.* 34/926  
 fle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   be, *imper.* 201/396  
   quantitee, *obl.* 201/394  
 forme, *obj.*  
   \*me, *pron.* 60/448  
 he, *pron.*  
   Almauntree, *obl.* 194/200  
   be, *inf.* 29/787  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 127/646, 195/222, 195/229  
   be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 11/280, 143/85, 170/168  
   chiritree, *obj.* 194/201  
   flee, *inf.* 33/901  
   see, *obl.* 183/113  
   see, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 33/900  
   she, *pron.* 170/165  
   the, *pron.* 170/163  
   tree, *obl.* 127/649, 195/219, 195/226  
 maturitee, *obl.*  
   \*kepe, *obj.* 183/126  
 me, *pron.*  
   be, *subj.* 75/395  
   forme, *obj.* 60/447  
 se, *imper.*  
   be, *inf.* 39/1054, 117/361, 162/109, 199/334, 204/470  
   be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 77/466, 203/459, 219/333  
   poverttee, *obj.* 219/331  
   quan[t]itee, *obl.* 77/464  
   three, *num.* 199/331  
   three, *num.* 196/251  
   tree, *obj.* 39/1052  
   tree, *obl.* 117/359, 162/107, 203/457  
 se, *inf.*  
   be, *inf.* 9/228, 36/987, 69/233, 72/305, 83/625, 84/659, 112/242, 119/439, 171/111, 185/172  
   be, *subj.* 108/121, 198/310  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 104/4, 171/2  
   be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 61/15, 218/319  
   bee, *nom. sing.* 218/317  
   bee, *obl.* 146/164  
   extremitee, *obj.* 119/436  
   fertilitee, *obj.* 171/12  
   flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/166  
   frigiditee, *nom. sing.* 108/124  
   quantitee, *nom. sing.* 220/366  
   quantitee, *obl.* 83/628, 198/312  
   see, *obl.* 171/4  
   solempnitee, *obj.* 104/2

- summittee, *obl.* 112/240  
 summyte, *obl.* 214/205  
 the, *pron.* 69/236  
 thee, *pron.* 214/207  
 thre, *adj.* 185/170  
 tree, *obl.* 220/369  
 tree, *obj.* 72/303  
 virginitee, *obl.* 9/229  
 se, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.*  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 32/866  
   sle, *inf.* 32/863  
 se, *v.* 1 *sing. pres.*  
   be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 195/236  
   tree, *obj.* 195/233  
 se, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   be, *inf.* 58/396  
   tree, *nom.* 58/394  
 se, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.*  
   be, *subj.* 96/982, 189/50  
   tree, *obl.* 96/985  
 she, *pron.*  
   be, *inf.* 26/698  
   be, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 170/168  
   he, *pron.* 170/166  
   the, *pron.* 170/163  
   thre, *num. adj.* 26/697  
 sle, *inf.*  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 32/866  
   cle, *obl.* 109/157  
   se, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.* 32/865  
 stre, *obj.*  
   be, *inf.* 112/224  
 stre, *obl.*  
   be, *inf.* 93/892  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/493  
 summyte, *obl.*  
   be *inf.* 119/434  
   se, *inf.* 214/208  
   thee, *pron.* 214/207  
 the, *art.*  
   be, 131/740  
   utilitee, *obj.* 131/738  
 the, *pron.*  
   be, *subj.* 109/149  
   be, *inf.* 69/233  
   be, *pp.* 20/543  
   be, *v.* 3 *pres. sing.* 170/168  
   he, *pron.* 170/166  
   se, *inf.* 69/235  
   see, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 109/151  
   see, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 20/541  
   she, *pron.* 170/165  
 the, *inf.*  
   be, *inf.* 111/217  
 the, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   be, *subj.* 97/1010  
   tree, *obl.* 97/1013  
 thre, *num. adj.*  
   be, *inf.* 26/698, 46/74, 109/141,  
     199/334  
   be, *v.* 3 *sing.* 7/154  
   free, *a. sing.* 46/75  
   se, *imper.* 199/333  
   she, *pron.* 26/695  
 tre, *num. adj.*  
   be, *inf.* 142/74  
 we, *pron.*  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 164/18  
   ye, *pron.* 164/16  
 ye, *pron.*  
   be, *inf.* 51/192  
   be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 133/801, 164/  
     18  
   rotunditee, *obl.* 133/803  
   we, *pron.* 164/19  
  
   -eane (*see* -ene)  
 demeane, *imper.*  
   clene, *a. pl.* 55/323  
  
   -eason (*see* -eson)  
 reason, *nom.*  
   season, *obl.* 10/258  
 reason, *obl.*  
   geson, *adj. pl.* 164/5  
   leson, *inf.* 71/292  
   season, *obl.* 71/291  
   season, *nom.* 164/2  
   season, *obj.* 144/130  
 season, *nom. sing.*  
   geson, *adj. pl.* 164/5  
   leson, *inf.* 71/292  
   reason, *obl.* 164/4

season, *obj.*

reason, *obl.* 144/128

season, *obl.*

appeson, *inf.* 120/448

geson, *adj. pl.* 106/65

peson, *nom. pl.* 106/68

reason, *nom.* 10/259

reason, *obl.* 71/289

**-ebre** (*see -ever*)

elebre, *nom.*

\*lever, *adj.* 38/1046

**-eche**

cleche, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

seche, *inf.* 145/156

deche, *inf.*

eche, *imp.* 41/1122

leche, *inf.* 41/1125

eche, *imp.*

deche, *inf.* 41/1124

leche, *inf.* 41/1125

leche, *inf.*

deche, *inf.* 41/1124

eche, *imp.* 41/1122

leche, *nom. sing.*

peche, *obl.* 211/127

peche, *obl.*

leche, *nom. sing.* 211/129

pleche, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 76/418

reche, *subj.* 76/417

teche, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/248

pleche, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

peche, *obl.* 76/415

reche, *subj.* 76/417

reche, *subj.*

peche, *obl.* 76/415

pleche, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 76/418

seche, *inf.*

cleche, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 145/158

teche, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

peche, *obl.* 216/246

**-echeth**

plecheth, *v. 3 sing. pres.*

techeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 73/332

techeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.*

plecheth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 73/330

**-ecte**

confecte, *pp.*

dejecte, *imper.* 59/423

correcte, *inf.*

enfecte, *pp.* 11/294, 176/139

dejecte, *imper.*

confecte, *pp.* 59/421

directe, *adv.*

enfecte, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 155/177

tecte, *pp.* 155/180

directe, *adj.*

enfecte, *pp.* 214/206

enfecte, *pp.*

correcte, *inf.* 11/293, 176/140

directe, *adj.* 214/204

enfecte, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

directe, *adv.* 155/179

tecte, *pp.* 155/180

tecte, *pp.*

directe, *adv.* 155/179

enfecte, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 155/177

**-ed** (*see -eed and -eede*)

led, *pp.*

\*heed, *obl.* 177/166

\*leede, *obl.* 177/163

**-edde**

ledde, *pp.*

spreddde, *pp.* 68/211

spreddde, *pp.*

ledde, *pp.* 68/213

**-ede** (*see -eed, -eede and -eete*)

brede, *adj.*

lede, *inf.* 144/113

brede, *nom. sing.*

sprede, *pp.* 177/181

brede, *obl.*

drede, *inf.* 182/100

drede, *nom.* 68/210, 110/187

- fede, *imper.* 21/556  
 lede, *inf.* 18/464  
 lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 155/189  
 rede, *a. pl.* 18/467  
 seede, *inf.* 182/103  
 sprede, *inf.* 40/1099, 110/186  
 brede, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   dede, *adj.* 116/345  
   fede, *inf.* 116/348  
 dede, *inf.*  
   lede, *inf.* 57/368  
   rede, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 57/369  
 dede, *nom. sing.*  
   fede, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 191/130  
   \*weete, *adj. sing.* 191/128  
 dede, *obl.*  
   drede, *obj.* 111/207  
   drede, *obl.* 34/935  
   lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 111/205  
   trede, *inf.* 34/933  
 dede, *pp.*  
   brede, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 116/347  
   fede, *inf.* 116/348  
 dede, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
   nede, *obl.* 179/19  
   sprede, *inf.* 179/16  
 drede, *nom.*  
   brede, *obl.* 68/209, 110/184  
   sprede, *inf.* 110/186  
   weede, *imper.* 141/28  
 drede, *inf.*  
   brede, *obl.* 182/102  
   hede, *obj.* 39/1072  
   nede, *adj. sing.* 131/735  
   sede, *inf.* 11/268  
   seede, *inf.* 182/103  
   spede, *inf.* 11/270  
   wede, *inf.* 46/70  
 drede, *obj.*  
   dede, *obl.* 111/208  
   lede, 3 *subj. pres.* 111/205  
 drede, *obl.*  
   dede, *obl.* 34/936  
   need, 3 *sing.* 10/261  
   rede, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 107/95  
   sede, *inf.* 10/263, 107/96  
   sprede, *inf.* 96/987
- excede, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
   succede, *v. sing. pres.* 161/105  
 fede, *imper.*  
   brede, *obl.* 21/554  
   lede, *inf.* 217/285  
   seede, *inf.* 217/284  
 fede, *inf.*  
   brede, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 116/347  
   dede, *adj.* 116/345  
   lede, *inf.* 24/646, 27/716  
   nede, *obl.* 27/718  
   rede, *a. pl.* 24/649  
   sede, *inf.* 181/77  
 fede, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
   dede, *nom. sing.* 191/131  
   \*weete, *adj. sing.* 191/128  
 hede, *obj.*  
   drede, *inf.* 39/1074  
 lede, *inf.*  
   brede, *obl.* 18/466, 144/112  
   dede, *inf.* 57/366  
   fede, *imper.* 217/282  
   fede, *inf.* 24/648, 27/719  
   lede, *inf.* 177/174, 177/175  
   nede, *obl.* 27/718  
   rede, *a. pl.* 18/467, 24/649  
   rede, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 57/369  
   seede, *inf.* 217/284  
 lede, 3 *subj. pres.*  
   dede, *obl.* 111/208  
   drede, *obj.* 111/207  
   brede, *obl.* 155/188  
   trede, *inf.* 182/99  
 mede, *obl.*  
   sprede, *imper.* 13/325  
 nede, *adj. sing.*  
   drede, *inf.* 131/736  
   procede, *imper.* 30/818  
   sprede, *inf.* 62/30  
   weede, *inf.* 62/32  
 nede, *obl.*  
   dede, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 179/18  
   fede *inf.* 27/719  
   lede, *inf.* 27/716  
   sprede, *imper.* 13/325, 40/1091  
   sprede, *inf.* 179/16



procede, *imper.*  
   nede, *a. sing.* 30/819  
 procede, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   wede, *inf.* 81/561  
 rede, *a. pl.*  
   brede, *obl.* 18/466  
   fede, *inf.* 24/648  
   lede, *inf.* 18/464, 24/646  
 rede, *v. 1 sing. pres.*  
   drede, *obl.* 107/93  
   sede, *inf.* 107/96  
   sprede, *inf.* 192/158  
   weede, *imper.* 192/156  
 rede, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   dede, *inf.* 57/366  
   lede, *inf.* 57/368  
 sede, *inf.*  
   drede, *inf.* 11/271  
   drede, *obl.* 10/264, 107/93  
   fede, *inf.* 181/76  
   heede, *obj.* 151/73  
   \*need, *sing. pres.* 10/261  
   rede, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 107/95  
   spede, *inf.* 11/270  
 spede, *inf.*  
   drede, *inf.* 11/271  
   sede, *inf.* 11/268  
 sprede, *imper.*  
   mede, *obl.* 13/323  
   nede, *obl.* 40/1092  
 sprede, *inf.*  
   brede, *nom. sing.* 177/182  
   brede, *obl.* 40/1098, 110/184  
   dede, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 179/18  
   drede, *nom.* 110/187  
   drede, *obl.* 96/986  
   nede, *a. sing.* 62/33  
   nede, *obl.* 179/19  
   rede, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 192/159  
   weede, *imper.* 192/156  
   weede, *inf.* 62/32  
 succede, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
   excede, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 161/104  
 trede, *inf.*  
   dede, *obl.* 34/936  
   drede, *obl.* 34/935  
   lede, *3 subj. pres.* 182/101

wede, *inf.*  
   drede, *nom.* 46/69  
   procede, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 81/563  
  
 -ede is (*see -edes, -edys, -eedes, -eed is, and -eedys*)  
 dede is,  
   need is, 53/271  
   seedes, *obj.* 53/268  
   seedys, *nom. pl.* 184/160  
 drede is,  
   eedes, *obl.* 28/743  
   weedes, *obl.* 46/76  
 nede is,  
   seedes, *obj.* 29/792  
   spede is, 56/341, 70/250  
   stedes, *obl.* 31/828, 56/338  
   stedys, *obl.* 70/247  
   wede is, 31/830  
 spede is,  
   nede is, 56/340, 70/249  
   stedes, *obl.* 56/338  
   stedys, *obl.* 70/247  
 wede is,  
   stedes, *obl.* 31/828  
   nede is, 31/831  
  
 -edes (*see ede is and eede is*)  
 redes, *obl.*  
   drede is, 28/745  
 sedes, *obj.*  
   seede is, 51/213  
 stedes, *obl.*  
   nede is, 31/831, 56/340  
   spede is, 56/341  
   wede is, 31/830  
  
 -edeth (*see -eedeth*)  
 ledeth, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   proceedeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 121/  
   473  
   succedeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 121/  
   471

succedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*  
 ledeth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 121/474  
 proceedeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/  
 473

-edys (*see -ede is*)

stedys, *nom. pl.*  
 nede is, 70/249  
 spede is, 70/250

-ee (*see -e and -ie*)

Almandtree, *obj.*  
 be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 212/158  
 fertilitee, *obl.* 212/159  
 Almauntree, *obl.*  
 chiritree, *obj.* 194/201  
 he, *pron.* 194/198  
 Amynee, *a. pl.*  
 be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 64/88  
 three, *num. adj.* 64/89  
 asperitee, *obl.*  
 be, *subj.* 86/709  
 tree, *obl.* 86/711  
 auctoritee, *nom.*  
 jocunditee, *obl.* 101/1121  
 beautee, *obj.*  
 qualitee, *obl.* 133/786  
 beautee, *obl.*  
 densitee, *obl.* 133/794  
 see, *inf.* 133/797  
 bee, *nom. sing.*  
 be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 155/172  
 be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 218/319  
 se, *inf.* 218/320  
 slee, *inf.* 155/173  
 bee, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 39/1063  
 be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 173/61  
 perytree, *obj.* 173/58  
 bee, *obl.*  
 flee, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/166  
 se, *inf.* 146/167  
 chastitee, *obl.*  
 tree, *nom.* 9/230

chiritree, *obj.*  
 Almauntree, *obl.* 194/200  
 he, *pron.* 194/198  
 Chiritree, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 102/1148  
 tree, *obj.* 194/213  
 citurtree, *obl.*  
 felicitee, *obl.* 166/52  
 contumacitee, *obj.*  
 be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 128/690  
 proprettee, *obl.* 128/688  
 countree, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 79/514  
 densitee, *obj.*  
 immensitee, *nom.* 56/357  
 densitee, *obl.*  
 beautee, *obl.* 133/796  
 see, *inf.* 133/797  
 difficultee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 150/23  
 tree, *obl.* 150/26  
 eternitee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 86/720  
 eternytee, *obj.*  
 fertilitee, *obl.* 121/475  
 extremitee, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 119/439  
 se, *inf.* 119/438  
 fecunditee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 70/255  
 be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 182/81  
 fertilitee, *obj.* 182/82  
 felicitee, *nom.*  
 fecunditee, *obl.* 138/935  
 felicitee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 207/4  
 be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/558  
 citurtree, *obl.* 166/50  
 fertilitee, *obj.* 124/557  
 solempnitee, *obl.* 207/2  
 feracitee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 209/67  
 tree, *nom. sing.* 209/65  
 fertilitee, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 171/111  
 be, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 124/558  
 be, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 182/81

- \*fecunditie, *nom.* 11/282  
 fecunditee, *obl.* 182/79  
 felicitee, *obl.* 124/555  
 se, *inf.* 171/9  
 fertilitée, *nom. sing.*  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/86  
 see, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/88  
 fertilitée, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 11/285  
 \*fecunditie, *nom.* 11/282  
 fertilitée, *obl.*  
 Almandtree, *obj.* 212/156  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 212/158  
 be, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 65/108  
 eternytee, *obj.* 121/476  
 utilitee, *obl.* 79/524  
 Fig-tree, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 218/310  
 tree, 218/312  
 figtree, *obl.*  
 be, *subj.* 204/489  
 firmitée, *obl.*  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 134/831  
 naturalitee, *obj.* 134/832  
 flee, *imper.*  
 be, *v. 3 subj.* 6/148  
 flee, *inf.*  
 be, *obl.* 146/181  
 be, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 146/175  
 he, *pron.* 33/898  
 see, *inf.* 116/350, 146/178  
 see, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 33/900  
 flee, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 bee, *obl.* 146/164  
 be, *v. 3. pl. pres.* 174/82  
 se, *inf.* 146/167  
 ubertee, *obl.* 174/79  
 free, *a. sing.*  
 be, *inf.* 46/74  
 thre, *num. adj.* 46/72  
 frigiditee, *nom. sing.*  
 be, *subj.* 108/121  
 se, *inf.* 108/123  
 hillaritee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 135/853  
 se, *inf.* 135/850  
 humyditee, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 183/111  
 humyditee, *obl.*  
 be, *subj.* 95/954  
 tree, *nom.* 95/956  
 immensitee, *nom.*  
 densitee, *obj.* 56/356  
 iniquitee, *obl.*  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 167/86  
 ubertee, *obj.* 167/88  
 jocunditee, *obl.*  
 auctoritee, *nom.* 101/1123  
 libertee, *obl.*  
 be, *subj.* 94/937  
 be, *inf.* 130/727  
 see, *obl.* 130/726  
 medietee, *obl.*  
 subtiltee, *obj.* 197/290  
 naturalitee, *obj.*  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 134/831  
 firmitée, *obl.* 134/829  
 necessitee, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 49/136  
 peretree, *obl.*  
 be, *imper.* 185/178  
 perytree, *obj.*  
 be, *v. subj.* 173/61  
 bee, *obj.* 173/60  
 povertée, *obj.*  
 be, *imper.* 219/333  
 se, *imper.* 219/334  
 povertée, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 188/39  
 qualitee, *obl.* 188/40  
 propretée, *obl.*  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 128/690  
 contumacitee, *obj.* 128/691  
 propurtee, *obl.*  
 be, *subj.* 165/26  
 see, *inf.* 165/25  
 puritee, *obj.*  
 be, *inf.* 201/406  
 pynappultree, *obl.*  
 be, *inf.* 98/1050

qualitee, *obl.*

beautee, *obj.* 133/788

be, *inf.* 86/696, 188/39

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 129/691

poverttee, *obl.* 188/37

see, *inf.* 129/692

quantitee, *nom. sing.*

be, *inf.* 168/116

be, *imper.* 192/155

se, *inf.* 220/368

See, *obl.* 168/114

three, *num. adj.* 116/333

tree, *nom.* 79/518

tree, *obl.* 220/369, 116/331

quantitee, *obj.*

be, *inf.* 83/625

be, *subj.* 115/323, 198/310

se, *inf.* 83/627

quantitee, *obl.*

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 77/466

fle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 201/397

se, *inf.* 198/313

se, *imper.* 77/467

be, *imper.* 201/396

rotunditee, *obl.*

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 133/801

ye, *pron.* 133/804

see, *imper.*

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 149/16

the, *pron.* 109/152

three, *num. adj.* 149/18

see, *inf.*

beautee, *obl.* 133/796

be, *inf.* 104/9, 135/853

be, *obl.* 146/181

be, *subj.* 165/26

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 129/691

densitee, *obl.* 133/794

flee, *inf.* 116/349, 146/180

hillaritee, *obl.* 135/852

propurtee, *obl.* 165/23

qualitee, *obl.* 129/689

see, *obl.* 159/22

tree, *obj.* 104/12

tree, *obl.* 126/615

see, *obl.*

be, *inf.* 120/445, 130/727, 168/116, 184/142

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 149/8, 171/2

he, *pron.* 183/115

libertee, *obl.* 130/724

quantitee, *nom. sing.* 168/117

se, *inf.* 171/5

see, *inf.* 159/24

thee, *pron.* 120/446

three, *adj. pl.* 153/132

utilitee, *obj.* 184/144

see, *imper.*

be, *subj.* 109/149

he, *pron.* 33/898

flee, *inf.* 33/901

the, *pron.* 109/152

see, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/86

fertilitee, *nom. sing.* 174/89

see, *v. 3 sing. pres. subj.*

be, *pp.* 20/543

the, *pron.* 20/544

slee, *inf.*

be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 155/172

bee, *nom. sing.* 155/170

solempnitee, *obj.*

be, *v. 3 pres. pl.* 104/4

se, *inf.* 104/5

solempnitee, *obl.*

be, *inf.* 207/4

felicitee, *obl.* 207/5

subtiltee, *obj.*

medietee, *obl.* 197/288

summittee, *obl.*

be, *inf.* 112/242

se, *inf.* 112/243

thee, *pron.*

be, *inf.* 120/445

se, *inf.* 214/208

see, *obl.* 120/443

summyte, *obl.* 214/205

three, *num. adj.*

Amynee, *a. pl.* 64/86

be, *imper.* 200/377

- be, *subj.* 72/326, 88/761, 90/818, 153/110  
 be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 47/94, 64/88, 67/179  
 be, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 142/67  
 quantitee, *nom. sing.* 116/334  
 se, *imper.* 196/252  
 see, *obl.* 153/133  
 tree, *nom.* 67/180  
 tree, *obl.* 72/327, 88/760, 116/331, 153/109, 177/164  
 three, *obl.*  
   be *inf.* 34/928  
   fle, *inf.* 34/929  
 three (3)  
   be, *3 pl. pres.* 149/16  
   be, *inf.* 185/172  
   se, *inf.* 185/173  
   see, *imper.* 149/19  
 tree, *nom.*  
   be, *inf.* 58/396, 209/67  
   be, *subj.* 95/954  
   chastitee, *obl.* 9/231  
   feracitee, *obl.* 209/68  
   humyditee, *obl.* 95/957  
   quantitee, *nom.* 79/517  
   se, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 58/397  
 tree, *obj.*  
   be, *inf.* 39/1054, 72/305, 104/9, 218/310  
   be, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 182/94, 195/236  
   Chiritree, *obl.* 194/211  
   Fig-tree, *obj.* 218/313  
   se, *imper.* 39/1055  
   se, *inf.* 72/306  
   se, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 195/235  
   see, *inf.* 104/11  
 tree, *obl.*  
   asperitee, *obl.* 86/712  
   be, *inf.* 58/392, 68/206, 69/218, 78/487, 87/729, 88/771, 92/878, 117/361, 121/486, 122/521, 150/23, 162/109, 189/63, 198/329  
   be, *subj.* 72/326, 86/709, 88/761, 96/982, 97/1010, 108/115, 153/110  
   be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 120/465, 126/633, 127/646, 161/94, 195/222, 195/229, 215/237, 215/242  
   be, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 73/353, 128/684, 147/197, 190/80, 203/459  
   difficultee, *obl.* 150/25  
   extremyte, *obl.* 215/243  
   he, *pron.* 127/648, 195/228, 195/221  
   quantitee, *nom. sing.* 116/334, 220/307  
   se, *imper.* 96/984, 117/362, 203/460, 162/110  
   se, *inf.* 220/368  
   see, *inf.* 126/616  
   the, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 97/1012  
   three, *num. adj.* 72/324, 88/758, 116/333, 153/107, 177/162  
   unytee, *obl.* 128/681  
   utilitee, *nom.* 78/485  
 ubertee, *obj.*  
   be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 167/86  
   iniquitee, *obl.* 167/89  
 ubertee, *obl.*  
   be, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/82  
   flee, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/81  
   be, *inf.* 64/105  
 unytee, *obl.*  
   be, *v. 3 pres. sing.* 128/684  
   tree, *obl.* 128/683  
 utilitee, *nom.*  
   be, *inf.* 78/487, 184/142  
   tree, *obl.* 78/488  
 utilitee, *obl.*  
   be, *inf.* 131/740  
   fertilitee, *obl.* 79/525  
   see, *obl.* 184/145  
   the *art.* 131/741  
 virginitee, *obl.*  
   be, *inf.* 9/228  
   se, *inf.* 9/226

-eed (*see* -ed, -ede, and -eede)

heed, *adj. sing.*

leed, *obl.* 116/337

heed, *obl.*

\*led, *pp.* 177/165

\*leede, *obl.* 177/163

leed, *obl.*

heed, *adj. sing.* 116/339

need, *nom.*

\*drede, *obl.* 10/264

\*sede, *inf.* 10/263

reed, *nom.*

speed, *nom.* 85/691

threed, *obl.* 85/690

speed, *nom.*

\*seede, *obl.* 96/988

speed, *nom.*

reed, *nom.* 85/688

threed, *obl.* 85/690

threed, *obl.*

reed, *nom.* 85/688

speed, *nom.* 85/691

-eede (*see* -ed, -ede, and -eed)

heede, *obj.*

sede, *inf.* 151/71

heede, *obl.*

reede, *obl.* 111/197

leede, *obl.*

\*heed, *obl.* 177/166

\*led, *pp.* 177/165

reede, *obl.*

heede, *obl.* 111/199

seede, *inf.*

brede, *obl.* 182/102

drede, *inf.* 182/100

fede, *imper.* 217/282

lede, *inf.* 217/285

seede, *obl.*

\*speed, *nom.* 96/990

weede, *imper.*

drede, *nom. sing.* 141/29

rede, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 192/159

sprede, *inf.* 192/158

weede, *inf.*

nede, *a. sing.* 62/33

sprede, *inf.* 62/30

-eede is (*see* -edes)

seede is

sedes, *nom. pl.* 51/211

-eedes (*see* -ede is and -eed is)

seedes, *nom. pl.*

dede is, 53/270

need is, 53/271

weedes *nom. pl.*

drede is, 46/77

-eedeth (*see* -edeth)

proceedeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.*

ledeth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 121/474

succedeth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 121/

471

-eed is (*see* -ede is, -eedes, and -eedys)

need is

dede is, 53/270

seedes, *nom. pl.* 53/268

seedys, *obj.* 151/70

-eedys (*see* -ede is and -eed is)

seedys, *obj.*

dede is, 184/161

need is, 151/69

-eef (*see* -eefe and -ief)

breef, *adj. sing.*

leef, *adj. sing.* 129/687

leef, *adj. sing.*

breef, *adj. sing.* 129/686

preef, *obl.*

bonchief, *obl.* 5/115

bonechief, *obl.* 69/228

\*breefe, *adv.* 69/226



**-eefe** (*see -eef and -ief*)breefe, *adv.*\*bonechief, *obl.* 69/228\*preef, *obl.* 69/229**-eek** (*see -eke*)eek, *conj.*greek, *nom. sing.* 181/71leek, *nom.* 143/102greek, *nom. sing.*eek, *conj.* 181/73\*eke, *conj.* 101/1141leek, *nom.*eek, *conj.* 143/100meek, *adj. pl.*seek, *inf.* 129/697seek, *adj. pl.*\*seke, *inf.* 215/230seek, *inf.*meek, *adj. pl.* 129/695speek, *inf.*\*breke, *inf.* 126/627\*steke, *pp.* 126/625**-eeke** (*see -eke*)greeke, *obj.*eke, *adv.* 199/346**-eel** (*see -ell*)eel, *obj.*weel, *adv.* 17/436\*well, *adv.* 17/439weel, *adv.*eel, *obj.* 17/438\*well, *adv.* 17/439**-een** (*see -eene and -en*)atween, *adv.*\*clene, *adv.* 54/289\*fiftene (xv<sup>ne</sup>), *adj. pl.* 54/292fleen, *nom. pl.*\*men, *nom. pl.* 34/914\*slen, *inf.* 34/912seen, *pp.*eighteen, *adj. pl.* 48/114\*seventene (xvii<sup>ne</sup>), *a. pl.* 48/117**-eene** (*see -ene*)demeene, *obl.*lene, *a. sing.* 63/58sustene, *inf.* 63/61greene, *a. pl.*bydene, *adv.* 8/184clene, *adv.* 58/388sustene, *inf.* 8/186leene, *a. pl.*clene, *adv.* 46/54serene, *a. pl.* 46/53leene, *a. sing.*atwene, *prep.* 68/203clene, *adv.* 64/82lene, *adv.* 48/123meene, *a. sing.* 64/81meene, *obj.* 48/124meene, *a. sing.*clene, *adv.* 64/82leene, *a. sing.* 64/79meene, *obj.*leene, *a. sing.* 48/121lene, *adv.* 48/123**-eep** (*see -epe*)creep, *inf.*deep, *adv.* 87/727keep, *inf.* 127/652creep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*deep, *a. pl.* 47/86deep, *adj. sing.* 111/191\*kepe, *imper.* 47/88\*kepe, *inf.* 111/194deep, *adj. pl.*\*bywepe, *inf.* 16/425creep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 47/89\*kepe, *inf.* 16/424\*kepe, *imper.* 47/88deep, *adj. sing.*creep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 111/193\*kepe, *inf.* 111/194steep, *adj. pl.* 133/800

deep, *adv.*  
   creep, *inf.* 87/728  
   \*crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 109/158  
   \*kepe, *inf.* 95/973, 109/156  
   steep, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/478  
   weep, *inf.* 121/481  
 deep, *imper.*  
   steep, *inf.* 117/378  
 keep, *imper.*  
   weep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 138/938  
 keep, *inf.*  
   creep, *inf.* 127/654  
 steep, *adj. pl.*  
   deep, *adj. pl.* 133/802  
 steep, *imper.*  
   \*kepe, *imper.* 90/812  
 steep, *inf.*  
   deep, *imper.* 117/377  
 steep, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*  
   deep, *adv.* 121/480  
   weep, *inf.* 121/481  
 weep, *inf.*  
   deep, *adv.* 121/480  
   steep, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 121/478  
 weep, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   keep, *imper.* 138/939  
  
   -eepe (*see -epe*)  
 keepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   shepe, *obj.* 167/99  
 steepe, *inf.*  
   crepe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 56/343  
  
   -eepeth (*see -epeth*)  
 keepeth, 3 *sing. pres.*  
   hepeth, *imper.* 105/34  
  
   -eer (*see -ere*)  
 cheer, *obl.*  
   populeer, *obl.* 195/225  
 Feveryeer, *obl.*  
   Janyveer, *obl.* 185/174, 215/218  
 heer, *adv.*  
   Janyveer, *obl.* 105/48  
   October, *obl.* 186/218

Janyveer, *obl.*  
   \*clere, *a. pl.* 56/335  
   Feveryeer, *obl.* 185/175, 215/  
     220  
   \*Feveryere, *obl.* 50/178  
   heer, *adv.* 105/49  
   weer, *v.* 3 *past sing.* 210/87  
 October, *obl.*  
   heer, *adv.* 186/216  
 populeer, *obl.*  
   cheer, *obl.* 195/227  
   weer, *v.* 3 *past sing.*  
   Janyveer, *obl.* 210/85  
  
   -ees (*see -ese*)  
 doutelees, *adv.*  
   \*encrese, *inf.* 155/169  
 thees, *pron.*  
   \*lese, *inf.* 35/948  
  
   -eeese (*see -ese*)  
 ceese, *inf.*  
   encrese, *nom. sing.* 143/91  
  
   -eeest (*see -est and -este*)  
 beest, *obl.*  
   \*enfeste, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 33/891  
   \*kest, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 33/894  
 feest, *obl.*  
   leest, *adj. pl.* 146/190  
   leest, *adj. pl.*  
   feest, *obl.* 146/189  
  
   -eeeste (*see -este*)  
 beeste, *nom. sing.*  
   \*meste, *adj. pl.* 137/898  
  
 -eeestes (*see -estes, -eest is, and  
   -est is*).  
 beestes, *obj.*  
   \*drestes, *obl.* 35/944  
   feest is, 62/39  
   honest is, 43/1165  
   \*kest is, 62/40

-eest is (*see* -eestes, -estes, and  
-est is)

feest is,  
  beestes, *obj.* 62/37  
  \*bestes, *obj.* 18/485  
  \*kest is, 62/40  
  unleest is, 18/487

leest is,  
  \*bestes, *obl.* 20/519

unleest is,  
  \*bestes, *obj.* 18/485  
  leest is, 18/488

-eet (*see* -eete and -ete)

geet, *inf.*  
  greet, *adj. pl.* 85/681, 165/36  
  greet, *inf.* 85/683  
  weet, *adj. pl.* 142/56

geet, *nom. sing.*  
  \*gete, *inf.* 129/678  
  greet, *adj.* 129/675

greet, *adj. pl.*  
  geet, *inf.* 165/38, 85/684  
  \*gete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 134/837  
  greet, *inf.* 85/683, 120/454  
  heet, *obl.* 150/28  
  \*mete, *imper.* 61/19  
  \*mete, *obl.* 183/128  
  \*sete, *pp.* 120/457  
  surtreet, *imper.* 120/460  
  sweet, *inf.* 61/18  
  \*trete, *inf.* 199/350  
  \*weete, *a. pl.* 63/73  
  \*ygete, *pp.* 183/131

greet, *adj. sing.*  
  meet, *obj.* 165/49

greet, *adv.*  
  geet, *nom. sing.* 129/677  
  \*gete, *imper.* 136/873  
  \*gete, *inf.* 129/678  
  \*hete, *obl.* 93/915  
  \*trete, *inf.* 136/874, 213/185  
  \*trete, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 93/914

greet, *inf.*  
  geet, *inf.* 85/684  
  greet, *adj. pl.* 85/683 120/  
  455

heet, *obl.*  
  greet, *adj. pl.* 150/27

meet, *obj.*  
  greet, *adj. sing.* 165/48

surtreet, *imper.*  
  greet, *adj. pl.* 120/459  
  \*sete, *pp.* 120/457

sweet, *adj. pl.*  
  \*meete, *adj. sing.* 198/318

sweet, *inf.*  
  greet, *a. pl.* 61/16  
  \*mete, *imper.* 61/19

weet, *adj. pl.*  
  geet, *inf.* 142/57

-eete (*see* -ede, -eet, and -ete)

greete, *adj. pl.*  
  eete, *pp.* 123/553  
  gete, *inf.* 59/425  
  heete, *inf.* 44/6  
  swete, *inf.* 59/424  
  wete, *imper.* 212/146

eete, *pp.*  
  greete, *adj. pl.* 123/552

heete, *inf.*  
  greete, *a. pl.* 44/7

heete, *obl.*  
  gete, *inf.* 124/581  
  swete, *inf.* 156/201  
  trete, *inf.* 156/200

meete, *obj.*  
  ete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 99/1077

meete, *adj. sing.*  
  \*sweet, *adj. pl.* 198/316  
  sweete, *adj. sing.* 197/295  
  swete, *adj. sing.* 199/335

meete, *adj. pl.*  
  swete, *adj. pl.* 172/43

seete, *adj. pl.*  
  unsweete, *adj. sing.* 174/84

sweete, *adj. sing.*  
  meete, *adj. sing.* 197/297  
  sete, *a. sing.* 59/420  
  wete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 121/479

sweete, *inf.*  
  swete, *a. pl.* 55/315

unsweete, *adj. sing.*  
 seete, *adj. pl.* 174/83  
 weete, *adj. pl.*  
 bete, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 210/101  
 \*greet, *a. pl.* 63/71  
 weete, *adj. sing.*  
 \*dede, *nom. sing.* 191/131  
 \*fede, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 191/130  
 mete, *a. sing.* 49/158  
 mete, *inf.* 49/159  
 weete, *inf.*  
 \*lete, *inf.* 81/577

**-eeth**

beeth, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 deeth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 120/464  
 seeth, *v. 3. sing. pres.* 120/467

**-eett (see -ette)**

greett, *adj.*  
 \*sette, *pp.* 115/209

**-efte (see -afte)**

efte, *adv.*  
 leftte, *pp.* 18/483, 142/52, 142/  
 55  
 leftte, *pp.*  
 \*craftte, *obj.* 75/401  
 efte, *adv.* 18/482, 142/52, 142/  
 55  
 \*shafte, *obj.* 75/404

**-egges**

dregges, *obj.*  
 legges, *obl.* 88/759  
 legges, *obl.*  
 dregges, *obj.* 88/757

**-eght (see -est)**

streght, *adj. sing.*  
 \*brest, *nom. sing.* 129/681

**-ey (see -ai)**

cley, *a. sing.*  
 they, *pron.* 97/1005  
 sey, *inf.* 97/1006

cley, *obl.*  
 ley, *inf.* 89/802, 92/889  
 they, *pron.* 89/803  
 gey, *inf.*  
 obey, *inf.* 188/47  
 they, *pron.* 188/44  
 ley, *inf.*  
 cley, *obl.* 89/800, 92/888  
 they, *pron.* 19/803  
 obey, *inf.*  
 gey, *inf.* 188/46  
 they, *pron.* 188/44  
 sey, *inf.*  
 cley, *a.* 97/1003  
 they, *pron.* 97/1005  
 they, *pron.*  
 cley, *obl.* 89/800  
 cley, *a. sing.* 97/1003  
 gey, *inf.* 188/46  
 ley, *inf.* 89/802  
 obey, *inf.* 188/47  
 sey, *inf.* 97/1006  
 twey, *a. pl.*  
 thai, *pron.* 50/171

**-eye (see -ie)**

deye, *3 pl. pres.*  
 trie, *3 pl. pres.* 84/639  
 multiplie, *inf.* 84/641  
 eye, *nom.*  
 crie, *subj.* 154/156  
 drie, *a.* 154/158  
 plie, *imper.* 104/18  
 wrie, *imper.* 104/19  
 eye, *obj.*  
 die, *inf.* 22/600  
 drie, *adj. sing.* 149/13  
 maladie, *nom.* 22/599  
 multiplie, *inf.* 80/543, 127/650  
 trie, *inf.* 80/544  
 theye, *obl.* (the eye)  
 caprifie, *inf.* 161/86  
 pie, *3 pl. pres.* 161/89

**-eight**

weight, *obj.*  
 \*dight, *pp.* 41/1123

**-eine, -eyne** (*see* -ayne)ayeine, *adv.*greyne, *obj.* 179/7reyne, *obl.* 77/442bareyne, *a. sing.*tweyne, *a. pl.* 167/83bareyne, *a. pl.*refreyne, *imper.* 22/581byspreyne, *inf.*tweyne, *num. a.* 106/69compleyne, *3 pl. pres.*tweyne, *a. pl.* 73/337distreyne, *inf.*engreyne, *imper.* 16/418greyne, *obl.* 16/417greyne, *obj.*ayeine, *adv.* 179/6greyne, *obl.*distreyne, *inf.* 16/415engreyne, *imper.* 16/418refreyne, *imper.*bareyne, *a. pl.* 22/580reyne, *subj.*spreyne, *subj.* 192/161reyne, *obl.*ayeine, *adv.* 77/444spreyne, *subj.*reyne, *subj.* 192/160streynne, *inf.*treynne, *subj.* 70/271tweyne, *num. a.* 70/270treynne, *subj.*streynne, *inf.* 70/268tweyne, *a. pl.* 70/270tweyne, *a. pl.*bareyne, *a. sing.* 167/84byspreyne, *inf.* 106/70compleyne, *3 pl. pres.* 73/339streynne, *inf.* 70/268treynne, *subj.* 70/271veyne, *nom.*\*complayne, *inf.* 175/112**-eir** (*see* -eire)feir, *adj. pl.*\*appeire, *inf.* 62/41**-eire** (*see* -ayer, -aire, -eir, and -iere)appeire, *inf.*\*feir, *a. pl.* 62/42eire, *obl.*\*dispaire, *obl.* 39/1071leire, *obl.* 3/52feire, *a. pl.*\*ayer, *nom.* 86/702leire, *nom.* 86/704peire, *inf.* 180/28feire, *adv.*\*ayer, *obl.* 114/298\*dispiere, *inf.* 86/719leire, *nom. sing.* 114/299peire, *obj.* 95/963peire, *inf.* 95/964repeire, *inf.* 86/718leire, *nom.*\*ayer, *nom.* 86/702\*ayer, *obl.* 114/298feire, *a. pl.* 86/705feire, *adv.* 114/296leire, *obl.*eire, *obl.* 3/50peire, *inf.*feire, *adj. pl.* 180/27feire, *adv.* 95/961peire, *obj.* 95/963peire, *obj.*feire, *adv.* 95/961peire, *inf.* 95/964repeire, *inf.*\*dispiere, *inf.* 86/719feire, *adv.* 86/716**-eyve**conceyve, *inf.*deceyve, *inf.* 99/1068receyve, *subj.* 99/1069deceyve, *inf.*conceyve, *inf.* 99/1066receyve, *subj.* 99/1069receyve, *subj.*conceyve, *inf.* 99/1066deceyve, *inf.* 99/1068

**-eiveth, -eyveth**

- conceyveth, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 deceiveth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 135/845  
 weyveth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 135/846  
 deceiveth, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 conceyveth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 135/  
 843  
 weyveth, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 135/846  
 weyveth, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 conceyveth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 135/  
 843  
 deceiveth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 135/845

**-ek (see eke)**

- Greek, *nom.*  
 \*eke, *conj.* 101/1141

**-eke (see -eek, -eeke, and -ike)**

- breke, *inf.*  
 leke, *inf.* 150/33  
 \*speek, *inf.* 126/628  
 speke, *inf.* 27/734  
 steke, *pp.* 126/625, 150/32  
 cheke, *obl.*  
 seke, *inf.* 193/177  
 seke, *v. 3 sing. subj.* 193/179  
 eke, *conj.*  
 \*Greek, *nom.* 101/1140  
 greeke, *obj.* 199/344  
 meke, *adj. pl.* 214/192  
 reke, *inf.* 8/194  
 seke, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 8/193  
 leke, *inf.*  
 breke, *inf.* 150/30  
 steke, *pp.* 150/32  
 meke, *adj. pl.*  
 eke, *conj.* 214/190  
 reke, *inf.*  
 eke, *conj.* 8/191  
 seke, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 8/193  
 reke, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 smeke, *nom. sing.* 160/69  
 seke, *adj. sing.*  
 \*pike, *inf.* 137/907

- seke, *inf.*  
 cheke, *obl.* 193/180  
 \*seek, *adj. pl.* 215/231  
 seke, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 193/179  
 seke, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 eke, *conj.* 8/191  
 reke, *inf.* 8/194  
 seke, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 cheke, *obl.* 193/180  
 seke, *inf.* 193/177  
 smeke, *nom. sing.*  
 reke, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 160/70  
 speke, *inf.*  
 breke, *inf.* 27/735  
 steke, *pp.*  
 breke, *inf.* 126/627, 150/30  
 leke, *inf.* 150/33  
 \*speek, *inf.* 126/628

**-el (see -ele)**

- aisel, *obl.*  
 \*dele, *nom. sing.* 205/516  
 vessel, *obl.* 169/145  
 wel, *adv.* 169/142, 205/515,  
 211/133  
 gravel, *obl.*  
 wel, *adv.* 14/378  
 vessel, *obl.*  
 aisel, *obl.* 169/144  
 wel, *adv.* 169/142  
 wel, *adv.*  
 aisel, *obl.* 169/144, 205/513,  
 211/132  
 \*dele, *nom. sing.* 205/516  
 gravel, *obl.* 14/377  
 vessel, *obl.* 169/145

**-eld (see -elde)**

- yeld, *pp.*  
 \*felde, *nom. sing.* 207/15

**-elde (see -eld)**

- felde, *nom. sing.*  
 \*yeld, *pp.* 207/17  
 felde, *obj.*  
 foryelde, *inf.* 12/311



foryelde, *inf.*

felde, *obj.* 12/309

-elde is (*see* -eldys).

yelde is,

feldys, *obl.* 9/217

-eldys (*see* -elde is)

feldys, *obl.*

yelde is, 9/216

-eldron (*see* -ildren)

eldron, *nom.*

children, *obl.* 26/713

eldron, *obl.*

children, *nom.* 6/126

-ele (*see* -el)

congele, *imper.*

hele, *inf.* 137/918

dele, *inf.*

fele, *adj. pl.* 201/393

mele, *adv.* 66/148

dele, *nom. sing.*

\*aisel, *obl.* 205/513

\*wel, *adv.* 205/515

fele, *adj. pl.*

dele, *inf.* 201/395

fele, *adv.*

stele, *obj.* 209/77

hele, *inf.*

congele, *imper.* 137/917

mele, *adv.*

dele, *inf.* 66/150

stele, *obj.*

fele, *adj.* 209/76

-ele is (*see* -eles)

hele is,

sceles, *obj.* 32/881

-eles (*see* -ele is)

sceles, *obj.*

hele is, 32/882

-elf (*see* -elve)

self, *pron.*

\*overwhelve, *inf.* 7/161

-ell (*see* -eel)

Averell, *obl.*

well, *adv.* 140/6

catell, *obl.*

well, *adv.* 36/994

everidell, *adv.*

well, *adv.* 83/617

fenestell, *obl.*

well, *adv.* 20/546

vessell, *obl.*

well, *adv.* 121/490

well, *adv.*

Averell, *obl.* 140/8

catell, *obl.* 36/993

\*eel, *obj.* 17/438

everidell, *adv.* 83/619

fenestell, *obl.* 20/545

vessell, *obl.* 121/489

\*weel, *adv.* 17/436

-elle

awelle, *obl.*

dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 86/698

felle, *a. pl.* 86/697

belle, *obj.*

dwelle, *inf.* 82/599

swelle, *inf.* 82/597

Columelle, *nom.*

dwelle, *inf.* 83/624, 84/664,

189/73

dwelle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 108/106

quelle, *inf.* 100/1090

selle, *imper.* 100/1089

shelle, *obl.* 24/645

smelle, *inf.* 58/402

telle, *inf.* 111/209, 179/14

telle, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 72/318

dwelle, *inf.*

belle, *obj.* 82/600

Columelle, *nom.* 83/626, 84/665,

189/71

melle, *imper.* 92/866  
 propelle, *imper.* 38/1034  
 quelle, *imper.* 92/865  
 selle, *imper.* 90/824  
 smelle, *inf.* 210/81  
 swelle, *inf.* 82/597, 152/82  
 telle, *inf.* 9/232, 63/69, 87/724,  
 152/79  
 telle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 210/79  
 welle, *nom.* 38/1031  
 welle, *obl.* 90/821  
 dwelle, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 awelle, *obl.* 86/695  
 Columelle, *nom.* 108/108  
 felle, *a. pl.* 86/697  
 quelle, *inf.* 12/304  
 telle, *inf.* 146/179  
 felle, *a. pl.*  
 awelle, *obl.* 86/695  
 dwelle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 86/698  
 melle, *imper.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 92/863  
 quelle, *imper.* 92/865  
 oxymelle, *obl.*  
 smelle, *inf.* 213/168  
 propelle, *imper.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 38/1033  
 welle, *nom.* 38/1031  
 quelle, *inf.*  
 Columelle, *nom.* 100/1087  
 dwelle, *inf.* 12/302  
 selle, *imper.* 100/1089  
 telle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 46/55  
 quelle, *imper.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 92/863  
 melle, *imper.* 92/866  
 rodometle, *obj.*  
 smelle, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 156/216  
 selle, *imper.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 90/823  
 welle, *obl.* 90/821  
 selle, *pp.*  
 Columelle, *nom.* 100/1087  
 quelle, *inf.* 100/1090  
 shelle, *obl.*  
 Columelle, *nom.* 24/647  
 welle, *obl.* 146/165

smelle, *inf.*  
 Columelle, *nom.* 58/400  
 dwelle, *inf.* 210/82  
 oxymelle, *obl.* 213/167  
 swelle, *inf.* 110/188  
 telle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 210/79  
 smelle, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 rodometle, *obj.* 156/217  
 swelle, *inf.*  
 belle, *obj.* 82/600  
 dwelle, *inf.* 82/599, 152/81  
 smelle, *inf.* 110/189  
 telle, *inf.* 152/79  
 telle, *inf.*  
 Columelle, *nom.* 111/210, 179/13  
 dwelle, *inf.* 9/234, 63/70, 87/  
 722, 152/81  
 dwelle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 146/177  
 swelle, *inf.* 152/82  
 welle, *nom.* 17/440  
 telle, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 210/82  
 quelle, *inf.* 46/56  
 smelle, *inf.* 210/81  
 telle, *v. 3 sing. pres.*  
 Columelle, *nom.* 72/316  
 welle, *nom.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 38/1033  
 propelle, *imper.* 38/1034  
 telle, *inf.* 17/441  
 welle, *obl.*  
 dwelle, *inf.* 90/823  
 selle, *imper.* 90/824  
 shelle, *obl.* 146/163  
  
 -elles (*see -ell is*)  
 celles, *obj.*  
 elles, *adv.* 196/268  
 hell is, 196/271  
 elles, *adv.*  
 celles, *obj.* 196/270  
 hell is, 196/271  
  
 -ell is (*see -elles*)  
 hell is  
 celles, *obj.* 196/270  
 elles, *adv.* 196/268

**-elve (see -elf)**delve, *imper.*overwhelve, *inf.* 29/781selve, *pron.* 29/782, 30/810, 49/  
148, 79/498, 217/291shelve, 3 *sing. subj.* 217/289twelve, *adj. pl.* 30/809delve, *inf.*whelve, *inf.* 175/122delve, *v. 1 sing. pres.*himselfe, *pron.* 50/175selve, *pron.* 82/582delve, *v. 2 sing. pres.*selve, *pron.* 3/64, 66/137twelve, *adj. pl.* 66/135himselfe, *pron.*delve, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 50/174umbidelve, *imper.* 115/324, 115/  
327overwhelve, *inf.*delve, *imper.* 29/779\*self, *pron.* 7/160selve, *pron.* 29/782twelve, *adj. pl.* 48/111selve, *pron.*delve, *inf.* 30/807, 217/292delve, *imper.* 29/779, 49/150,  
79/500delve, *v. 1 pres. sing.* 82/584delve, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 3/66, 66/  
138overwhelve, *inf.* 29/781shelve, 3 *sing. pres.* 217/289twelve, *adj. pl.* 30/809, 66/135umbydelve, *inf.* 94/930shelve, 3 *sing. subj.*selve, *pron.* 217/291delve, *inf.* 217/292twelve, *num. adj.*delve, *inf.* 30/807delve, *v. 2 sing. pres.* 66/138overwhelve, *inf.* 48/112selve, *pron.* 30/810, 66/137umbidelve, *imper.*hemselve, *pron.* 115/326umbidelve, *imper.* 115/327umbydelve, *inf.*selve, *pron.* 94/931whelve, *inf.*delve, *inf.* 175/120**-em**hem, *pron.*hem, *pron.* 25/683, 25/684**-eme**deme, *imper.*yeme, *inf.* 4/84deme, *inf.*diademe, *nom. sing.* 163/149extreme, *adj. sing.* 163/152yeme, *inf.* 163/154yeme, *obj.* 173/69diademe, *nom. sing.*deme, *inf.* 163/151extreme, *adj. sing.* 163/152yeme, *inf.* 163/154extreme, *adj. sing.*deme, *inf.* 163/151diademe, *nom. sing.* 163/149yeme, *inf.* 163/154yeme, *inf.*deme, *imper.* 4/83deme, *inf.* 163/151diademe, *nom.* 163/149extreme, *adj. sing.* 163/152yeme, *obj.*deme, *inf.* 173/70**-en (see een)**hen, *nom.*ten, *a. pl.* 25/672men, *nom.*fleen, *obj.* 34/915slen, *inf.* 34/912slen, *inf.*fleen, *obj.* 34/915men, *nom.* 34/914ten, *a. pl.*hen, *nom.* 25/671then, *adv.*when, *adv.* 96/995

when, *adv.*

then, *adv.* 96/997

-ence (*see* -ense)

diligence, *nom. sing.*

experience, *nom. sing.* 165/46

science, *nom. sing.* 165/47

diligence, *obj.*

dispenche, *inf.* 5/112

dispenche, *inf.* 194/192

expenche, *obj.* 8/185

suspence, *a. sing.* 19/500

diligence, *obl.*

negligence, *obl.* 8/210

dispenche, *inf.*

diligence, *obj.* 5/111

expenche, *obj.* 7/170

influence, *obl.* 7/173

dispenche, *v. 1 sing. pres.*

sapience, *nom. sing.* 157/236

science, *nom. sing.* 157/238

sentence, *nom. sing.* 157/233

eloquence, *obj.*

prudence, *obl.* 1/1

expenche, *obj.*

diligence, *obj.* 8/183

dispenche, *inf.* 7/172

influence, *obl.* 7/173

experience, *nom. sing.*

diligence, *nom. sing.* 165/44

science, *nom. sing.* 165/47

fervence, *obl.*

pestilence, *obl.* 203/442

influence, *obl.*

dispenche, *inf.* 7/172

expenche, *obj.* 7/170

negligence, *obl.*

diligence, *obl.* 8/209

pestilence, *obl.*

fervence, *obl.* 203/444

prudence, *obl.*

eloquence, *obj.* 1/3

sapience, *nom. sing.*

dispenche, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 157/  
235

science, *nom. sing.* 157/238

sentence, *nom. sing.* 157/233

science, *nom. sing.*

diligence, *nom. sing.* 165/44

dispenche, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 157/235

experience, *nom. sing.* 165/46

sapience, *nom. sing.* 157/236

sentence, *nom. sing.* 157/233

sentence, *nom. sing.*

dispenche, *v. 1 sing. pres.* 157/235

sapience, *nom. sing.* 157/236

science, *nom. sing.* 157/238

-end (*see* ende)

end, *obl.*

\*descende, *inf.* 67/189

-endde (*see* -ende)

brendde, *v. 3 sing. pres.*

shende, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 154/161

-ende (*see* -enned and -endde)

amende, *imper.*

extende, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 6/140

amende, *inf.*

extende, *inf.* 69/244

amende, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

defende, *inf.* 207/13

anende, *inf.*

ascende, *inf.* 166/61

ende, *obl.* 158/17

tende, *pp.* 166/60

anende, *adv.*

ascende, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 109/135

defende, *inf.* 151/51

descende, *imper.* 109/137

spende, *pp.* 151/53

ascende, *inf.*

anende, *inf.* 166/58

attende, *imper.* 40/1090

descende, *inf.* 214/200

ende, *inf.* 167/102

ende, *obl.* 123/538, 142/58

extende, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 71/295

offende, *inf.* 39/1057

spende, *imper.* 214/201

spende, *inf.* 161/83  
 spende, *pp.* 167/100  
 tende, *pp.* 166/60  
 upbende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 40/1087  
 ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 attende, *inf.* 6/127  
 comprehende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 105/  
 37  
 defende, *inf.* 46/61  
 ende, *obl.* 178/205, 215/219  
 extende, *imper.* 70/269  
 extende, *inf.* 64/101  
 extende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 178/207  
 spende, *inf.* 46/60  
 spende, *pp.* 105/40  
 umbywende, *imper.* 215/221  
 ascende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.*  
 anende, *adv.* 109/138  
 \*brenned, *pp.* 164/14  
 descende, *imper.* 109/137, 175/  
 115  
 attende, *imper.*  
 ascende, *inf.* 40/1089  
 upbende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 40/1087  
 attende, *inf.*  
 ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 6/129  
 Calende, *obl.* 138/943  
 shende, *inf.* 138/944  
 attende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 mende, *inf.* 19/510  
 bende, *pp.*  
 ende, *obl.* 159/39  
 wende, *inf.* 159/40  
 Calende, *obl.*  
 attende, *inf.* 138/941  
 shende, *inf.* 138/944  
 commende, *inf.*  
 descende, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 45/47  
 ende, *obl.* 45/44  
 comprehende, *inf.*  
 rende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 141/44  
 comprehende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 ascende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 105/39  
 spende, *pp.* 105/40  
 comprehende, *inf.*  
 condescende, *inf.* 75/397  
 descende, *inf.* 75/396

spende, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 118/404  
 suspende, *inf.* 118/401  
 condescende, *inf.*  
 comprehende, *inf.* 75/394  
 descende, *inf.* 75/396  
 ende, *obl.* 171/1  
 contende, 3 *pl. pr.*  
 suspende, 3 *pl. pr.* 206/531  
 defende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 offende, *inf.* 5/97  
 defende, *imper.*  
 spende, *imper.* 123/541  
 thende, *obl.* 123/544  
 defende, *inf.*  
 amende, *inf.* 207/14  
 anende, *adv.* 151/54  
 ascende, 3 *pl. pres.* 46/58  
 extende, *imper.* 218/328  
 spende, *inf.* 46/60  
 spende, *pp.* 151/53  
 suspende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 118/  
 392  
 depende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 ende, *obl.* 168/122  
 descende, *inf.*  
 ascende, *inf.* 214/198  
 comprehende, *inf.* 75/394  
 condescende, *inf.* 75/397  
 \*end, *obl.* 67/188  
 mende, *inf.* 219/343  
 spende, *imper.* 214/201  
 suspende, *inf.* 90/832  
 descende, *imper.*  
 anende, *adv.* 109/138  
 ascende *subj.* 175/113  
 ascende, *inf.* 109/135  
 descende, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 kalende, *obl.* 112/218  
 sende, *pp.* 175/126  
 descende, *subj.*  
 commende, *inf.* 45/46  
 ende, *obl.* 45/44  
 descende, *subj.*  
 offende, *inf.* 213/189  
 ende, *inf.*  
 ascende, *inf.* 167/103  
 spende, *pp.* 167/100

- ende, *nom.*  
   mende, *inf.* 122/501  
   spende, *inf.* 122/502  
 ende, *obl.*  
   anende, *inf.* 158/15  
   ascende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 178/208,  
     215/222  
   ascende, *inf.* 124/539, 142/60  
   bende, *pp.* 159/37  
   commende, *inf.* 45/46  
   condescende, *inf.* 171/3  
   depende *v. 3 pl. pres.* 168/120  
   descende, *subj.* 45/47  
   extende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 178/207  
   kalende, *obj.* 183/132, 187/2  
   on-ende, *adv.* 187/5  
   shende, *inf.* 65/112  
   spende *inf.* 46/52  
   spende, *imper.* 203/462  
   umbywende, *imper.* 215/221  
   wende, *inf.* 159/40  
 extende, *pl. pres.*  
   amende, *v. 3 sing. subj.* 6/139  
   ascende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 178/208  
   ende, *obl.* 178/205.  
 extende, *imper.*  
   ascende, *subj.* 70/267  
   defende, *inf.* 218/329  
 extende, *v. 3 sing. subj.*  
   ascende, *inf.* 71/297  
 extende, *inf.*  
   amende, *inf.* 69/245  
   ascende *v. 3 pl. pres.* 63/99  
 kalende, *obl.*  
   descende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 112/220  
   ende, *obl.* 183/133, 187/4  
   on-ende, *adv.* 187/5  
 mende, *inf.*  
   attende, *subj.* 19/511  
   descende, *inf.* 219/342  
   ende, *nom.* 122/499  
   spende, *inf.* 17/444, 122/502  
 offende, *inf.*  
   ascende, *inf.* 39/1056  
   defende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 5/98  
   descende, *subj.* 213/188  
   wendē, *pp.* 131/749  
 on-ende, *adv.*  
   kalende, *obl.* 187/2  
   ende, *obl.* 187/4  
 rende, *imper.*  
   comprehende, *inf.* 141/46  
 rende, *pp.*  
   suspende, *imper.* 125/595  
 sende, *pp.*  
   descende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 175/  
     125  
 shende, *subj.*  
   brendde, *subj.* 154/160  
 shende, *inf.*  
   ende, *obl.* 65/111  
 shende, *pp.*  
   attende, *inf.* 138/941  
   Calende, *obl.* 138/943  
 spende, *subj.*  
   comprende, *inf.* 118/403  
   suspende, *inf.* 118/401  
 spende, *imper.*  
   ascende, *inf.* 214/198  
   defende, *imper.* 123/543  
   descende, *inf.* 214/200  
   ende, *obl.* 203/461  
   thende, *obl.* 123/544  
 spende, *inf.*  
   ascende, *inf.* 161/84  
   ascende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 46/58  
   defende, *inf.* 46/61  
   ende, *nom.* 122/499  
   ende, *obl.* 46/50  
   mende, *inf.* 17/442, 122/501  
 spende, *pp.*  
   anende, *adv.* 151/54  
   ascende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 105/39  
   ascende, *inf.* 107/103  
   comprehende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 105/  
     37  
   defende, *inf.* 151/51  
   wende, *pp.* 93/902  
 suspende, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   contende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/  
     532  
   defende, *inf.* 118/391  
 suspende, *imper.*  
   rende, 125/594



suspende, *inf.*  
 comprede, *inf.* 118/403  
 descende, *inf.* 90/833  
 spende, *subj.* 118/404  
 tende, *obj.*  
 anende, *inf.* 166/58  
 ascende, *inf.* 166/61  
 thende, *obl.*  
 defende, *imper.* 123/543  
 spende, *imper.* 123/541  
 umbywende, *imper.*  
 ascende, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 215/222  
 ende, *obl.* 215/219  
 upbende, *subj.*  
 ascende, *inf.* 40/1089  
 attende, *inf.* 40/1090  
 wende, *inf.*  
 bende, *pp.* 159/37  
 ende, *obl.* 159/39  
 wende, *pp.*  
 offende, *inf.* 131/750  
 spende, *pp.* 93/903

**-ended**

amended, *pp.*  
 extended, *pp.* 11/290  
 extended, *pp.*  
 amended, *pp.* 11/288

**-ende is (see -endes)**

spende is  
 kalendes, *nom. pl.* 185/162

**-ender**

engender, *inf.*  
 slender, *a. pl.* 152/95  
 tender, *a. sing.* 152/93  
 slender, *a. pl.*  
 engender, *inf.* 152/96  
 tender, *a. sing.* 152/93  
 tender, *a. pl.* 27/729  
 tender, *a. sing.*  
 engender, *inf.* 152/96  
 slender, *a. pl.* 152/95  
 tender, *a. pl.*  
 slender, *a. pl.* 27/731

**-endes (see -ende is)**

kalendes, *nom. pl.*  
 spende is, 185/164

**-ene (see -eane, -een, -eene)**

atwene, *adv.*  
 leene, *a. sing.* 68/202  
 lene, *a. sing.* 77/469  
 bene *nom.*  
 lene, *a. pl.* 7/158  
 lene, *a. sing.* 207/21  
 rene, *obl.* 7/159  
 bene, *obl.*  
 clene, *a. sing.* 200/369  
 stene, *obl.* 200/368  
 bene, *inf.*  
 lene, *a. pl.* 91/849  
 sene, *pp.* 91/851  
 bene, *pp.*  
 lene, *a. sing.* 77/449  
 betwene, *adv.*  
 grene, *a. pl.* 99/1080  
 stene, *obl.* 128/666  
 sustene, *inf.* 99/1083  
 bydene, *adv.*  
 clene, *adv.* 118/407  
 greene, *a. pl.* 8/187  
 sustene, *inf.* 8/186, 123/540  
 bytwene, *adv.*  
 clene, *a. sing.* 73/352  
 kene, *a. pl.* 73/354  
 chene, *obl.*  
 clene, *a. pl.* 42/1140  
 clene, *a. sing.*  
 bene, *obl.* 200/366  
 bytwene, *adv.* 73/355  
 demene, *imper.* 199/352, 205/  
 502  
 glene, *imper.* 14/362  
 kene, *a. pl.* 73/354  
 lene, *a. sing.* 14/361  
 sene, *pp.* 176/151  
 sustene, *inf.* 176/152  
 stene, *obl.* 205/501  
 unclene, *a. sing.* 2/35

- clene, *a. pl.*  
   chene, *obl.* 42/1141  
   demeane, *imper.* 55/325  
   demene, *imper.* 59/427  
   grene, *a. sing.* 157/219  
   sustene, *inf.* 157/221  
 clene, *adv.*  
   \*atween, *adv.* 54/291  
   bydene, *adv.* 118/409  
   demene, *imper.* 19/497, 188/32  
   fiftene (xv<sup>ne</sup>), *a. pl.* 54/292  
   glene, *inf.* 90/809  
   greene, *a. pl.* 58/386  
   grene, *a. pl.* 127/653  
   leene, *a. sing.* 64/79  
   leene, *a. pl.* 46/51  
   lene, *a. sing.* 188/30  
   lene, *inf.* 90/810  
   meene, *a. sing.* 64/81  
   sene, *pp.* 127/656  
   serene, *a. pl.* 46/53  
   stene, *obl.* 200/308  
 demene, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   fiftene (xv), *a. pl.* 139/955, 206/  
   541  
   sustene, *v. 3 sing. pres.* 139/957  
   sustene, *inf.* 206/543  
 demene, *imper.*  
   clene, *a. sing.* 199/354, 205/499  
   clene, *a. pl.* 59/426  
   clene, *adv.* 19/496, 188/33  
   lene, *adj.* 171/8, 188/30  
   mene, *obl.* 4/93  
   stene, *nom. pl.* 202/426  
   stene, *obl.* 199/355, 205/501  
   unlene, *adj.* 5/96  
 demene, *inf.*  
   lene, *a. sing.* 180/29  
 dene, *num. a.*  
   fiftene (xv), *a. pl.* 22/588, 25/  
   673  
 eightene (xviii), *adj. pl.*  
   sustene, *inf.* 179/17  
 fiftene (xv<sup>ne</sup>), *adj. pl.*  
   \*atween, *adv.* 54/291  
   clene, *adv.* 54/289  
   demene, 3 *pl. pres.* 139/958,  
   206/544  
   dene, *a. pl.* 22/587, 25/675  
   sustene, 3 *pl. pres.* 139/957  
   sustene, *inf.* 206/543  
   thirtene (xiii), *adj. pl.* 208/24  
 glene, *imper.*  
   clene, *a. sing.* 14/359  
   lene, *a. sing.* 14/361  
 glene, *inf.*  
   clene, *adv.* 90/807  
   lene, *inf.* 90/810, 123/530  
   serene, *a. sing.* 123/527  
 grene, *adj.*  
   clene, *a. pl.* 157/222  
   sustene, *inf.* 157/221, 191/133  
 grene, *a. pl.*  
   betwene, *adv.* 99/1082  
   clene, *adv.* 127/655  
   lene, *a. pl.* 122/522  
   sene, *pp.* 122/520, 127/656  
   sustene, *inf.* 99/1083  
 kene, *a. pl.*  
   bytwene, *adv.* 73/355  
   clene, *a. sing.* 73/352  
 lene, *adj. sing.*  
   atwene, *adv.* 77/468  
   bene, *nom.* 207/20  
   bene, *pp.* 77/451  
   clene, *a. sing.* 14/359  
   clene, *adv.* 188/33  
   demeene, *imper.* 63/60  
   demene, *imper.* 171/10, 188/32  
   demene, *inf.* 180/31  
   glene, *imper.* 14/362  
   rene, *a. sing.* 3/61  
   sene, *imper.* 16/410  
   sustene, *inf.* 63/61  
   sustene, *imper.* 16/411  
   unclene, *a. sing.* 3/58  
 lene, *a. pl.*  
   bene *nom.* 7/156  
   bene, *inf.* 91/852  
   grene, *a. pl.* 122/523  
   rene, *obl.* 7/159  
   sene, *pp.* 91/851, 122/520

- lene, *adv.*  
 leene, *a. sing.* 48/121  
 meene, *obj.* 48/124
- lene, *inf.*  
 clene, *adv.* 90/807  
 glene, *inf.* 90/809, 123/529  
 serene, *adj.* 123/527
- mene, *obj.*  
 demene, *imper.* 5/95  
 unlene, *a. sing.* 5/96
- mene, 3 s. *pres.*  
 unclene, *a. pl.* 113/272
- rene, *a. sing.*  
 lene, *a. sing.* 3/60  
 unclene, *a. sing.* 3/58
- rene, *obl.*  
 bene, *nom.* 7/156  
 lene *a. pl.* 7/158
- sene, *imper.*  
 lene, *a. sing.* 16/408  
 sustene, 16/411
- sene, *pp.*  
 bene, *inf.* 91/852  
 clene, *adv.* 127/655  
 clene, *a. sing.* 176/149  
 grene, *a. pl.* 127/653, 122/523  
 lene, *a. pl.* 91/849, 122/522  
 sustene, *inf.* 176/152
- serene, *a. sing.*  
 glene, *inf.* 123/529  
 lene, *inf.* 123/530
- serene, *a. pl.*  
 clene, *adv.* 46/54  
 leene, *a. pl.* 46/51
- seventene (xvii<sup>no</sup>), *adj. pl.*  
 \*eighteen, *adj. pl.* 48/114  
 \*seen, *pp.* 48/116
- syngrene, *obl.*  
 wene, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 31/854
- stene, *n. pl.*  
 demene, *imper.* 202/427
- stene, *obl.*  
 bene, *obl.* 200/366  
 betwene, *adv.* 128/668  
 clene, *a. sing.* 199/354, 200/369,  
 205/499  
 demene, *imper.* 199/352, 205/502
- sustene, 3 s. *pres.*  
 demene, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 139/958  
 fiftene (xv), *a. pl.* 139/955
- sustene, *imper.*  
 lene *a. sing.* 16/408  
 sene, *imper.* 16/410
- sustene, *inf.*  
 betwene, *adv.* 99/1082  
 bydene, *adv.* 8/184, 123/542  
 clene, *a. sing.* 176/149  
 clene, *a. pl.* 157/222  
 demeene, *imper.* 63/60  
 demene, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/544  
 eightene (xviii), *adj. pl.* 179/15  
 fiftene (xv), *adj. pl.* 206/541  
 greene, *a. pl.* 8/187  
 grene, *a. sing.* 157/219, 191/  
 132  
 grene, *a. pl.* 99/1080  
 lene, *a. sing.* 63/58  
 sene, *pp.* 176/151
- thirtene (xiii), *adj. pl.*  
 fiftene (xv), *adj. pl.* 208/22
- unclene, *a. sing.*  
 clene, *a. sing.* 2/34  
 demene, *imper.* 5/95  
 mene, *obl.* 4/93  
 lene, *a. sing.* 3/60  
 rene, *a. sing.* 3/61
- unclene, *a. pl.*  
 mene, 3 s. *pres.* 113/273  
 wene, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 syngrene, *obl.* 31/853
- ened
- abstened, *pp.*  
 tened, *pp.* 130/725  
 tened, *pp.*  
 abstened, *pp.* 130/723
- enger (see -onger)
- lenger, *adv.*  
 \*stronger, *a. sing.* 41/1108  
 \*unstronger, *a. pl.* 41/1110

-engeth (*see* -ingeth)

mengeth, *imper.*  
springeth, 3 s. *pres.* 32/876

-enght

lenght, *obl.*  
strenght, *obl.* 47/87  
strenght, *obl.*  
lenght, *obl.* 47/85

-enn (*see* -enne)

thenn, *adv.*  
\*penne, *nom.* 140/2  
\*renne, *inf.* 140/7  
\*thenne, *adv.* 140/5

-enne (*see* -enn)

brenne, *subj.*  
renne, *inf.* 33/887  
thenne, *adv.* 33/886  
brenne, *inf.*  
renne, *inf.* 84/644, 141/38, 172/  
24  
thenne, *adv.* 141/40  
kenne, *inf.*  
whenne, *adv.* 126/636  
penne, *nom.*  
renne, *inf.* 140/7  
\*thenn, *adv.* 140/4  
thenne, *adv.* 140/5  
penne, *obl.*  
renne, *imper.* 177/184  
thenne, *adv.* 177/187, 218/325  
renne, *imper.*  
penne, *obl.* 177/185  
thenne, *adv.* 177/187  
renne, *subj.*  
thenne, *adv.* 185/188  
renne, *inf.*  
brenne, *inf.* 84/643, 141/41,  
172/22  
brenne, *subj.* 33/884  
penne, *nom.* 140/2  
\*thenn, *adv.* 140/4  
thenne, *adv.* 16/419, 33/886,  
140/5, 141/40

thenne, *adv.*

brenne, *subj.* 33/884  
brenne, *inf.* 141/41  
penne, *nom.* 140/2  
penne, *obl.* 177/186, 218/323  
renne, *imper.* 177/184  
renne, *subj.* 185/189  
renne, *inf.* 16/420, 33/887,  
140/7, 141/38  
\*thenn, *adv.* 140/4  
whenne, *adv.*  
kenne, *inf.* 126/637

-enned (*see* -ende)

brenned, *pp.*  
\*ascende, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 164/13

-ennes

pennes, *n. pl.*  
thennes, *adv.* 21/549  
thennes, *adv.*  
pennes, *n. pl.* 21/547

-ense (*see* -ence)

dispense, *inf.*  
diligence, *obj.* 194/190  
suspense, *a. sing.*  
diligence, *obj.* 19/498

-ent (*see* -ente)

abstinent, *a. sing.*  
relent, *pp.* 137/908  
shent, *a. pl.* 137/909  
adolent, *a. sing.*  
diligent, *a. sing.* 105/32  
sarment, *obj.* 105/33  
assent, *obl.*  
unguent, *obl.* 109/147  
bent, *subj.*  
promynent, *a. sing.* 15/380  
shent, *pp.* 15/383  
blent, *pp.*  
luculent, *a. pl.* 186/191  
shent, *pp.* 186/193

- brent, *pp.*  
   sarment, *obl.* 201/386  
   tegument, *obj.* 104/20  
 circumferent, *a. sing.*  
   convenient, *a. sing.* 151/58  
   hent, *inf.* 151/60  
 condyment, *inf.*  
   ferment, *obj.* 205/524  
 condyment, *obj.*  
   pigment, *obj.* 155/167  
 condyment, *obl.*  
   fundament, *nom.* 220/353  
 convenient, *a. sing.*  
   circumferent, *a. sing.* 151/61  
   \*entente, *nom.* 68/192  
   hent, *inf.* 151/60  
   \*relente, *pp.* 16/412  
 descent, *obj.*  
   librament, *obj.* 175/131  
   \*pestilente, *a. sing.* 175/128  
 diligent, *a. sing.*  
   adolent, *a. sing.* 105/30  
   entent, *obl.* 100/1111  
   experient, *a. sing.* 47/95  
   hent, *pp.* 80/542  
   instrument, *nom.* 130/718  
   medicament, *obl.* 110/1110  
   negligent, *a. sing.* 137/904  
   sarment, *obj.* 105/33  
   went, *obl.* 47/96  
 diligent, *a. pl.*  
   entent, *obl.* 142/71  
 diligent, *adv.*  
   silent, *a. pl.* 137/919  
 entent, *obl.*  
   diligent, *a. sing.* 47/93, 100/1108  
   diligent, *a. pl.* 142/70  
   loment, *obl.* 200/370  
   medicament, *obl.* 100/1110  
 experient, *a. sing.*  
   went, *obl.* 47/96  
 experiment, *obl.*  
   insolent, *a. sing.* 209/57  
 ferment, *obj.*  
   condyment, *inf.* 205/525  
 fundament, *nom.*  
   condyment, *obl.* 220/351  
 hent, *inf.*  
   circumferent, *a. sing.* 151/61  
   convenient, *a. sing.* 151/58  
   instrument, *obj.* 42/1149  
 hent, *pp.*  
   diligent, *a. sing.* 80/540  
   impediment, *obj.* 72/328  
   pestilent, *a. sing.* 203/448  
 impediment, *obl.*  
   sarment, *obj.* 101/1125  
   succedent, *obj.* 101/1124  
 impediment, *obj.*  
   hent, *pp.* 72/329  
 increment, *nom.*  
   shent, *pp.* 8/188  
 insolent, *a. sing.*  
   experiment, *obl.* 209/59  
 instrument, *nom.*  
   diligent, *a. sing.* 130/716  
 instrument, *obj.*  
   hent, *inf.* 42/1151  
   scyment, *inf.* 177/183  
 judgement, *obj.*  
   \*entente, *nom.* 178/215  
 librament, *obj.*  
   \*pestilente, *a. sing.* 175/128  
   descent, *obj.* 175/130  
 loment, *obl.*  
   entent, *obl.* 200/371  
 luculent, *a. pl.*  
   shent, *pp.* 186/193  
   blent, *pp.* 186/194  
 lynyment, *obl.*  
   sarment, *obl.* 202/441  
 medicament, *obl.*  
   diligent, *a. sing.* 100/1108  
   entent, *obl.* 100/1111  
 negligent, *a. sing.*  
   diligent, *a. sing.* 137/903  
 negligent, *a. pl.*  
   went, *inf.* 44/20  
 pavyment, *obl.*  
   \*brente, *pp.* 33/904  
 pestilent, *a. sing.*  
   hent, *pp.* 203/447  
 pestilent, *a. pl.*  
   violent, *a. pl.* 12/308

pigment, *obj.*  
 condyment, *obj.* 155/168  
 promynent, *a. sing.*  
 bent, *subj.* 15/382  
 shent, *pp.* 15/383  
 relent, *imper.*  
 sarment, *obl.* 102/1144  
 relent, *pp.*  
 abstinent, *a. sing.* 137/906  
 shent, *pp.* 137/909  
 sarment, *obj.*  
 adolent, *a. sing.* 105/30  
 diligent, *a. sing.* 105/32  
 impediment, *obl.* 101/1122  
 relent, *imper.* 102/1142  
 succedent, *obj.* 101/1124  
 sarment, *obl.*  
 bent, *pp.* 201/388  
 lynyment, *obl.* 202/440  
 turment, *obj.* 65/119  
 scyment, *inf.*  
 instrument, *obj.* 177/185  
 shent, *pp.*  
 abstinent, *a. sing.* 137/906  
 bent, *subj.* 15/382  
 blent, *pp.* 186/194  
 increment, *nom.* 8/189  
 luculent, *a. pl.* 186/191  
 promynent, *a. sing.* 15/380  
 relent, *pp.* 137/908  
 silent, *a. pl.*  
 deligent, *adv.* 137/921  
 succedent, *obj.*  
 impediment, *obl.* 101/1122  
 sarment, *obj.* 101/1125  
 superfluent, *a. sing.*  
 uphent, *pp.* 204/475  
 tegument, *obj.*  
 tobrent, *pp.* 104/21  
 turment, *obj.*  
 sarment, *obl.* 65/118  
 unguent, *obl.*  
 assent, *obl.* 109/146  
 uphent, *pp.*  
 superfluent, *a. sing.* 204/476  
 violent, *a. pl.*  
 pestilent, *a. pl.* 12/307

went, *inf.*  
 negligent, *a. pl.* 44/21  
 went, *obl.*  
 diligent, *a. sing.* 47/93  
 experient, *a. sing.* 47/95

-ente (*see* -ent)

brente, *pp.*  
 \*pavyment, *obl.* 33/906  
 contente, *inf.*  
 shente, *pp.* 166/63  
 entente, *nom.*  
 \*convenient, *a. sing.* 68/190  
 \*jugement, *obj.* 178/216  
 pestilente, *a. sing.*  
 \*descent, *obj.* 175/130  
 \*librament, *obj.* 175/131  
 relente, *pp.*  
 \*convenient, *a. sing.* 16/413  
 shente, *pp.*  
 contente, *inf.* 166/62

## -entes

adolescentes, *a. pl.*  
 parentes, *n. pl.* 135/851  
 parentes, *n. pl.*  
 adolescentes, *a. pl.* 135/849

-epe (*see* -eep, -eepe)

aslepe *adv.*  
 kepe, *imper.* 59/432  
 wepe, *inf.* 59/431  
 bywepe, *subj.*  
 kepe, *inf.* 106/60  
 stepe, *a. sing.* 106/58.  
 crepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 \*deep, *adv.* 109/159  
 kepe, *imper.* 216/259  
 kepe, *inf.* 109/156  
 steepe, *inf.* 56/342  
 crepe, *inf.*  
 depe, *adv.* 78/471, 105/47, 141/  
 42  
 kepe, *inf.* 78/474, 105/44



- depe, *a. sing.*  
   kepe, *inf.* 73/357, 173/74, 214/  
     212  
   slepe, *inf.* 214/214  
   wepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 173/75  
 depe, *adv.*  
   crepe, *inf.* 78/473, 105/46, 141/43  
   kepe, *inf.* 29/773, 53/357, 78/  
     474, 105/44, 168/123  
   kepe, *imper.* 123/532  
   krepe, *inf.* 168/124  
   slepe, *inf.* 53/256  
 drepe, *inf.*  
   wepe, *subj.* 71/279  
 hepe, *imper.*  
   kepe, *imper.* 216/262  
 kepe, *obj.*  
   kepe, *inf.* 58/405  
   \*maturite, *obl.* 183/125  
   wepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 104/7  
 kepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   kepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/270  
   slepe, *inf.* 185/182  
   stepe, *inf.* 54/281  
   wepe, *subj.* 216/271  
 kepe, *imper.*  
   aslepe, *adv.* 59/429  
   be, *subj.* 183/124  
   \*creep, *subj.* 47/89  
   crepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/258  
   deep, *a. pl.* 47/86  
   depe, *adv.* 123/531  
   hepe, *imper.* 216/260  
   lepe, *subj.* 183/121  
   pasnepe, *obl.* 173/56  
   slepe, *inf.* 160/59  
   \*steep, *imper.* 90/811  
   wepe, *inf.* 59/431  
 kepe, *inf.*  
   bywepe, *inf.* 16/425  
   bywepe, *subj.* 106/61  
   crepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 109/158,  
     111/193  
   crepe, *inf.* 78/473, 105/46  
   \*deep, *adv.* 95/972, 109/159  
   \*deep, *a. sing.* 111/191  
   \*deep, *a. pl.* 16/422  
   depe, *adv.* 29/771, 53/254, 78/  
     471, 105/47, 168/121  
   depe, *a. sing.* 73/356, 173/72,  
     214/215  
   kepe, *obj.* 58/406  
   krepe, *inf.* 168/124  
   slepe, *inf.* 53/256, 57/382, 214/  
     214, 217/301  
   stepe, *imper.* 180/48  
   stepe, *a. sing.* 106/58  
   wepe, *subj.* 57/383  
   wepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 173/75  
 krepe, *inf.*  
   depe, *adv.* 168/121  
   kepe, *inf.* 168/123  
 lepe, *subj.*  
   be, *subj.* 183/124  
   kepe, *imper.* 183/123  
 pasnepe, *obl.*  
   kepe, *imper.* 173/55  
 shepe, *obj.*  
   keepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 167/101  
 slepe, *inf.*  
   depe, *adv.* 53/254  
   depe, *a. sing.* 214/215  
   kepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 185/181  
   kepe, *imper.* 160/57  
   kepe, *inf.* 53/257, 57/380, 214/  
     212, 217/300  
   wepe, *subj.* 57/383  
 stepe, *a. sing.*  
   bywepe, *subj.* 106/61  
   kepe, *inf.* 106/60  
 stepe, *imper.*  
   kepe, *inf.* 180/49  
 stepe, *inf.*  
   kepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 54/283  
 wepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   depe, *a. sing.* 173/72  
   kepe, *inf.* 173/74  
   kepe, *obj.* 104/6  
 wepe, *subj.*  
   drepe, *inf.* 71/280  
   kepe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/268,  
     216/270  
   kepe, *inf.* 57/380  
   slepe, *inf.* 57/382

wepe, *inf.*

aslepe, *adv.* 59/429

kepe, *imper.* 59/432

-epeth (*see* -eepeth)

hepeth, *imper.*

keepeth, *v.* 3 *sing. pres.* 105/35

-er (*see* -ere, -ire)

Caniculer, *obl.*

cler, *a. sing.* 168/129

cler, *a. sing.*

Caniculer, *obl.* 168/127

Jannyver, *obl.*

\*Feveryere, *nom.* 53/266

maner, *obl.*

\*clere, *a. sing.* 175/108

November, *obl.*

\*emyspire, *obl.* 206/553

orbiculer, *a. pl.*

\*clere, *a. sing.* 93/893

\*nere, *adv.* 93/894

September, *obl.*

\*clere, *a. sing.* 178/216

ther, *adv.* 170/167

ther, *adv.*

September, *obl.* 170/169

-ere (*see* -er, -eree)

appere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*

clere, *a. pl.* 161/97

appere, *subj.*

lere, *imper.* 3/45

appere, *inf.*

here, *adv.* 199/343

yere, *obl.* 199/356

bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*

here, *adv.* 195/242

pere, *inf.* 195/243

pere, *obl.* 88/777

bere, *subj.*

there, *adv.* 66/141

bere, *inf.*

manere, *obl.* 72/309

brere, *obl.*

rere, *inf.* 81/674

brere, *obj.*

nere, *adv.* 111/213

Canyculere, *nom.*

chere, *obl.* 196/250

ypere, *adv.* 196/247

chere, *obl.*

Canyculere, *nom.* 196/249

Feveryere, *obl.* 214/216

Jannyvere, *obl.* 194/206

chere, *inf.*

yere, *obl.* 144/123

yfere, *adv.* 13/330

clere, *a. sing.*

ffeveryere, *obl.* 91/837

\*maner, *obl.* 175/106

\*orbiculer, *a. pl.* 93/891

nere, *adv.* 93/894

\*September, *obl.* 178/218

yfere, *adv.* 91/835

clere, *a. pl.*

appere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 161/98

\*Janyveer, *obl.* 56/336

yere, *n. pl.* 116/356

dere, *inf.*

there, *adv.* 35/958

elles where, *adv.*

fere, *obl.* 2/23

there, *adv.* 2/25, 66/161

fere, *obl.*

elles-where 2/26

there, *adv.* 2/25

ffeberyere, *obl.*

pere, *obl.* 122/518

Feveryere, *nom.*

\*Jannyver, *obl.* 53/265

Feveryere, *obl.*

chere, *obl.* 214/217

clere, *a. sing.* 91/838

here, *adv.* 93/907

\*Janyveer, *obl.* 50/176

manere, *obj.* 88/767

pere, *obl.* 93/905

sere, *a. pl.* 88/768

yfere, *adv.* 91/835

here, *adv.*  
 appere, *inf.* 199/342  
 bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 195/240  
 ffeveryere, *obl.* 93/908  
 pere, *obl.* 93/905  
 pere, *inf.* 195/243  
 Janyvere, *obl.*  
 chere, *obl.* 194/204  
 lere, *imper.*  
 appere, *subj.* 3/43  
 manere, *obl.*  
 bere, *inf.* 72/311  
 nere, *adv.* 204/486  
 yfere, *adv.* 59/430  
 manere, *obj.*  
 ffeveryere, *obl.* 88/765  
 sere, *a. pl.* 88/768  
 nere, *adv.*  
 brere, *obj.* 111/211  
 clere, *a. sing.* 93/893  
 manere, *obl.* 204/484  
 \*orbiculer, *a. pl.* 93/891  
 nere, *prep.*  
 popule[re] *obl.* 92/877  
 yere, *obj.* 92/879  
 pere, *inf.*  
 bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 195/240  
 here, *adv.* 195/242  
 pere, *obl.*  
 bere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 88/776  
 ffeberyere *obl.* 122/517  
 ffeveryere, *obl.* 93/908  
 here, *adv.* 93/907  
 popule[re] *obl.*  
 nere, *prep.* 92/880  
 yere, *obj.* 92/879  
 rere, *inf.*  
 brere, *obl.* 81/573  
 sere, *a. pl.*  
 ffeveryere, *obl.* 88/765  
 manere, *obj.* 88/767  
 shere, *inf.*  
 were, *subj.* 43/1166  
 were, *inf.* 43/1167  
 tere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 tere, *inf.* 102/1150  
 there, *adv.* 102/1153

tere, *subj.*  
 were, *inf.* 72/307  
 tere, *inf.*  
 tere, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1152  
 there, *adv.* 102/1153  
 there, *adv.*  
 bere, *subj.* 66/143  
 dere, *inf.* 35/959  
 elles where, *adv.* 2/26, 66/160  
 eree, *inf.* 61/9  
 fere, *obl.* 2/23  
 there, *adv.* 97/1016, 97/1018  
 were, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 48/133  
 were, *subj.* 61/12  
 were, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 there, *adv.* 48/132  
 were, *inf.* (wear)  
 shere, *inf.* 43/1164  
 tere, *subj.* 72/308  
 were, *subj.* 43/1166  
 were, *subj.* 3 *sing.*  
 eree, *inf.* 61/9  
 matiere, *obl.* 72/317  
 shere, *inf.* 43/1164  
 there, *adv.* 61/11  
 were, *inf.* 43/1167  
 yfere, *adv.* 72/319, 75/398  
 yere, *nom. pl.*  
 clere, *a. pl.* 116/357  
 yere, *obl.*  
 appere, *inf.* 199/357  
 chere, *inf.* 144/121  
 nere, *prep.* 92/880  
 popule[re] *obl.* 92/877  
 yere, *adv.*  
 Canyculere, *nom.* 196/249  
 chere, *obl.* 196/250  
 chere, *inf.* 13/332  
 clere, *a. sing.* 91/838  
 ffeveryere, *obl.* 91/837  
 manere, *obl.* 59/428  
 matiere, *obl.* 72/317  
 were, *subj.* 72/320, 75/399  
 -erec (see -ere)  
 eree, *inf.*  
 there, *adv.* 61/11  
 were, *v.* 3 *sing. subj.* 61/12

**-ere is** (*see -er is, -eres, -ers*)

chere is

Janyver is 52/233

welner is, 52/235

fere is

\*gutters, *n. pl.* 38/1035

where is

brieres, *n. pl.* 47/97**-er is** (*see -ere is*)

Janyver is

chere is, 52/236

welner is, 52/235

welner is

chere is, 52/236

Janyver is, 52/233

**-eres** (*see -ere is*)beres, *n. pl.*deres, *n. pl.* 31/840brieres, *n. pl.*

where is, 47/98

deres, *n. pl.*beres, *n. pl.* 31/839**-erk** (*see -ark*)werk *obl.*\*kark, *inf.* 129/701**-erme**ferme, *a. sing.*ferme, *inf.* 113/249ferme, *adv.* 113/250ferme, *adv.*ferme, *a. sing.* 113/247ferme, *inf.* 113/249ferme, *inf.*ferme, *a. sing.* 113/247ferme, *adv.* 113/250**-erne**cisterne, *obj.*gouverne, *imper.* 16/427Eterne, *a. sing.*externe, *inf.* 186/215interne, *a. sing.* 186/214sempiterne, *a. sing.* 186/217superne, *a. sing.* 206/547externe, *inf.*Eterne, *a. sing.* 186/212interne, *a. sing.* 186/214sempiterne, *a. sing.* 186/217ferne, *obj.*werne, *inf.* 171/20gouverne, *imper.*cisterne, *obj.* 16/426interne, *a. sing.*Eterne, *a. sing.* 186/212externe, *inf.* 186/215sempiterne, *a. sing.* 186/217sempiterne, *a. sing.*Eterne, *a. sing.* 186/212externe, *inf.* 186/215interne, *a. sing.* 186/214superne, *a. sing.*Eterne, *a. sing.* 206/549werne, *inf.*ferne, *obj.* 171/21**-ers** (*see -ere is*)dyvers, *a. sing.*wers, *a. pl.* 190/101wers, *a. pl.*dyvers, *a. sing.* 190/99gutters, *n. pl.*

\*fere is, 38/1036

**-erst**erst, *adv.*werst, *adv.* 208/31werst, *adv.*erst, *adv.* 208/29**-erve**kerve, *inf.*serve, *imper.* 138/928observe, *inf.*serve, *nom.* 196/261serve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 196/263

reserve, *inf.*  
 serve, *inf.* 62/34  
 serve, *nom.*  
 observe, *inf.* 196/264  
 serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 196/263  
 serve, *obl.*  
 serve, *inf.* 98/1039, 145/141  
 serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 95/952  
 serve, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 observe, *inf.* 196/264  
 serve, *nom.* 196/261  
 serve, *obl.* 95/951  
 serve, *imper.*  
 kerve, *inf.* 138/926  
 serve, *inf.*  
 reserve, *inf.* 62/35  
 serve, *obl.* 98/1037, 145/140  
 sterve, *inf.* 34/931  
 sterve, *inf.*  
 serve, *inf.* 34/930

## -ese (see -ees)

brese, *subj.*  
 crese, *subj.* 142/77  
 brese, *inf.*  
 chese, *obl.* 34/911, 155/162  
 chese, *inf.*  
 chese, *obl.* 154/141  
 chese, *obl.*  
 brese, *inf.* 34/913, 155/164  
 chese, *inf.* 154/143  
 crese, *subj.*  
 brese, *subj.* 142/78  
 encrease, *nom.*  
 ceese, *inf.* 143/92  
 encrease, *inf.*  
 \*doutelees, *adv.* 155/171  
 lese, *inf.*  
 \*thees, *n. pl.* 35/946

## -ese is (see -esys)

chese is  
 flesys, *a. pl.* 167/85

## -eses

breses, *n. pl.*  
 cheses, *n. pl.* 24/652

cheses, *n. pl.*  
 breses, *n. pl.* 24/654

## -eseth

displeseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 eseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/565  
 uneseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/562  
 eseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 displeseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/564  
 uneseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/562  
 uneseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 displeseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/564  
 eseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 81/565

## -esys (see -ese is)

flesys, *a. pl.*  
 chese is, 167/87

## -eson (see -eason)

appeson, *inf.*  
 season, *obl.* 120/447  
 geson, *a. pl.*  
 peson, *n. pl.* 106/68  
 reason, *obl.* 164/4  
 season, *nom.* 164/2  
 season, *obl.* 106/67  
 leson, *inf.*  
 reson, *obl.* 71/289  
 season, *obl.* 71/291  
 peson, *n. pl.*  
 geson, *a. pl.* 106/65  
 season, *obl.* 106/67  
 reson, *obj.*  
 seson, *obl.* 101/1135  
 seson, *obl.*  
 reson, *obj.* 101/1137

## -ess (see -esse)

ingress, *obl.*  
 \*lyonesse, *obl.* 35/961  
 \*hevynesse, *obj.* 35/963

## -esse (see -ess)

besinesse, *nom.*  
 expresse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 66/154

- besinesse, *obl.*  
   *opresse, subj.* 68/205  
   *dresse, imper.* 68/207  
 bisinesse, *obj.*  
   *bitternesse, obj.* 172/44  
   *greetnesse, obl.* 172/47  
 bitternesse, *obj.*  
   *bisinesse, obj.* 172/46  
   *greetnesse, obl.* 172/47  
 cipresse, *obl.*  
   *cupresse, obl.* 15/397  
   *dresse, imper.* 15/396  
 compresse, *imper.*  
   *presse, obl.* 154/149  
   *sadnesse, obl.* 154/152  
 cupresse, *obl.*  
   *cipresse, obl.* 15/394  
   *dresse, imper.* 15/396  
   *gesse, imper.* 200/385  
 distresse, *obl.*  
   *hevynesse, obl.* 107/82  
   *lesse, a. sing.* 107/81  
 dresse, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   *express, pp.* 206/537  
   *presse, v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/534  
 dresse, *imper.*  
   *besinesse, obl.* 68/208  
   *cipresse, obl.* 15/394  
   *cupresse, obl.* 15/397  
   *fatnesse, obl.* 79/502  
   *opresse, subj.* 68/205, 79/499,  
     129/694  
   *dresse, inf.*  
     *gentilnesse, obl.* 92/875  
     *greetnesse, obl.* 75/386  
   *expresse, v. 3 pl. pres.*  
     *besinesse, nom.* 66/153  
   *expresse, inf.*  
     *gentillesse, 188/28*  
     *gesse, 1 s. pres.* 58/404  
     *lesse, a. pl.* 58/401  
   *expresse, pp.*  
     *presse, v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/534  
     *dresse, v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/536  
   *fatnesse, obl.*  
     *opresse, subj.* 79/499  
     *dresse, imper.* 79/501  
   *gentilnesse, obl.*  
     *dresse, inf.* 92/874  
     *expresse, inf.* 188/27  
   *gesse, 1 s. pres.*  
     *expresse, inf.* 58/403  
     *lesse, a. pl.* 58/401  
   *gesse, imper.*  
     *cupresse, obl.* 200/384  
     *lesse, a. sing.* 183/118  
   *greetnesse, obl.*  
     *bisinesse, obj.* 172/146  
     *bitternesse, obj.* 172/44  
     *dresse, inf.* 75/388  
   *hevynesse, obl.*  
     *distresse, obl.* 107/79  
     *lesse, a. sing.* 107/81  
   *hevynesse, obj.*  
     *\*ingress, obl.* 35/964  
     *lyonesse, obl.* 35/961  
   *lesse, a. sing.*  
     *distresse, obl.* 107/79  
     *gesse, imper.* 183/119  
     *hevynesse, obl.* 107/82  
   *lesse, a. pl.*  
     *expresse, inf.* 58/403  
     *gesse, 1 s. pres.* 58/404  
   *lyonesse, obl.*  
     *hevynesse, obj.* 35/963  
     *\*ingress, obl.* 35/964  
   *opresse, subj.*  
     *besinesse, obl.* 68/208  
     *dresse, imper.* 68/207, 79/501,  
       129/693  
     *fatnesse, obl.* 79/502  
   *presse, obl.*  
     *compresse, imper.* 154/151  
     *presse, imper.* 50/188  
     *sadnesse, obl.* 154/152  
   *presse, v. 3 pl. pres.*  
     *dresse, v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/536  
     *expresse, pp.* 206/537  
   *presse, imper.*  
     *presse, obl.* 50/189  
   *sadnesse, obl.*  
     *compresse, imper.* 154/151  
     *presse, obl.* 154/149



- estes (*see* -eestes, -eest is, and -est is)
- bestes, *n. pl.*  
 best is, 78/470, 135/869  
 feest is, 18/488  
 leest is, 20/521  
 unleest is, 18/487
- drestes, *n. pl.*  
 beestes, *n. pl.* 35/945
- est is (*see* -eestes, -eest is, and -estes)
- best is  
 bestes, *n. pl.* 78/472, 135/868
- honest is  
 beestes, *n. pl.* 43/1163
- kest is  
 beestes, *n. pl.* 62/37  
 feest is, 62/39
- est (*see* -eest, -eeste, and -este)
- agrest, *a. sing.*  
 rest, *inf.* 200/379
- best, *obl.*  
 rest, *obl.* 135/857  
 rest, *inf.* 135/860
- best, *a. sing.*  
 celest, *a. sing.* 17/456  
 fest, *adv.* 83/634  
 grettest, *a. sing.* 82/585  
 harvest, *obl.* 82/583  
 honest, *a. sing.* 30/812, 201/392  
 kest, *inf.* 98/1032  
 kest, *imper.* 14/358  
 kest, *pp.* 211/131  
 lest, *a. sing.* 77/462  
 rest, *obl.* 59/435, 83/632  
 rest, *obj.* 5/105  
 sweetest, *a. sing.* 38/1023  
 unrest, *subj.* 211/130
- best, *adv.*  
 chest, *obl.* 173/73  
 est, *nom.* 15/389
- gladdest, *a. pl.* 50/186  
 honest, *a. sing.* 5/124  
 prest, *pp.* 50/187  
 rest, *obj.* 207/7  
 west, *nom.* 15/387  
 west, *obl.* 5/121
- best, *adj. pl.*  
 brest, *obl.* 3/48
- brest, *nom.*  
 \*streght, *a. sing.* 129/683
- brest, *obl.*  
 best, *adj. pl.* 3/49
- celest, *a. sing.*  
 best, *a. sing.* 17/454
- chest, *obl.*  
 best, *adv.* 173/71
- chillingest, *a. pl.*  
 ferventest, *a. pl.* 120/450  
 hardiest, *adv.* 120/453
- est, *nom.*  
 best, *adv.* 15/390  
 west, *nom.* 15/387
- est, *obl.*  
 west, *obl.* 50/164
- fattest, *a. sing.*  
 thickest, *adv.* 52/237
- fertilest, *a. pl.*  
 fest, *adv.* 101/1138  
 kest, *pp.* 101/1139
- ferventest, *a. pl.*  
 chillingest, *a. pl.* 120/452  
 hardiest, *adv.* 120/453
- fest, *adv.*  
 best, *a. sing.* 83/635  
 fertilest, *a. pl.* 101/1136  
 kest, *imper.* 76/435  
 kest, *pp.* 101/1139  
 rest, *obl.* 83/632
- gladdest, *a. pl.*  
 best, *adv.* 50/184  
 prest, *pp.* 50/187
- grettest, *a. sing.*  
 best, *a. sing.* 82/586  
 harvest, *obl.* 82/583
- hardiest, *adv.*  
 chillingest, *a. pl.* 120/452  
 ferventest, *a. pl.* 120/450

harvest, *obl.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 82/586  
   grettest, *a. sing.* 82/585  
 honest, *a. sing.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 5/123, 30/811,  
   201/391  
   west, *obl.* 5/121  
 kest, *imper.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 14/360  
   fest, *adv.* 76/437  
 kest, *subj.*  
   beest, *obl.* 33/893  
   \*enfeste, *subj.* 33/891  
 kest, *inf.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 98/1030  
 kest, *pp.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 211/128  
   fertilest, *a. pl.* 101/1136  
   fest, *adv.* 101/1138  
   unrest, *subj.* 211/130  
 lest, *a. sing.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 77/461  
 prest, *pp.*  
   best, *adv.* 50/184  
   gladdest, *a. pl.* 50/186  
 rest, *obj.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 5/104  
   best, *adv.* 207/6  
 rest, *obl.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 59/437, 83/635  
   best, *obl.* 135/859  
   fest, *adv.* 83/634  
   rest, *inf.* 135/860  
 rest, *inf.*  
   agrest, *a. sing.* 200/381  
   best, *obl.* 135/859  
   rest, *obl.* 135/857  
 sweetest, *a. sing.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 38/1025  
 thickest, *adv.*  
   fattest, *a. sing.* 52/238  
 unrest, *subj.*  
   best, *a. sing.* 211/128  
   kest, *pp.* 211/131  
 west, *nom.*  
   best, *adv.* 15/390  
   est, *nom.* 15/389

west, *obl.*  
   best, *adv.* 5/123  
   est, *obl.* 50/162  
   honest, *a. sing.* 5/124  
   -este (*see* -eest and -est)  
 enfeste, *subj.*  
   \*beest, *obl.* 33/893  
   \*kest, *subj.* 33/894  
 meste, *a. sing.*  
   beeste, *nom.* 137/900  
   -ete (*see* -eet, -eete, and -ette)  
 alete, *inf.*  
   gete, *inf.* 174/102  
   swete, *subj.* 174/100  
 bete, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   grete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 204/494  
   trete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 204/492  
 bete, *subj.*  
   weete, *a. pl.* 210/99  
 bete, *inf.*  
   threte, *inf.* 31/832  
 ete, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   meete, *obj.* 99/1078  
 ete, *subj.*  
   mete, *obl.* 22/596, 27/722  
 ete, *inf.*  
   mete, *obl.* 153/106  
 gete, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   bete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 204/495  
   \*greet, *a. pl.* 134/835  
   grete, *inf.* 149/6  
   trete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 158/4, 204/  
   492  
   whete, *obj.* 158/5  
 gete, *imper.*  
   \*greet, *adv.* 136/871  
   trete, *inf.* 136/874  
 gete, *inf.*  
   alete, *inf.* 174/103  
   \*geet, *obl.* 129/677  
   \*greet, *a. pl.* 129/675  
   greete, *a. pl.* 59/422  
   heete, *obl.* 124/580  
   heirylete, *inf.* 190/96  
   hete, *obl.* 94/933, 190/93

hete, 1 *s. pres.* 94/936  
 mete, *nom.* 21/559  
 mete, *obl.* 21/570  
 mete, *obj.* 86/708  
 swete, *a. sing.* 14/370  
 swete, *a. pl.* 173/76  
 swete, *subj.* 174/100  
 swete, *inf.* 59/424, 158/19  
 trete, *subj.* 87/741  
 wete, *obj.* 76/426  
 whete, *nom.* 158/16  
 grete, *inf.*  
 gete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 149/7  
 hete, *obl.* 159/26  
 whete, *obj.* 159/23  
 grete, *a. sing.*  
 trete, *imper.* 155/182  
 grete, *a. pl.*  
 hete, *obl.* 49/139  
 mete, *nom.* 22/584  
 \*sette, *inf.* 67/170  
 \*sette, *pp.* 67/173  
 trete, *imper.* 165/34  
 heirylete, *inf.*  
 gete, *inf.* 190/95  
 hete, *obl.* 190/93  
 hete, 1 *s. pres.*  
 gete, *inf.* 94/935  
 hete, *obl.* 94/933  
 hete, *obl.*  
 \*greet, *a. pl.* 93/912  
 trete, *subj.* 93/914  
 trete, *inf.* 193/175  
 hete, *obl.*  
 gete, *inf.* 94/935, 190/95  
 grete, *inf.* 159/25  
 grete, *a. pl.* 49/140  
 heirylete, *inf.* 190/96  
 hete, 1 *s. pres.* 94/936  
 lete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 211/125  
 lete, *inf.* 206/529  
 swete, *a. pl.* 206/527  
 whete, *obj.* 159/23  
 lete, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 hete, *obl.* 211/126  
 shete, *obl.* 112/222  
 wete, *obl.* 112/219

lete, *imper.*  
 weete, *inf.* 81/575  
 lete, *inf.*  
 hete, *obl.* 206/530  
 swete, *a. pl.* 206/527  
 mete, *nom.*  
 gete, *inf.* 21/560  
 grete, *a. pl.* 22/582  
 mete, *obj.*  
 gete, *inf.* 86/710  
 mete, *obl.*  
 ete, *subj.* 22/598, 27/724  
 ete, *inf.* 153/108  
 gete, *inf.* 21/568  
 \*greet, *a. pl.* 183/130  
 mete, *inf.* 49/159  
 weete, *obl.* 49/156  
 whete, *obj.* 159/34  
 whete, *obl.* 180/41  
 ygete, *pp.* 183/131  
 mete, *a. sing.*  
 swete, *obj.* 187/16  
 wete, *a. pl.* 187/18  
 mete, *imper.*  
 \*greet, *a. pl.* 61/16  
 \*sweet, *inf.* 61/18  
 mete, *subj.*  
 trete, *imper.* 177/171  
 mete, *inf.*  
 mete, *a. sing.* 49/158  
 weete, *obl.* 49/156  
 olivete, *obj.*  
 swete, *inf.* 189/67  
 swete, *a. pl.* 189/68  
 sete, *a. sing.*  
 sweete *a. sing.* 59/419  
 sete, *a. pl.*  
 wete, *subj.* 160/76  
 sete, *inf.*  
 \*greet, *a. pl.* 120/459  
 \*surtreet, *imper.* 120/460  
 shete, *obj.*  
 lete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 112/221  
 wete, *obl.* 112/219  
 shete, *obl.*  
 swete, *inf.* 203/446  
 trete, *inf.* 203/443

swete, *a. sing.*

gete, *inf.* 14/371

trete, *inf.* 4/75

wete, *inf.* 4/74

swete, *a. pl.*

gete, *inf.* 173/77

hete, *obl.* 206/530

lete, *inf.* 206/529

meete, *a. pl.* 172/45

olivete, *obj.* 189/65

sweete, *inf.* 55/314

swete, *inf.* 189/67

wete, *a. pl.* 149/1

swete, *adv.*

meete, *obj.* 199/336

swete, *obj.*

wete, *a. pl.* 187/18

mete, *a. sing.* 187/19

swete, *subj.*

alete, *inf.* 174/103

gete, *inf.* 174/102

whete, *obl.* 18/484

swete, *inf.*

gete, *inf.* 59/425, 158/18

greete, *a. pl.* 59/422

heete, *obl.* 156/198

olivete, *obj.* 189/65

swete, *a. pl.* 189/68

shete, *obl.* 203/445

trete, *inf.* 156/200, 203/443

whete, *nom.* 158/16

threte, *inf.*

bete, *inf.* 31/833

trete, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

bete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 204/495

gete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 158/2, 204/

494

whete, *obj.* 158/5

trete, *subj.*

gete, *inf.* 87/742

\*greet, *a. pl.* 93/912

hete, *obl.* 93/915

trete, *imper.*

grete, *a. sing.* 155/181

grete, *a. pl.* 165/35

mete, *subj.* 177/169

trete, *inf.*

gete, *imper.* 136/873

\*greet, *adv.* 136/871

\*greet, *a. pl.* 199/349, 213/183

heete, *obl.* 156/198

hete, *obj.* 193/174

shete, *obl.* 203/445

swete, *inf.* 156/201, 203/446

swete, *a. sing.* 4/72

wete, *imper.* 4/74

wete, *a. pl.* 91/848

wete, *a. sing.*

whete, *obl.* 10/251

wete, *a. pl.*

mete, *a. sing.* 187/19

swete, *obj.* 187/16

swete, *a. pl.* 149/3

trete, *inf.* 91/850

wete, *obl.*

lete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 112/221

shete, *obj.* 112/222

wete, *obj.*

gete, *inf.* 76/427

wete, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

sweete, *a. sing.* 121/477

wete, *imper.*

greete, *a. pl.* 212/147

wete, *subj.*

sete, *a. pl.* 160/77

wete, *inf.*

swete, *a. sing.* 4/72

trete, *inf.* 4/75

whete, *nom.*

gete, *inf.* 158/18

swete, *inf.* 158/19

whete, *obl.*

mete, *a. sing.* 180/42

swete, *subj.* 18/486

wete, *a. sing.* 10/252

whete, *obj.*

gete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 158/2

grete, *inf.* 159/25

hete, *obl.* 159/26

mete, *obl.* 159/35

trete, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 158/4

ygete, *pp.*

\*greet, *a. pl.* 183/130

mete, *obl.* 183/128

-eth (*see* -ith)

beth, *subj.*

seth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 92/873

therwith, *adv.* 92/870

with, *prep.* 199/351

deth, *obl.*

sleth, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 215/239

seth, *3 s. pres.*

beth, *subj.* 92/872

therwith, *adv.* 92/870

sleth, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

deth, *obl.* 215/241

-ethe

alethe, *inf.*

brethe, *inf.* 202/433

brethe, *inf.*

alethe, *inf.* 202/434

-ette

bette, *adv.*

sette, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 113/267

sette, *inf.* 97/1009

ysette, *pp.* 192/139

bewette, *pp.*

sette, *pp.* 110/176

dette, *obl.*

sette, *subj.* 24/631

fette, *imper.*

lette, *pp.* 211/116

mette, *obl.* 210/89

sette, *subj.* 211/114

sette, *inf.* 210/86

fette, *inf.*

sette, *imper.* 122/498

fette, *pp.*

grette, *a. sing.* 76/432

sette, *imper.* 76/429

sette, *subj.* 111/190

flette, *imper.*

lette, *imper.* 18/474

sette, *imper.* 18/471

frette, *inf.*

lette, *inf.* 56/354

sette, *inf.* 56/352

grette, *a. sing.*

fette, *pp.* 76/431

sette, *imper.* 76/429

g(r)ette, *a. pl.*

ysette, *pp.* 74/381

lette, *imper.*

flette, *imper.* 18/473

sette, *imper.* 18/471

lette, *subj.*

oversette, *subj.* 6/144

sette, *inf.* 6/142, 79/506

wette, *pp.* 79/509

lette, *inf.*

frette, *inf.* 56/355

sette, *inf.* 26/708, 56/352, 67/183

lette, *pp.*

frette, *imper.* 211/117

sette, *subj.* 211/114

mette, *obl.*

fette, *imper.* 210/88

sette, *inf.* 65/133, 68/197, 210/86

mette, *imper.*

sette, *inf.* 109/134

oversette, *subj.*

lette, *subj.* 6/145

sette, *inf.* 6/142

sette, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

bette, *adv.* 97/1011

fette, *a. sing.* 113/269

ysette, *pp.* 53/269

sette, *imper.*

fette, *inf.* 122/500

fette, *pp.* 76/431

flette, *imper.* 18/473

grette, *a. sing.* 76/432

lette, *imper.* 18/474

violette, *obj.* 37/1014

ywette, *pp.* 50/182

sette, *subj.*

dette, *obl.* 24/633

fette, *imper.* 211/117

fette, *pp.* 111/192

lette, *pp.* 211/116

ysette, *pp.* 168/107  
 wette, *pp.* 168/109  
 sette, *inf.*  
   bette, *adv.* 97/1011  
   fette, *imper.* 210/88  
   frette, *inf.* 56/355  
   \*grete, *a. pl.* 67/172  
   lette, *subj.* 6/145, 79/508  
   lette, *inf.* 26/710, 56/354, 67/  
     185  
   mette, *obl.* 68/199, 210/89  
   mette, *imper.* 109/136  
   mette, *inf.* 65/132  
   oversette, *subj.* 6/144  
   sette, *pp.* 67/173  
   umbiwette, *imper.* 85/675  
   wette, *obl.* 65/125  
   wette, *pp.* 79/509, 193/168  
   ywette, *pp.* 191/122  
 sette, *pp.*  
   bewette, *pp.* 110/178  
   \*greett, *a. sing.* 115/311  
   \*grete, *a. pl.* 67/172  
   sette, *inf.* 67/170  
   sette, *pp.* 145/135, 145/137  
   wette, *pp.* 93/916  
 umbiwette, *imper.*  
   sette, *inf.* 85/673  
 violette, *obj.*  
   sette, *imper.* 37/1015  
 wette, *obl.*  
   sette, *inf.* 65/126  
 wette, *pp.*  
   lette, *subj.* 79/508  
   sette, *subj.* 168/110  
   sette, *inf.* 79/506, 193/167  
   sette, *pp.* 93/917  
   ysette, *pp.* 168/107  
 ysette, *pp.*  
   bette, *adv.* 192/140  
   g(r)ette, *a. pl.* 74/379  
   sette, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 53/267  
   sette, *subj.* 168/110  
   wette, *pp.* 168/109  
 wette, *pp.*  
   sette, *imper.* 50/181  
   sette, *inf.* 191/120

-eu (*see* -u)

greu, *v. 3 pl. pt.*  
   superflu, *a. pl.* 168/118

-eve (*see* -ieue)

bereve, *inf.*  
   leve, *obj.* 152/100  
   leve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 152/102  
 bileve, *obj.*  
   greve, *inf.* 82/609  
 byleve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   meve, *imper.* 198/307  
 cheve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   myscheve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 63/65  
   preve, *inf.* 63/68  
 cheve, *inf.*  
   cleve, *imper.* 195/234  
   preve, *inf.* 83/615  
 cleve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   streve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 101/1127  
 cleve, *imper.*  
   cheve, *inf.* 195/232  
 cleve, *inf.*  
   eve, *obl.* 219/340  
   remeve, *inf.* 219/341  
 eve, *obl.*  
   cleve, *inf.* 219/338  
   greve, *subj.* 23/611, 189/53  
   greve, *inf.* 105/24  
   leve, *inf.* 189/51  
   myscheve, *subj.* 23/614  
   remeve, *imper.* 190/102  
   remeve, *inf.* 219/341  
   streve, *inf.* 190/103  
 greve, *subj.*  
   eve, *obl.* 23/613, 189/54  
   leve, *inf.* 189/51  
   myscheve, *subj.* 23/614  
 greve, *inf.*  
   bileve, *obj.* 82/608  
   eve, *obl.* 105/22  
 leve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   bereve, *inf.* 152/103  
   leve, *obj.* 152/100  
   preve, *inf.* 176/148



leve, *imper.*  
 leve, *inf.* 71/276  
 preve, *inf.* 172/49  
 leve, *inf.*  
 eve, *obl.* 189/54  
 greve, *subj.* 189/53  
 leve, *imper.* 71/274  
 leve, *obj.*  
 breve, *inf.* 152/103  
 leve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 152/102  
 meve, *imper.*  
 byleve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 198/308  
 preve, *inf.* 50/180  
 revieve, *inf.* 50/177  
 myscheve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 cheve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 63/67  
 preve, *inf.* 63/68  
 myscheve, *subj.*  
 eve, *obl.* 23/613  
 greve, *subj.* 23/611  
 preve, *inf.*  
 cheve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 63/67  
 cheve, *inf.* 83/616  
 leve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 176/150  
 leve, *imper.* 172/48  
 meve, *imper.* 50/179  
 myscheve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 63/65  
 remove, *inf.* 55/308  
 revieve, *imper.* 50/177  
 remove, *imper.*  
 eve, *obl.* 190/100  
 streve, *inf.* 190/103  
 remove, *inf.*  
 cleve, *inf.* 219/338  
 eve, *obl.* 219/340  
 preve, *inf.* 55/307  
 streve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 cleve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 101/1126  
 streve, *inf.*  
 eve, *obl.* 190/100  
 remove, *imper.* 190/102

## -eved

cheved, *pp.*  
 preved, *pp.* 217/295  
 moeved, *pp.*  
 ypreved, *pp.* 198/304

preved, *pp.*  
 cheved, 217/297  
 ypreved, *pp.*  
 moeved, *pp.* 198/302

## -even (see -evon)

eleven (XI), *a. pl.*  
 even, *a. pl.* 139/954  
 even, *adv.* 147/215, 169/157,  
 206/540  
 seven (VII), *a. pl.* 147/213, 186/  
 206  
 even, *obl.*  
 heven, *obl.* 154/134  
 even, *a. sing.*  
 seven (VII), *a. pl.* 181/72  
 heven, *inf.* 181/75  
 heven, *obj.* 186/203  
 even, *a. pl.*  
 eleven (XI), *a. pl.* 139/956  
 sevon, *a. pl.* 135/866  
 unevon, *a. pl.* 135/867  
 even, *adv.*  
 eleven (XI), *a. pl.* 147/216,  
 169/156, 206/542  
 heven, *obl.* 156/215  
 heven, *inf.*  
 even, *a. sing.* 181/74  
 seven (VII), *a. pl.* 181/72  
 heven, *obl.*  
 even, *obl.* 154/136  
 even, *adv.* 156/214  
 seven (VII), *a. pl.* 156/212  
 heven, *obj.*  
 even, *a. sing.* 186/202  
 seven, *a. pl.* 147/213, 156/212  
 seven (VII), *a. pl.*  
 eleven (XI), *a. pl.* 147/216,  
 186/204  
 even, *adv.* 147/215, 156/214,  
 181/74  
 heven, *inf.* 181/75  
 heven, *obl.* 156/215

## -ever (see -ebre)

lever, *a. sing.*  
 \*elebre, *nom.* 38/1044

**-eve is (see -eves)**

cheve is  
 cleves, *nom.* 50/167  
 preve is  
 greves, *n. pl.* 49/149  
 repreve is, 49/151  
 repreve is  
 aspreve is, 49/152  
 greves, *n. pl.* 49/149

**-eves (see -eve is)**

cleves, *nom.*  
 cheve is, 50/168  
 greves, *n. pl.*  
 repreve is, 49/151  
 aspreve is, 49/152

**-evon (see -even)**

sevon, *num. a.*  
 even, *a. pl.* 135/864  
 unevon, *a. pl.* 135/867  
 unevon, *a. pl.*  
 even, *a. pl.* 135/864  
 sevon, *obl.* 135/866

**-ew (see -ewe)**

eschew, *inf.*<sup>1</sup>  
 \*remewe, *imper.* 29/777

**-ewe (see -ue, -ew)**

arewe, *adv.*  
 fewe, *a. pl.* 25/674  
 shewe, *inf.* 25/676  
 eschewe, *inf.*  
 mewe, *obl.* 125/583  
 sewe, *inf.* 125/585  
 eschewe, *imp.*  
 renewe, *inf.* 5/116  
 trewe, *a. pl.* 5/117  
 eschewe, *inf.*  
 pursue, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 34/924  
 remewe, *inf.* 112/244  
 rewe, *obj.* 22/552  
 fewe, *a. pl.*  
 arewe, *adv.* 25/677  
 remewe, *subj.* 138/930  
 rewe, *obl.* 71/290, 138/929  
 shewe, *inf.* 25/676

grewe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 newe, *a. pl.* 74/377  
 mewe, *obl.*  
 eschewe, *inf.* 125/586  
 newe, *a. pl.* 21/574  
 sewe, *inf.* 125/585  
 newe, *a. sing.*  
 renewe, *inf.* 96/977  
 snewe, *imper.* 199/332  
 trewe, *a. pl.* 96/978  
 newe, *a. pl.*  
 grewe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 74/378  
 mewe, *obl.* 21/573  
 remewe, *inf.* 54/280  
 remewe,<sup>1</sup> *imper.*  
 \*eschew, *inf.* 29/776  
 remewe, *subj.*  
 fewe, *a. pl.* 138/927  
 rewe, *obl.* 138/929  
 remewe, *inf.*  
 eschewe, *inf.* 112/245  
 newe, *a. pl.* 54/279  
 renewe, *inf.*  
 eschewe, *imper.* 5/114  
 newe, *a. sing.* 96/975  
 stewe, *obj.* 28/769  
 trewe, *a. pl.* 5/117, 96/978  
 rewe, *obj.*  
 eschewe, *inf.* 21/553  
 rewe, *obl.*  
 fewe, *a. pl.* 71/288, 138/927  
 remewe, *subj.* 138/930  
 sewe, *inf.*  
 eschewe, *inf.* 125/586  
 mewe, *obl.* 125/583  
 shewe, *inf.*  
 arewe, *adv.* 25/677  
 fewe, *a. pl.* 25/674  
 snewe, *imper.*  
 newe, *a. sing.* 199/330  
 stewe, *obj.*  
 renewe, *inf.* 28/770  
 trewe, *a. pl.*  
 eschewe, *imper.* 5/114  
 newe, *a. sing.* 96/975  
 renewe, *inf.* 5/116, 96/977

<sup>1</sup> A ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.

-ewes (*see -ew is*)  
 mewes, *n. pl.*  
 eschew is, 20/528

-ew is (*see -ewes*)  
 eschew is  
 mewes, *n. pl.* 20/526

-i, -y (*see -ie*)  
 advysely, *adv.*  
 gisily, *adv.* 75/409  
 avisely, *adv.*  
 besily, *adv.* 4/71  
 besily, *adv.*  
 avisely, *adv.* 4/73  
 esily, *adv.* 23/610  
 busely, *adv.*  
 wely, *a. sing.* 70/266  
 by and by, *adv.*  
 myghtely, *adv.* 15/399  
 clenly, *adv.*  
 contynuelly, *adv.* 204/473  
 mightily, *adv.* 204/471  
 contynuelly, *adv.*  
 clenly, *adv.* 204/474  
 mightily, *adv.* 204/471  
 dri,<sup>1</sup> *a. pl.*  
 \*hie, *inf.* 99/1075  
 \*multiplie, *inf.* 99/1076  
 esily, *adv.*  
 besily, *adv.* 23/612  
 evenly, *adv.*  
 unevenly, *adv.* 215/234  
 gisily, *adv.*  
 advysely, *adv.* 75/407  
 mightily, *adv.*  
 clenly, *adv.* 204/474  
 contynuelly, *adv.* 204/473  
 myghtely, *adv.*  
 by and by, *adv.* 15/398  
 multipli,<sup>1</sup> *inf.*  
 \*trie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 138/934  
 \*die, *subj.* 138/937

prively, *adv.*  
 sekirly, *adv.* 31/843  
 sekirly, *adv.*  
 prively, *adv.* 31/841  
 subtilly, *adv.*  
 therby, *adv.* 161/101  
 territory, *obl.*  
 \*memorie, *obl.* 120/469  
 therby, *adv.*  
 subtilly, *adv.* 161/99  
 unevenly, *adv.*  
 evenly, *adv.* 215/232  
 wely, *a. sing.*  
 busely, *adv.* 70/265

-ic (*see -ik*)  
 mastic, *obl.*  
 epatik, *a. pl.* 201/408  
 endik, *a. sing.* 201/411

-ice (*see -ise, -yse*)  
 cherice, *inf.*  
 vice, *nom.* 112/237  
 price, *obl.*  
 vice, *obl.* 5/100  
 avyse, *nom.* 5/102  
 servyce, *obj.*  
 avyse, *imper.* 138/952  
 suffice, *subj.*  
 devyse, *imper.* 146/186  
 suffice, *inf.*  
 aryse, *inf.* 40/1081  
 assise, 16/430  
 devise, *imper.* 199/348  
 devyse, *inf.* 18/475, 74/364,  
 199/347  
 gise, *nom.* 99/1067  
 gyse, *nom.* 145/149  
 rise, *inf.* 187/13  
 wyse, *n. pl.* 127/659  
 vice, *nom.*  
 cherice, *inf.* 112/238  
 vice, *obl.*  
 avyse, *nom.* 5/102  
 price, *obl.* 5/103

<sup>1</sup> In these instances the scribe, by omitting the final *e*, has spoilt an otherwise correct ryme.

**-iced** (*see -ysed*)

sufficed, *pp.*  
 devysed, 1 *s. pres.* 61/21

**-iceth** (*see -iseth*)

sufficeth, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
 aviseth, *v. 3 s. pres.* 140/14

**-icke** (*see -ik*)

thicke, *a. sing.*  
 \*brik, *nom.* 156/202

**-ide, -yde**

abyde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 devyde, *inf.* 51/205  
 hide, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 113/257  
 slide, *inf.* 113/256  
 wride, *a. sing.* 51/207  
 abide, *subj.*  
 slide, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 163/129  
 abyde, *subj.*  
 asyde, *obl.* 15/401  
 devyde, *inf.* 124/561  
 glide, *imper.* 15/404  
 abide, *inf.*  
 aside, *adv.* 136/880  
 besyde, *adv.* 37/1000  
 ride, *inf.* 136/878  
 tide, *obl.* 214/210  
 abyde, *inf.*  
 beside, 30/821, 52/244  
 devyde, *inf.* 75/387  
 gide, *inf.* 64/95  
 hide, *inf.* 86/200  
 side, *obl.* 13/331, 17/435, 75/  
 389, 186/198, 209/55  
 slyde, *inf.* 64/96  
 syde, *obl.* 21/561  
 tyde, *obj.* 30/824  
 tyde, *obl.* 13/334  
 aside, *adv.*  
 abide, *inf.* 136/881  
 ride, *inf.* 136/878  
 asyde, *adv.*  
 stride, *subj.* 37/1011

asyde, *obl.*  
 abyde, *subj.* 15/403  
 glide, *imper.* 15/404  
 astride, *inf.*  
 prasocoride, *obj.* 35/953  
 beside, *adv.*  
 abyde, *inf.* 30/823, 52/245  
 side, *obl.* 146/170  
 tyde, *obj.* 30/824  
 besyde, *adv.*  
 abide, *inf.* 37/1001  
 betyde, *inf.*  
 cantaride, *obj.* 33/890  
 gliciride, *obl.* 200/358  
 byde, *subj.*  
 glide, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 35/943  
 hide, *inf.* 35/940  
 cantaride, *obj.*  
 betyde, *inf.* 33/892  
 cupide, *obj.*  
 side, *obl.* 23/626  
 devide, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 syde, *obl.* 89/805  
 devide, *inf.*  
 hyde, *inf.* 92/885  
 devyde, *imper.*  
 side, *obl.* 65/131  
 syde, *obl.* 15/386, 38/1028  
 wide, *adv.* 65/128  
 devyde, *inf.*  
 abyde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 51/208  
 abyde, *subj.* 124/563  
 abyde, *inf.* 75/390  
 side, *obl.* 75/389, 95/960, 101/  
 1128  
 syde, *obl.* 162/106  
 slide, *inf.* 95/969  
 wride, *a. sing.* 51/207  
 gide, *obj.*  
 ride, *inf.* 157/234  
 gide, *inf.*  
 abyde, *inf.* 64/93  
 slyde, *inf.* 64/96  
 glide, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 byde, *subj.* 35/942  
 hide, *inf.* 35/940

- glide, *imper.*  
   abyde, *subj.* 15/403  
   asyde, *obl.* 15/401  
 glyde, *inf.*  
   syde, *obl.* 61/6  
 gliciride, *obl.*  
   betyde, *inf.* 200/360  
 hide, *nom.*  
   side, *obl.* 36/980  
 hide, *obj.*  
   side, *obl.* 35/962  
 hide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   abide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/254  
   slide, *inf.* 113/256  
 hide, *imper.*  
   wyde, *a. pl.* 86/715  
 hide, *inf.*  
   abyde, *inf.* 186/201  
   byde, *subj.* 35/942  
   glide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/943  
   side, *obl.* 186/198  
 hyde, *inf.*  
   devide, *inf.* 92/883  
 humyde, *a. sing.*  
   wyde, *a. pl.* 114/283  
 prasocoride, *obj.*  
   athide, *inf.* 35/955  
 ride, *inf.*  
   abide, *inf.* 136/881  
   aside, *adv.* 136/880  
   gide, *obj.* 157/234  
 side, *nom.*  
   syde, *a. pl.* 129/684  
   wide, *a. pl.* 129/685  
 side, *obj.*  
   wyde, *obl.* 48/108  
 side, *obl.*  
   abyde, *inf.* 13/333, 17/437, 75/  
   390, 186/201, 209/56  
   beside, *prep.* 146/172  
   cupide, *obj.* 23/624  
   devyde, *imper.* 65/130  
   devyde, *inf.* 75/387, 95/962,  
   101/1130  
   hide, *nom.* 36/979  
   hide, *obj.* 35/960  
   hide, *inf.* 186/200  
   tyde, *obl.* 13/334  
   wide, *adv.* 65/128  
 syde, *obl.*  
   abyde, *inf.* 21/563  
   devide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 89/804  
   devyde, *imper.* 15/388, 38/  
   1029  
   devyde, *inf.* 162/108  
   glyde, *inf.* 61/7  
   syde, *a. sing.* 99/1060  
   tyde, *obl.* 19/493  
   wyde, *adv.* 129/680  
   wyde, *a. pl.* 96/980, 131/737  
 syde, *a. sing.*  
   syde, *obl.* 99/1058  
 syde, *a. pl.*  
   side, *nom.* 129/682  
   wyde, *a. pl.* 129/685  
   wyde, *adv.* 130/709  
 slide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   abide, *subj.* 163/127  
 slide, *inf.*  
   abide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/254  
   devyde, *inf.* 95/967  
   hide, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/257  
 slyde, *inf.*  
   abyde, *inf.* 64/93  
   gide, *inf.* 64/95  
 stride, *subj.*  
   asyde, *adv.* 33/1009  
 tide, *obl.*  
   abide, *inf.* 214/209  
 tyde, *obj.*  
   abyde, *inf.* 30/823  
   beside, 30/821  
 tyde, *obl.*  
   abyde, *inf.* 13/333  
   side, *obl.* 13/331  
   syde, *obl.* 19/491  
 wide, *a. pl.*  
   side, *nom.* 129/682  
   syde, *a. pl.* 129/684  
 wyde, *adv.*  
   devyde, *imper.* 65/130  
   side, *obl.* 65/131  
 wyde, *obl.*  
   side, *obj.* 48/106

wyde, *a. pl.*  
 hide, *imper.* 86/717  
 humyde, *a. sing.* 114/281  
 syde, *obl.* 96/979, 131/739  
 wyde, *adv.*  
 syde, *obl.* 129/679  
 syde, *a. pl.* 130/711  
 wride *a. sing.*  
 abyde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 51/208  
 devyde, *inf.* 51/205

-ides (*see -ise is and -is is*)

besides, *adv.*  
 \*avis is, 36/992  
 \*gise is, 36/989

-ie, -ye (*see -aye, -eye, -i*)

accompanye, *pp.*  
 plie, *inf.* 55/306  
 remedie, *nom.* 55/303  
 adorifie, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 110/181  
 applie, *imper.*  
 multiplie, *imper.* 178/196  
 Armenye, *a. sing.*  
 drie, *subj.* 211/122  
 aspie, *inf.*  
 mellifie, *inf.* 145/159  
 multiplie, *inf.* 145/157  
 butterflye, *obj.*  
 drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 155/174  
 hie, *a. pl.* 147/207  
 caprifie, *inf.*  
 hie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 161/89  
 remedie, *obl.* 125/590  
 signifie, *inf.* 125/593  
 theye, *obl.* 161/88  
 drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 butterflye, *obj.* 155/175  
 drie, *subj.*  
 drie, *a. sing.* 154/158  
 eye, *nom.* 154/159

crie, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 44/8  
 crucifie, *inf.*  
 flie, *obj.* 32/864  
 defie, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 102/1157  
 wrie, *imper.* 102/1159  
 denye, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. sing.* 115/303  
 multiplie, *inf.* 115/305  
 destrie, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 172/26  
 hie, *adv.* 172/23  
 drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 husbondrie, *nom.* 73/343  
 drie, *subj.*  
 \*enaye,<sup>1</sup> *subj.* 50/163  
 \*multipli,<sup>2</sup> *inf.* 138/936  
 drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 138/934  
 drie, *imper.* 50/165  
 drie, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. sing.* 10/253  
 drie, *inf.* 37/1007  
 eye, *obj.* 22/599  
 fructifie, *inf.* 116/352  
 husbondrie, *obj.* 70/273  
 intrie, *imper.* 116/355  
 luxurie, *nom.* 61/13  
 maladie, *nom.* 22/597  
 multiplie, *inf.* 82/588, 210/103,  
 216/254  
 drie, *imper.* 210/102, 216/257  
 ywrie, *pp.* 33/895  
 drie, *obl.*  
 twye, *adv.* 132/778  
 drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 frie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/249  
 husbondrie, *nom.* 15/384  
 drie, *inf.* 90/808  
 drie, *pp.* 213/171  
 drie, *imper.*  
 multiplie, *imper.* 32/875  
 skye, *obl.* 82/605  
 testacye, *a. sing.* 156/192

<sup>1</sup> See footnote to *enaye*, p. 258.

<sup>2</sup> A perfect ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.



drie, *subj.*

Armenye, *a. sing.* 211/120

hie, *adv.* 117/375

trie, *imper.* 117/376

drie, *inf.*

die, *inf.* 37/1008

edifie, *inf.* 14/364

multiplie, *inf.* 114/291

plie, *imper.* 205/522

strie, *inf.* 114/292, 158/10

strie, *obl.* 128/670

trie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 210/94

trie, *imper.* 265/523

wrie, *imper.* 13/347, 13/348

ywrie, *pp.* 128/667

drie, *a. sing.*

crie, *subj.* 154/156

denye, *inf.* 115/306

die, *inf.* 10/255

eye, *nom.* 154/159

eye, *obj.* 149/14

espie, *imper.* 179/5

espie, *inf.* 155/187

hie, *imper.* 10/242, 211/106

hie, *a. pl.* 10/243, 209/66

hie, *adv.* 12/314

husbondrie, *nom.* 76/439

lie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 53/264

multiplie, *inf.* 45/28, 78/479,

97/1008, 112/241, 115/305,

172/40, 180/25, 184/136,

188/31

ouerwrie, *inf.* 3/65

qualifie, *inf.* 48/127

sie, *inf.* 198/326

signifie, *inf.* 4/68

thrie, *adv.* 179/2

strie, *inf.* 172/39, 180/26

trie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 53/263

trie, *imper.* 198/327

undrie, *inf.* 189/70

wrie, *inf.* 76/438

drie, *a. pl.*

adorifie, *inf.* 110/182

crie, *inf.* 44/10

defie, *inf.* 102/1160

destrie, *inf.* 172/25

frie, *inf.* 58/413

fructifie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 108/116

fructifie, *inf.* 30/817

hie, *imper.* 208/32

hie, *a. pl.* 18/470, 30/816, 63/

55, 124/564

hie, *adv.* 172/23

husbondrie, *obl.* 5/119, 27/742

28/749

mortifie, *inf.* 57/384

multiplie, *subj.* 165/24

multiplie, *inf.* 115/322, 192/

154, 196/262

plie, *imper.* 218/306

strie, *inf.* 61/10

trie, *imper.* 54/276, 54/294,

108/117

trie, *inf.* 102/1165, 124/562

wrie, *imper.* 102/1159

wrie, *inf.* 6/143, 208/33

ywrie, *pp.* 218/305

drie, *adv.*

outrie, *imper.* 19/514

edifie, *inf.*

drie, *inf.* 14/363

espie, *imper.*

drie, *a. sing.* 179/4

thrie, *adv.* 179/2

espie, *inf.*

drie, *a. sing.* 155/184

plie, *pp.* 196/255

wrie, *inf.* 155/186

fecunditie, *nom.*

\*be, *inf.* 11/285

\*fertilitee, *obj.* 11/284

flie, *obj.*

crucifie, *inf.* 32/862

folie, *obj.*

husbondrie, *obl.* 1/2

magnifie, *inf.* 1/4

frie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/247

trie, *imper.* 216/250

frie, *inf.*

drie, *a. pl.* 58/412

- fructifie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 108/114  
 trie, *imper.* 108/117  
 fructifie, *inf.*  
 die, *inf.* 116/354  
 drie, *a. pl.* 30/814  
 hie, *a. pl.* 30/816  
 intrie, *imper.* 116/355  
 trie, *imper.* 190/83  
 wrie, *pp.* 207/8  
 hie, *a. sing.*  
 multiplie, *inf.* 209/60  
 plie, *imper.* 209/61  
 hie, *a. pl.*  
 butterflie, *obj.* 147/205  
 drie, *a. sing.* 10/240, 209/64  
 drie, *a. pl.* 18/472, 30/814, 63/  
 56, 124/565  
 fructifie, *inf.* 30/817  
 hie, *imper.* 10/242  
 putrifie, *inf.* 186/197  
 skye, *obl.* 176/156 [159  
 trie, *inf.* 124/562, 176/156, 176/  
 hie, *adv.*  
 destrie, *inf.* 172/25  
 drie, *a. sing.* 12/315  
 drie, *a. pl.* 172/26  
 drie, *subj.* 117/373  
 multiplie, *imper.* 186/208  
 trie, *imper.* 64/97, 117/376  
 trie, *inf.* 130/707  
 twye, *adv.* 186/205  
 hie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 caprifie, *inf.* 161/86  
 theye, *obl.* 161/88  
 hie, *imper.*  
 drie, *a. sing.* 10/240, 211/108  
 drie, *a. pl.* 208/30  
 hie, *a. pl.* 10/241  
 wrie, *inf.* 208/33  
 hie, *subj.*  
 scarifie, *inf.* 125/601  
 hie, *inf.*  
 \*dri,<sup>1</sup> *a. pl.* 99/1073  
 multiplie, *inf.* 99/1076  
 trie, *imper.* 216/263  
 wrie, *inf.* 216/261  
 husbondrie, *nom.*  
 die, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 73/342  
 drie, *a. sing.* 76/436  
 drie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 15/385  
 maladie, *obj.* 25/685  
 wrie, *inf.* 76/438  
 husbondrie, *obj.*  
 die, *inf.* 70/272  
 husbondrie, *obl.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 5/118, 27/741, 28/  
 748  
 folie, *obj.* 1/5  
 magnifie, *inf.* 1/4  
 instrie, *imper.*  
 remedie, *imper.* 180/39  
 trie, *inf.* 180/40  
 intrie, *imper.*  
 die, *inf.* 116/354  
 fructifie, *inf.* 116/352  
 lie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 drie, *a. sing.* 53/261  
 trie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 53/263  
 luxurie, *nom.*  
 die, *inf.* 61/14  
 magnifie, *inf.*  
 folie, *obj.* 1/5  
 husbondrie, *obl.* 1/2  
 maladie, *nom.*  
 die, *inf.* 22/600  
 eye, *obj.* 22/599  
 maladie, *obj.*  
 husbondrie, *nom.* 25/686  
 mellifie, *inf.*  
 asprie, *inf.* 145/160  
 multiplie, *inf.* 145/157  
 memorie, *obl.*  
 \*territory, *obl.* 120/468  
 mortifie, *inf.*  
 drie, *a. pl.* 57/385  
 multiplie, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 \*done,<sup>2</sup> *pp.* 162/126  
 remedie, *nom.* 35/954  
 twye, *adv.* 35/957

<sup>1</sup> A perfect ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.

<sup>2</sup> The text is hopelessly corrupt in this instance.

multiplie, *imper.*

applie, *imper.* 178/195

drie, *imper.* 32/874

hie, *adv.* 186/207

twye, *adv.* 186/205

multiplie, *subj.*

drie, *a. pl.* 165/22

signifie, *inf.* 65/109

trie, *inf.* 65/110

multiplie, *inf.*

aspie, *inf.* 145/160

denye, *inf.* 115/306

die, *inf.* 82/587, 210/100, 216/256

\*dri,<sup>1</sup> *a. pl.* 99/1073

drie, *a. sing.* 45/27, 78/477, 97/1007, 112/239, 115/303, 172/37, 180/23, 184/134, 188/29

drie, *a. pl.* 115/321, 192/153, 196/260

drie, *inf.* 114/289

drye, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 84/642

eye, *obl.* 80/541

eye, *obj.* 127/651

hie, *a. sing.* 209/58

hie, *inf.* 99/1075

mellife, *inf.* 145/159

plie, *imper.* 174/99, 209/61

purifie,<sup>2</sup> *inf.* 68/191

putrifie, *inf.* 182/83

strie, *inf.* 114/292, 172/39, 180/26

thrie, *adv.* 54/288

trie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 84/639

trie, *imper.* 68/193, 210/102, 216/257

trie, *inf.* 80/544

ouerwrie, *inf.*

drie, *a. sing.* 4/67

signifie, *inf.* 4/68

outtrie, *imper.*

drie, *adv.* 19/512

plie, *imper.*

acompanye, *pp.* 55/305

drie, *a. pl.* 218/303

drie, *inf.* 205/520

eye, *nom.* 104/16

espie, *inf.* 196/253

hie, *a. sing.* 209/58

multiplie, *inf.* 174/101, 209/60

remedie, *nom.* 55/303

trie, *imper.* 205/523

wrie, *imper.* 104/19

ywrie, *pp.* 218/305

purifie,<sup>2</sup> *inf.*

multiplie, *inf.* 68/194

trie, *imper.* 68/193

putrifie, *inf.*

hie, *a. pl.* 186/199

multiplie, *inf.* 182/84

qualifie, *inf.*

drie, *a. sing.* 48/129

remedie, *nom.*

acompanye, *pp.* 55/305

multiplie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 35/956

plie, *inf.* 55/306

twye, *adv.* 35/957

remedie, *obl.*

caprifie, *inf.* 125/592

signifie, *inf.* 125/593

remedie, *imper.*

instrie, *imper.* 180/37

trie, *inf.* 180/40

scarifie, *inf.*

hie, *subj.* 125/602

sie, *inf.*

drie, *a. sing.* 198/324

trie, *imper.* 198/327

signifie, *inf.*

caprifie, *inf.* 125/592

drie, *a. sing.* 4/67

multiplie, *subj.* 65/107

ouerwrie, *inf.* 3/65

remedie, *obl.* 125/590

trie, *inf.* 65/110

<sup>1</sup> A perfect ryme spoilt by the carelessness of the scribe.

<sup>2</sup> Read *putrifie*.

- skye, *obl.*  
   drie, *imper.* 82/603  
   hie, *a. pl.* 176/158  
   trie, *inf.* 176/159  
 strie, *obl.*  
   drie, *inf.* 128/669  
   ywrie, *pp.* 128/667  
 strie, *inf.*  
   drie, *a. sing.* 172/37, 180/23  
   drie, *a. pl.* 61/8  
   drie, *inf.* 114/289, 158/8  
   multiplie, *inf.* 114/291, 172/40,  
     180/25  
 testacye, *a. sing.*  
   drie, *imper.* 156/190  
 thrie, *adv.*  
   drie, *a. sing.* 179/4  
   esprie, *imper.* 179/5  
   multiplie, *inf.* 54/290  
 trie, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   deye, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 84/642  
   die, *subj.* 138/937  
   drie, *inf.* 210/92  
   drie, *a. sing.* 53/261  
   lie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 53/264  
   multiplie, *inf.* 84/641, 138/  
     936  
 trie, *imper.*  
   die, *subj.* 50/166  
   die, *inf.* 210/100, 216/256  
   drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 216/247  
   drie, *subj.* 117/373  
   drie, *a. sing.* 198/324  
   drie, *a. pl.* 54/274, 54/293, 108/  
     114  
   drie, *inf.* 205/520  
   \*enaye,<sup>1</sup> *subj.* 50/163  
   frie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 210/249  
   fructifie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 108/  
     116  
   fructifie, *inf.* 190/84  
   hie, *adv.* 64/98, 117/375  
   hie, *inf.* 216/264  
   multiplie, *inf.* 68/194, 210/103,  
     216/254  
   plie, *imper.* 205/522  
   purifie,<sup>2</sup> *inf.* 68/191  
   sie, *inf.* 198/326  
   wrie, *inf.* 216/261  
 trie, *inf.*  
   drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 90/806  
   drie, *a. pl.* 102/1163, 124/  
     565  
   eye, *obl.* 80/541  
   hie, *a. pl.* 124/564, 176/158  
   hie, *adv.* 130/708  
   instrie, *imper.* 180/37  
   multiplie, *subj.* 65/107  
   multiplie, *inf.* 80/543  
   remedie, *imper.* 180/39  
   signifie, *inf.* 65/109  
   skye, *obl.* 176/156  
 trie, *pp.*  
   drie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 213/169  
 twye, *adv.*  
   drie, *obl.* 132/777  
   hie, *adv.* 186/207  
   multiplie, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 35/  
     956  
   multiplie, *imper.* 186/208  
   remedie, *nom.* 35/954  
 undrie, *inf.*  
   drie, *a. sing.* 189/69  
 wrie, *imper.*  
   defie, *inf.* 102/1160  
   drie, *a. pl.* 102/1157  
   drie, *inf.* 13/345  
   eye, *nom.* 104/16  
   plie, *imper.* 104/18  
   wrie, *imper.* 13/348  
 wrie, *inf.*  
   drie, *a. sing.* 76/436, 155/184  
   drie, *a. pl.* 6/141, 208/30  
   esprie, *inf.* 155/187  
   hie, *imper.* 208/32  
   hie, *inf.* 216/264  
   husbondrie, *nom.* 76/439  
   trie, *imper.* 216/263  
 wrie, *pp.*  
   fructifie, *inf.* 207/10

<sup>1</sup> See note to *enaye*, p. 258.<sup>2</sup> Read *putrifie*.

ywrie, *pp.*

die, *inf.* 33/896, 128/669

drie, *a. pl.* 218/303

plie, *imper.* 218/316

strie, *obl.* 128/670

-ied

multiplied, *pp.*

wried, *pp.* 163/146

wried, *pp.*

multiplied, *pp.* 163/147

-yer (*see -ire*)

myer, *obl.*

\*desire, *imper.* 2/38

-ifte

lifte, *a. sing.*

swifte, *a. pl.* 133/795

swifte, *a. pl.*

lifte, *a. sing.* 133/793

-ige

caprifige, *adj.*

fige, *obj.* 125/591

fige, *obj.*

caprifige, *adj.* 125/589

-igges (*see -igg is*)

figges, *n. pl.*

bigg is, 41/1130

-igg is (*see -igges*)

bigg is

figges, *n. pl.* 41/1128

-igh, -ygh

nygh, *a. pl.*

sligh, *a. sing.* 146/169

nygh, *adv.*

sigh, *subj.* 28/766

slygh, *a. sing.* 145/162

sigh, *subj.*

nygh, *adv.* 28/764

sligh, *a. sing.*

nygh, *a. pl.* 146/168

slygh, *a. sing.*

nygh, *adv.* 145/161

-yghtes (*see -ight is*)

anyghtes, *adv.*

dight is, 117/381

-ight is (*see -yghtes*)

dight is

anyghtes, *obl.* 117/379

-ight, -yght (*see -eight*)

bright, *a. sing.*

dight, *imper.* 16/416

dight, *imper.*

bright, *a. sing.* 16/414

light, *a. sing.* 40/1084, 181/64

light, *obj.* 19/506

sight, *obj.* 19/508

dight, *inf.*

myght, *obl.* 28/754

sight, *obl.* 28/751

dight, *pp.*

\*weight, *obj.* 41/1121

downeright, *adv.*

myght, *obl.* 36/971

upright, *adv.* 36/968

light, *nom.*

myght, *obl.* 175/107

ydight, *pp.* 175/110

light, *obj.*

dight, *imper.* 19/509

sight, *obj.* 19/508

light, *a. sing.*

dight, *imper.* 40/1085

dight, *pp.* 181/66

light, *a. sing.* 13/328, 13/329

nyght, *obj.* 2/30

sight, *nom.* 2/32

light, *a. pl.*

right, *adv.* 45/49

myght, *obl.*

dight, *inf.* 28/753

downeright, *adv.* 36/970

sight, *obl.* 28/751

upright, *adv.* 36/968

myght, *obl.*  
 lyght, *nom.* 175/109  
 ydight, *pp.* 175/110  
 nyght, *obj.*  
 light, *a. sing.* 2/33  
 sight, *nom.* 2/32  
 right, *adv.*  
 light, *a. pl.* 45/48  
 ydight, *pp.* 62/29  
 sight, *nom.*  
 light, *a. sing.* 2/33  
 nyght, *obj.* 2/30  
 sight, *obl.*  
 dight, *inf.* 28/753  
 sight, *obj.*  
 dight, *imper.* 19/509  
 light, *obj.* 19/506  
 myght, *obl.* 28/754  
 upright, *adv.*  
 downeright, *adv.* 36/970  
 myght, *obl.* 36/971  
 ydight, *pp.*  
 light, *nom.* 175/109  
 nyght, *obl.* 175/107  
 right, *adv.* 62/31

-igne (see -ynge, -yne)

assigne, *imper.*  
 medicyne, *inf.* 203/450  
 reclyne, *inf.* 203/452  
 assigne, *inf.*  
 \*benynynge,<sup>1</sup> *a. sing.* 81/556  
 benygne, *adj.*  
 declyne, *inf.* 171/18  
 vyne, *obj.* 171/16  
 digne, *a. sing.*  
 canterlyne, *a. sing.* 187/6  
 carbunculyne, *a. sing.* 216/  
 272  
 signe, *nom.*  
 vyne, *obl.* 174/90  
 signe, *obj.*  
 vyne, *obl.* 188/22

-ik, -yk (see -icke)

brik, *nom.*  
 \*thicke, *a. sing.* 156/203  
 epatik, *a. pl.*  
 Indik, *a. sing.* 201/411  
 mastic, *obl.* 201/410  
 quyk, *a. pl.*  
 splenetyk, *a. sing.* 168/125  
 splenetyk, *a. sing.*  
 quyk, *a. pl.* 168/126

-ike, -yke (see -eke)

Celtike, *a. sing.*  
 epatike, *a. pl.* 200/361  
 smyke, *obl.* 200/362  
 epatike, *a. pl.*  
 Celtike, *a. sing.* 200/359  
 smyke, *obl.* 200/362  
 galatike, *a. sing.*  
 like, *a. sing.* 45/32  
 like, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 45/33  
 Indik, *a. sing.*  
 epatik, *a. pl.* 201/408  
 mastic, *obl.* 201/410  
 like, *a. sing.*  
 galatike, *a. sing.* 45/30  
 like, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 45/33  
 rubrike, *obl.* 156/197  
 like, *a. pl.*  
 prike, *inf.* 135/858  
 like, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 galatike, *a. sing.* 45/30  
 like, *a. sing.* 45/32  
 rubrike, *a. sing.* 217/274  
 like, *subj.*  
 prike, *imper.* 182/87  
 pike, *inf.*  
 rubrike, *obl.* 122/512  
 seke, *a. sing.* 137/905  
 thamarike, *obl.* 218/316  
 prike, *imper.*  
 like, *subj.* 182/85  
 prike, *inf.*  
 like, *a. pl.* 135/856

<sup>1</sup> A ryme spoilt by the scribe; read *benygne*.



rubrike, *a. sing.*  
   like, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 217/276  
   strike, *n. pl.* 181/63  
 rubrike, *obl.*  
   like, *a. sing.* 156/199  
   pike, *inf.* 122/514  
   ulpike, *obj.* 110/166  
   unlike, *a. sing.* 110/165  
 slyke, *a. pl.*  
   strike, *obl.* 26/687  
 smyke, *obl.*  
   Celtike, *a. sing.* 200/359  
   epatike, *a. pl.* 200/361  
 strike, *n. pl.*  
   rubrike, *a. sing.* 181/62  
 strike, *obl.*  
   slyke, *a. pl.* 26/689  
 thamarike, *obl.*  
   pike, *inf.* 216/318  
 ulpike, *obj.*  
   rubrike, *obl.* 110/163  
   unlike, *a. sing.* 110/165  
 unlike, *a. sing.*  
   rubrike, *obl.* 110/163  
   ulpike, *obj.* 110/166  
                     -ild  
 fild, *pp.*  
   spild, *pp.* 118/402  
 spild, *pp.*  
   fild, *pp.* 118/400  
                     -ilde, -ylde  
 cbilde, *obl.*  
   mylde, *obj.* 145/152  
   mylde, *a. sing.* 145/153  
   mylde, *a. pl.* 194/208  
   wilde, *a. pl.* 4/69, 58/398, 194/  
     205  
 mylde, *nom.*  
   wilde, *a. pl.* 183/129  
 mylde, *obj.*  
   childe, *obl.* 145/150  
   mylde, *a. sing.* 145/153  
 mylde, *a. sing.*  
   childe, *obl.* 145/150  
   mylde, *obj.* 145/152

mylde, *a. pl.*  
   childe, *obl.* 194/207  
   wilde, *a. pl.* 194/205  
 wilde, *a. sing.*  
   ytilde, *pp.* 110/164  
 wilde, *a. pl.*  
   childe, *obl.* 4/70, 58/399, 194/  
     207  
   mylde, *nom.* 183/127  
   mylde, *a. pl.* 194/208  
 ytilde, *pp.*  
   wilde, *a. sing.* 110/162  
                     -ildren (*see* eldron)  
 children, *n. pl.*  
   eldron, *n. pl.* 26/714  
                     -ildron (*see* eldron)  
 children, *n. pl.*  
   eldron, *n. pl.* 6/125  
                     -ile, -yle (*see* -ille)  
 Aprile, *obl.*  
   while, *nom.* 164/3  
 begile, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   otherwhile, *adv.* 175/121  
   while, *obl.* 175/124  
 dyle, *obj.*  
   skyle, *nom.* 110/168  
 exile, *a. sing.*  
   smyle, *inf.* 201/390  
   while, *obl.* 188/35, 201/389  
 overwhile, *adv.*  
   begile, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 175/123  
   while, *obl.* 175/124  
 skyle, *nom.*  
   dyle, *obj.* 110/167  
 smyle, *inf.*  
   exile, *a. sing.* 201/387  
   while, *obl.* 201/389  
 squyle, *obl.*  
   \*ille, *adv.* 100/1113  
 stile, *obj.*  
   Virgile, *n. pr.* 88/769  
 vile, *a. pl.*  
   while, *obl.* 176/155

Virgile *n. pr.*stile, *obj.* 88/770while, *nom.*Aprile, *obl.* 164/1while, *obl.*begile, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 175/123exile, *a. sing.* 188/34, 201/387otherwhile, *adv.* 175/121smyle, *inf.* 201/390vile, *a. pl.* 176/157**-ille, -ylle (see -yle)**fille, *inf.*ille, *a. sing.* 117/364ille, *a. sing.*fille, *inf.* 117/363ille, *a. pl.*kille, *inf.* 32/858squylle, *obj.* 32/856ille, *adv.*\*squyle, *obl.* 100/1112stille, *adv.* 114/288kille, *inf.*ille, *a. pl.* 32/859squylle, *obj.* 32/856spille, *pp.*wille, *nom.* 170/165squylle, *obl.*wille, *obl.* 101/1134squylle, *obj.*ille, *a. pl.* 32/859kille, *inf.* 32/858stille, *adv.*ille, *adv.* 114/290wille, *nom.*spille, *pp.* 170/164wille, *obl.*squylle, *obl.* 101/1133**-ille is (see -illys)**

wille is

hillys, *n. pl.* 213/181**-illys (see -ille is)**hillys, *n. pl.*

wille is, 213/182

**-yme (see -y me)**betyme, *adv.*tyme, *obj.* 30/820lyme, *obl.*tyme, *obl.* 15/406pryme, *nom.*tyme, *obj.* 157/227pryme, *obl.*

by me, 163/143

tyme, *obl.*lyme, *obl.* 15/405tyme, *obj.*betyme, *adv.* 30/822pryme, *nom.* 157/225**-y me (see -yme)**

by me

pryme, *obl.* 163/141**-in, -yn (see -yne, -ynne)**comyn, *obl.*lupyn, *obl.* 23/609fyn, *a. sing.*therein, *adv.* 59/417\*wyne, *obl.* 59/415immuyn, *a. sing.*Juyn, *obl.* 157/239Juyn, *obl.*immuyn, *a. sing.* 157/237lupyn, *obl.*comyn, *obl.* 23/608therein, *adv.*fyn, *a. sing.* 59/418\*synne, *nom.* 156/193\*thynne, *a. sing.* 156/194\*wyne, *obl.* 59/415**-inde, -ynde**behinde, *adv.*bynde, *inf.* 153/114kynde, *a. sing.* 132/760kynde, *obl.* 141/33, 153/116rynde, *obj.* 118/386rynde, *obl.* 141/31, 208/43

behynde, *adv.*

kynde, *obl.* 159/44

lynde, *nom.* 37/1021

upwynde, *inf.* 159/47

blynde, *a. pl.*

kynde, *obl.* 150/34

bynde, *imper.*

fynde, *inf.* 8/206

rynde, *obj.* 161/100

wynde, *imper.* 161/103

bynde, *inf.*

behinde, *adv.* 153/117

fynde, *subj.* 12/321, 212/152

kynde, *nom.* 74/361

kynde, *obl.* 153/116, 212/151

rinde, *obl.* 74/384

rynde, *obj.* 74/359

rynde, *obl.* 212/141

fynde, *v. 1 s. pres.*

kynde, *a. sing.* 148/221

fynde, *v. 2 pres. sing.*

rynde, *obj.* 70/260

fynde, *v. 1 pl. pres.*

kynde, *obl.* 161/95

rynde, *obl.* 161/93

fynde, *subj.*

bynde, *inf.* 12/322, 212/149

kynde, *obl.* 212/151

kynde, *a. sing.* 185/180

rynde, *obl.* 185/177

fynde, *inf.*

bynde, *imper.* 8/204

kynde, *obl.* 15/395, 96/989

kynde, *obj.* 37/1012

rynde, *nom.* 96/992

rynde, *obl.* 109/154, 113/263

wynde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 113/261

wynde, *obl.* 37/1010

kynde, *a. sing.*

behinde, *adv.* 132/758

finde, *subj.* 185/179

fynde, *v. 1 s. pres.* 148/219

mynde, *obl.* 145/138

rynde, *obl.* 120/462, 145/136,

185/177

wynde, *imper.* 116/338

wynde, *inf.* 116/341

kynde, *adv.*

behynde, *adv.* 159/46

upwynde, *inf.* 159/47

kynde, *nom.*

bynde, *inf.* 74/362

rynde, *obl.* 38/1047, 95/953,

104/13

rynde, *obj.* 74/359

unkynde, *a. sing.* 38/1048

kynde, *obj.*

finde, *inf.* 37/1013

mynde, *obj.* 66/140

mynde, *obl.* 65/124

wynde, *obl.* 37/1010, 65/121

kynde, *obl.*

behinde, *adv.* 141/34, 153/117,

blynde, *a. pl.* 150/35

bynde, *inf.* 153/114, 212/149

fynde, *v. 1 pl. pres.* 161/96

fynde, *subj.* 212/154

fynde, *inf.* 15/393

lynde, *nom.* 13/336

mynde, *obl.* 195/231

mynde, *obj.* 163/133, 193/163

rynde, *obl.* 55/328, 73/349, 97/

1023, 141/31, 161/93

unbinde, *inf.* 71/293

wynde, *imper.* 193/166

lynde, *nom.*

behynde, *adv.* 37/1022

kynde, *obl.* 13/335

mankynde, *nom.*

rynde, *obl.* 193/188

mynde, *obj.*

kynde, *obj.* 66/147, 163/132,

193/165

wynde, *imper.* 193/166

mynde, *obl.*

kynde, *obl.* 195/230

kynde, *obj.* 65/123

kynde, *a. sing.* 145/139

rynde, *obl.* 145/136

wynde, *obl.* 65/121

rynde, *nom.*

finde, *inf.* 96/991

kynde, *obl.* 96/989

- rynde, *obj.*  
   behinde, *adv.* 118/388  
   bynde, *imper.* 161/102  
   bynde, *inf.* 74/362  
   fynde, *v.* 2 *sing. pres.* 70/262  
   kynde, *nom.* 74/361  
   wynde, *imper.* 161/103
- rinde, *obl.*  
   bynde, *inf.* 74/385
- rynde, *obl.*  
   behinde, *adv.* 141/34, 208/45  
   bynde, *inf.* 212/143  
   finde, *subj.* 185/179  
   finde, *inf.* 96/991, 109/153  
   fynde, *v.* 1 *pl. pres.* 161/96  
   fynde, *inf.* 113/264  
   kynde, *a. sing.* 120/461, 145/  
     139, 185/180  
   kynde, *nom.* 38/1045, 95/955,  
     104/14  
   kynde, *obl.* 55/329, 73/350, 97/  
     1025, 141/33, 161/95  
   mankynde, *nom.* 193/189  
   mynde, *obl.* 145/138  
   rynde, *nom.* 96/992  
   unkynde, *a. sing.* 38/1048  
   wynde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 113/261
- unbinde, *inf.*  
   kynde, *obl.* 71/294
- unkynde, *a. sing.*  
   kynde, *nom.* 38/1045  
   rynde, *obl.* 38/1047
- upwynde, *inf.*  
   behinde, *adv.* 159/46  
   kynde, *obl.* 159/44
- wynde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   fynde, *inf.* 113/264  
   rynde, *obl.* 113/263
- wynde, *imper.*  
   bynde, *imper.* 101/102  
   kynde, *a. sing.* 116/340  
   kynde, *obl.* 193/165  
   mynde, *obj.* 193/163  
   rynde, *obj.* 161/100  
   wynde, *inf.* 116/341
- wynde, *inf.*  
   kynde, *a. sing.* 116/340  
   wynde, *imper.* 116/338
- wynde, *obl.*  
   finde, *inf.* 37/1013  
   kynde, *obj.* 37/1012, 65/123  
   mynde, *obl.* 65/124
- in, -yne (*see* -igne, -ygne)
- argentine, *a. sing.*  
   entyne, *inf.* 154/104
- bryne, *obj.*  
   vyne, *obj.* 107/99
- canteryne, *a. sing.*  
   digne, *a. sing.* 187/7  
   lupyne, *nom.* 181/59
- carbunculyne, *a. sing.*  
   digne, *a. sing.* 216/273
- columbyne, *nom.*  
   myne, *nom.* 14/374
- declyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   lupyne, *obl.* 122/508  
   uryne, *nom.* 122/506  
   vyne, *obj.* 72/302
- declyne, *imper.*  
   lyne, *obl.* 71/296  
   vyne, *obl.* 71/299
- declyne, *subj.*  
   enclyne, *imper.* 28/765  
   enclyne, *subj.* 12/296  
   enmyne, *imper.* 28/768  
   shyne, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 12/299
- declyne, *inf.*  
   benygne, *a. sing.* 171/19  
   medicyne, *obj.* 102/1169  
   nyne (ix), *a. pl.* 157/226  
   shyne, *inf.* 157/229  
   vyne, *obl.* 70/251  
   vyne, *obj.* 171/16
- declyne, *obl.*  
   duracyne, *a. sing.* 211/121  
   vespertyne, *a. sing.* 211/123
- discyplyne, *nom.*  
   nyne (ix<sup>ne</sup>), *a. pl.* 161/87
- duracyne, *a. sing.*  
   declyne, *obl.* 211/124  
   vespertyne, *a. sing.* 211/123

- dwyne, *inf.*  
   nyne (IX<sup>ne</sup>), *a. pl.* 75/411  
   vyne, *obj.* 75/408  
 enclyne, *imper.*  
   declyne, *subj.* 28/767  
   enmyne, *imper.* 28/768  
 enclyne, *subj.*  
   declyne, *subj.* 12/298  
   shyne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 12/299  
 enmyne, *imper.*  
   declyne, *subj.* 28/767  
   enclyne, *imper.* 28/765  
 entyne, *inf.*  
   argentine, *a. sing.* 152/105  
 fyne, *inf.*  
   maryne, *a. sing.* 197/291  
   wyne, *nom.* 197/286  
   wyne, *obl.* 197/289, 200/363  
 fyne, *a. sing.*  
   squillyne, *a. sing.* 169/134  
 fyne, *a. pl.*  
   lauryne, *a. sing.* 209/70  
 lauryne, *a. sing.*  
   fyne, *a. pl.* 209/69  
   mastycyne, *obl.* 109/144  
   reclayne, *subj.* 109/142  
 lyne *obl.*  
   declyne, *imper.* 71/298  
   tricylne, *obj.* 15/391  
   vyne, *obl.* 71/299  
 lyne, *obj.*  
   vyne, *obl.* 66/140  
 lupyne, *nom.*  
   canteryne, *a. sing.* 181/57  
 lupyne, *obl.*  
   declyne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 122/  
   509  
   \*fyne is,<sup>1</sup> 153/131  
   uryne, *nom.* 122/506  
   \*wynys,<sup>1</sup> *n. pl.* 153/130  
 maryne, *a. sing.*  
   fyne, *inf.* 197/292  
   wyne, *obl.* 197/289
- mastycyne, *obl.*  
   lauryne, *a. sing.* 109/145  
   reclayne, *subj.* 109/142  
 medicyne, *obl.*  
   pyne, *obl.* 137/911  
 medicyne, *obj.*  
   declyne, *inf.* 102/1168  
 medicyne, *inf.*  
   assigne, *imper.* 203/453  
   reclayne, *inf.* 203/452  
 myne, *nom.*  
   columbyne, *nom.* 14/372  
 myne, *inf.*  
   reclayne, *inf.* 73/333  
   vyne, *nom.* 73/331  
 nine (IX), *a. pl.*  
   declyne, *inf.* 157/228  
   discyplne, *nom.* 161/85  
   divyne, *inf.* 75/410  
   pastyne,<sup>2</sup> *inf.* 48/113  
   shyne, *inf.* 157/229  
   vyne, *obj.* 75/408  
 pastyne, *inf.*  
   nyne,<sup>2</sup> *a. pl.* 48/115  
 pyne, *obl.*  
   medicyne, *obl.* 137/910  
 recline, *imper.*  
   tarentyne, *a. pl.* 57/372  
 reclayne, *subj.*  
   lauryne, *a. sing.* 109/145  
   mastycyne, *obl.* 109/144  
 reclayne, *inf.*  
   assigne, *imper.* 203/453  
   medicyne, *inf.* 203/450  
   myne, *inf.* 73/334  
   shyne, *inf.* 89/797  
   vyne, *nom.* 73/331  
   wyne, *obj.* 125/608  
 shyne, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   declyne, *subj.* 12/298  
   enclyne, *subj.* 12/296

<sup>1</sup> In this instance there can be no doubt that the correct reading is *lupynes*.

<sup>2</sup> MS. *nyde*.

shyne, *inf.*  
 declyne, *inf.* 185/228  
 nyne (ix), *a. pl.* 157/226  
 reclyne, *inf.* 89/798  
 squillyne, *a. sing.*  
 fyne, *a. sing.* 169/136  
 tarentyne, *a. pl.*  
 recline, *imper.* 57/374  
 thyne, *pron.*  
 wyne, *obj.* 7/174  
 tricylne, *obj.*  
 lyne, *obl.* 15/392  
 uryne, *nom.*  
 declyne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 122/509  
 lupyne, *obl.* 122/508  
 uryne, *obj.*  
 vyne, *nom.* 219/337  
 vespertyne, *a. sing.*  
 declyne, *obl.* 211/124  
 duracyne, *a. sing.* 211/121  
 vyne, *nom.*  
 uryne, *obj.* 219/339  
 vyne, *obl.*  
 \*benynge,<sup>1</sup> *a. sing.* 111/206  
 declyne, *imper.* 71/298  
 lyne, *obl.* 71/296  
 lyne, *obj.* 66/139  
 signe, *nom.* 174/91  
 signe, *obj.* 188/24  
 vyne, *obj.*  
 benygne, *a. sing.* 171/19  
 bryne, *obj.* 107/101  
 declyne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 72/304  
 declyne, *inf.* 70/252, 171/18  
 divyne, *inf.* 75/410  
 nyne (ix<sup>ne</sup>), *a. pl.* 75/411  
 wyne, *nom.*  
 fyne, *inf.* 197/287  
 myne, *imper.* 73/334  
 reclyne, *inf.* 73/333  
 wyne, *obl.*  
 \*enclyne is,<sup>2</sup> 199/341  
 \*fyn, *a. sing.* 59/418

fyne, *inf.* 197/292, 200/364  
 maryne, *a. sing.* 197/291  
 reclyne, *inf.* 125/609  
 \*therein, *adv.* 59/417  
 thyne, *pron.* 7/175  
 \*wyne is,<sup>2</sup> 199/340  
 ynne, *adv.* 127/657  
 -ynes (*see -ine is, -yne is, -ynne is*)  
 vynes, *n. pl.*  
 \*pynne is, 37/1006  
 vine is, 67/171  
 wynes, *n. pl.* 37/1005, 63/77,  
 71/286, 171/14  
 wyne is, 7/171, 48/126  
 wynes, *n. pl.*  
 \*pynne is, 37/1006  
 vynes, *n. pl.* 37/1003, 63/76,  
 71/287, 171/13  
 -ine is, -yne is (*see -ynes, -ynys*)  
 enclyne is  
 wyne,<sup>2</sup> *obl.* 199/338  
 wyne is, 199/340  
 fyne is  
 lupyne,<sup>3</sup> *obl.* 153/128  
 wynys, *n. pl.* 153/130  
 vine is  
 vynes, *n. pl.* 67/169  
 vyne is  
 vynys, *n. pl.* 69/225  
 wyne is  
 enclyne is, 199/341  
 vynes, *n. pl.* 7/169, 48/125  
 wyne,<sup>2</sup> *obl.* 199/338  
 -ynys (*see -yne is*)  
 vynys, *n. pl.*  
 vyne is, 69/227  
 wynys, *n. pl.*  
 fyne is, 153/131  
 lupyne,<sup>3</sup> *obl.* 153/128

<sup>1</sup> Read *benygne*, which will give a perfectly good ryme.

<sup>2</sup> Apparently we should read *wynes* in l. 338.

<sup>3</sup> In this instance there can be no doubt that the correct reading is *lupynes*.



- ing, yng (*see* -inge, -ynge)
- anything, *obl.*  
 slevyng, *obj.* 67/163  
 \*springe, *inf.* 67/166
- boring, *obl.*  
 \*bringe, *inf.* 97/1014
- bring, *inf.*  
 everything, *obl.* 1/11  
 housyng, *obl.* 1/9
- chillyng, *a. sing.*  
 \*graffinge, *obj.* 98/1047  
 \*sprynge, *imper.* 98/1048
- clevyng, *obl.*  
 germynyng, *obl.* 115/316
- connyng, *obj.*  
 gynnyng, *nom.* 178/212  
 spryng, *inf.* 178/215  
 \*uphinge, *inf.* 178/217
- coveryng, *obl.*  
 \*bringe, *inf.* 14/369  
 worching, *obl.* 14/366
- defervyng, *obl.*  
 \*boylinge, *nom.* 204/488  
 \*brynge, *inf.* 204/487
- dounging, *obl.*  
 \*brynge, *inf.* 114/301
- everything, *obl.*  
 bring, *inf.* 1/12  
 housyng, *obl.* 1/9
- germynyng, *obl.*  
 \*brynge, *inf.* 128/674  
 clevyng, *obl.* 115/318  
 spryng, *inf.* 128/677
- gynnyng, *nom.*  
 connyng, *obj.* 178/214  
 spryng, *inf.* 178/215  
 \*uphinge, *inf.* 178/217
- growing, *a. pl.*  
 kytting, *obl.* 69/239
- helping, *obl.*  
 \*brynge, *inf.* 21/548  
 \*flynge, *inf.* 21/550
- housyng, *obl.*  
 bring, *inf.* 1/12  
 everything, *obl.* 1/11
- husbondyng, *obl.*  
 \*kepynge, *obl.* 18/468
- kytting, *obl.*  
 growing, *a. pl.* 69/241
- likyng, *obl.*  
 \*flynge, *subj.* 132/762  
 spryng, *inf.* 132/761
- meddisyng, *pres. p.*  
 spryngyng, *obl.* 29/798
- pastynyng, *obj.*  
 \*sowyng, *nom.* 151/75  
 \*sprynge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/74
- pastynyng, *obl.*  
 \*dichinge, *obl.* 46/73
- ryvullyng, *obl.*  
 \*sprynge, *inf.* 196/259
- slevyng, *obj.*  
 anything, *obl.* 67/165  
 \*springe, *inf.* 67/166
- slevyng, *obl.*  
 cherisshinge, *nom.* 185/165  
 \*sprynge, *inf.* 185/166
- spryng, *inf.*  
 \*brynge, *inf.* 128/674  
 connyng, *obj.* 178/214  
 \*flynge, *subj.* 132/762  
 germynyng, *obl.* 128/676  
 gynnyng, *nom.* 178/212  
 likyng, *obl.* 132/759  
 \*uphinge, *inf.* 178/217
- spryngyng, *obl.*  
 meddisyng, *pr. p.* 29/797
- tyllyng, *obl.*  
 \*brynge, *inf.* 29/774  
 \*pastynyng, *obl.* 29/772
- tuppyng, *nom.*  
 \*sprynge, *subj.* 145/155
- vessellyng, *obl.*  
 \*bespringe, *inf.* 191/109  
 \*wrynge, *obj.* 191/107
- worching, *obl.*  
 \*bringe, *inf.* 14/369  
 coveryng, *obl.* 14/368

**-inge, -ynge** (*see* **-igne, -ing, -yng**)

benynge,<sup>1</sup> *a. sing.*  
 vyne, *obl.* 111/204  
 benynynge,<sup>1</sup> *a. sing.*  
 \*assigne, *inf.* 81/554  
 besprynge, *inf.*  
 \*vessellyng, *obl.* 191/110  
 wrynge, *obj.* 191/107  
 blossomyng, *obl.*  
 delvyng, *obl.* 87/738  
 boylinge, *nom.*  
 bryng, *inf.* 204/487  
 defervyng, *obl.* 204/485  
 boilyng, *obj.*  
 vesselling, *obl.* 118/410  
 wryng, *obl.* 118/408  
 bredyng, *obl.*  
 bryng, *inf.* 24/632  
 legging, *obl.* 24/634  
 bryng, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 [s]pryng, *v. 3 s. pres.* 136/896  
 bringe, *imper.*  
 sittyng, *a. sing.* 22/586  
 springe, *obl.* 22/585  
 bringe, *inf.*  
 \*boring, *obl.* 97/1015  
 \*coveryng, *obl.* 14/368  
 springe, *inf.* 79/504  
 \*worching, *obl.* 14/366  
 bryng, *inf.*  
 boylinge, *nom.* 204/488  
 bredyng, *obl.* 24/635  
 \*defervyng, *obl.* 204/485  
 \*dounyng, *obl.* 114/300  
 flyng, *inf.* 21/550, 202/425  
 \*germynyng, *obl.* 128/676  
 graffyng, *nom.* 117/369  
 growyng, *obl.* 202/424  
 \*helpyng, *obl.* 21/551  
 legging, *obl.* 24/634  
 pastynyng, *obl.* 29/772  
 servyng, *nom.* 113/251  
 \*spryng, *inf.* 128/677  
 springe, *imper.* 99/1071

spryng, *subj.* 117/366  
 spryng, *inf.* 103/1175, 112/  
 225, 124/559  
 \*tyllyng, *obl.* 29/775  
 burgynyng, *obl.*  
 ching, *inf.* 74/373  
 springyng, *obl.* 74/375  
 cherisshyng, *nom.*  
 \*slevyng, *obl.* 185/163  
 spryng, *inf.* 185/166  
 ching, *inf.*  
 burgynyng, *obl.* 74/376  
 springyng, *obl.* 74/375  
 delvyng, *obl.*  
 blossomyng, *obl.* 87/736  
 dichyng, *obl.*  
 \*pastynyng, *obl.* 46/71  
 duryng, *obj.*  
 spryng, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 210/97  
 flyng, *v. 2 s. pres.*  
 spryng, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/55  
 flyng, *subj.*  
 \*likyng, *obl.* 132/759  
 \*spryng, *inf.* 132/761  
 flyng, *inf.*  
 bryng, *inf.* 21/548, 202/422  
 growyng, *obl.* 202/424  
 \*helpyng, *obl.* 21/551  
 germynyng, *obl.*  
 thyng, *obl.* 126/630  
 graffyng, *nom.*  
 bryng, *inf.* 117/368  
 spryng, *subj.* 117/366  
 graffyng, *obj.*  
 \*chillyng, *a. sing.* 98/1045  
 spryng, *imper.* 98/1048  
 growyng, *obl.*  
 bryng, *inf.* 202/422  
 flyng, *inf.* 202/425  
 husbondyng, *nom.*  
 thyng, *obl.* 6/146  
 kepyng, *obl.*  
 \*husbondyng, *obl.* 18/469

<sup>1</sup> Read *benygne*, which will give perfectly good rymes.

- legginge, *obl.*  
   bredynge, *obl.* 24/635  
   brynge, *inf.* 24/632  
 mynge, *imper.*  
   wattrynge, *imp. p.* 119/420  
 pastynynge, *obl.*  
   brynge, *inf.* 29/774  
   \*tyllyng, *obl.* 29/175  
 planntyng, *obl.*  
   tarynge, *obj.* 112/233  
   wedynge, *obl.* 112/235  
 servynge, *nom.*  
   brynge, *inf.* 113/252  
 syng, *inf.*  
   watermyng, *pp.* 94/939  
 sittynge, *a. sing.*  
   bringe, *imper.* 22/583  
   springe, *obl.* 22/585  
 smellinge, *a. sing.*  
   wanyng, *obl.* 89/780  
 sowynge, *nom.*  
   \*pastynng, *obj.* 151/72  
   sprynge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/74  
 springe, *obl.*  
   bringe, *imper.* 22/583  
   sittynge, *a. sing.* 22/586  
 [s]prynge, *3 s. pres.*  
   brynge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 136/897  
 springe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   springe, *inf.* 194/210  
   tothinge, *obl.* 25/665  
 sprynge, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   duryng, *obj.* 210/98  
   flyng, *v. 2 s. pres.* 151/56  
   \*pastynng, *obj.* 151/72  
   sowynge, *nom.* 151/75  
 springe, *imper.*  
   brynge, *inf.* 99/1070  
 sprynge, *imper.*  
   \*chillyng, *a. sing.* 98/1045  
   graffinge, *obj.* 98/1047  
 sprynge, *subj.*  
   brynge, *inf.* 117/368  
   graffynge, *nom.* 117/369  
   \*tuppyng, *nom.* 145/154  
   waterynge, *obj.* 109/140  
 springe, *inf.*  
   \*anything, *obl.* 67/165  
   bringe, *inf.* 79/503  
   \*slevyng, *obj.* 67/163  
   springe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 194/209  
   tillyng, *obj.* 81/560  
 sprynge, *inf.*  
   brynge, *imper.* 103/1176  
   brynge, *inf.* 112/227, 124/560  
   cherissinge, *nom.* 185/165  
   \*ryvullyng, *obl.* 196/258  
   \*slevyng, *obl.* 185/163  
 springinge, *obl.*  
   burgynynge, *obl.* 74/376  
   ching, *inf.* 74/373  
 tarynge, *obj.*  
   planntyng, *obl.* 112/236  
   wedynge, *obl.* 112/235  
 thinge, *obl.*  
   germyng, *obl.* 126/629  
 thyng, *obl.*  
   husbondynge, *nom.* 6/147  
 tillyng, *obj.*  
   springe, *inf.* 81/559  
 tothinge, *obl.*  
   springe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 25/664  
 uphinge, *inf.*  
   \*connyng, *obj.* 178/214  
   \*gynnyng, *nom.* 178/212  
   \*sprynge, *inf.* 178/215  
 vessellinge, *obl.*  
   boilyng, *obj.* 118/411  
   wryng, *obl.* 118/408  
 wanyng, *obl.*  
   smellinge, *a. sing.* 89/778  
 waterynge, *obj.*  
   sprynge, *subj.* 109/139  
 watermyng, *pp.*  
   syng, *inf.* 94/941  
 wattrynge, *imp. p.*  
   myng, *imper.* 119/419  
 wedynge, *obl.*  
   planntyng, *obl.* 112/236  
   tarynge, *obj.* 112/233  
 wryng, *obj.*  
   bespringe, *inf.* 191/109  
   \*vessellyng, *obl.* 191/110

wrynge, *obl.*

boilynge, *obj.* 118/411

vessellinge, *obl.* 118/410

**-inges, -ynges**

strynges, *n. pl.*

thinges, *n. pl.* 152/101

thinges, *n. pl.*

strynges, *n. pl.* 152/99

**-ingeth (see -engeth)**

springeth, *v. 3 s. pres.*

mengeth, *imper.* 32/878

**-ynk (see -inke, -ynke)**

synk, *inf.*

\*drinke,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 191/106

\*drynke,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 105/23

unwynk, *inf.* 105/25

unwynk, *inf.*

\*drynke,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 105/23

synk, *inf.* 105/26

**-inke, -ynke (see -ynk)**

brinke, *obl.*

drinke, *inf.* 4/82

synke, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 47/90

thinke, *inf.* 4/81

brynke, *obj.*

synke, *subj.* 30/815

brynke, *obl.*

drinke, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 10/229

drynke, *inf.* 17/446

synke, *subj.* 17/445

synke, *inf.* 17/449, 176/145

thinke, *inf.* 176/144

drinke, *obj.*

thinke, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 194/199

drinke, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

brynke, *obl.* 10/241

drinke, *imper.*

swynke, *inf.* 202/439

thinke, *imper.* 202/438

drinke, *inf.*

brinke, *obl.* 4/79

\*synk,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 191/108

synke, *subj.* 2/37

stynke, *subj.* 3/40

thinke, *inf.* 4/81

drynke, *inf.*

brynke, *obl.* 17/446

\*synk,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 105/26

synke, *subj.* 17/443

\*unwynk,<sup>1</sup> *inf.* 105/25

synke, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

brinke, *obl.* 47/91

synke, *subj.*

brynke, *obj.* 30/813

brynke, *obl.* 17/445

drinke, *inf.* 3/39

drynke, *inf.* 17/446

stynke, *subj.* 3/40

synke, *inf.*

brynke, *obl.* 17/451, 176/142

thinke, *inf.* 176/144

stynke, *subj.*

drinke, *inf.* 3/39

synke, *subj.* 2/37

swynke, *inf.*

drinke, *imper.* 202/436

thinke, *imper.* 202/438

thinke, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

drinke, *obj.* 194/197

thinke, *imper.*

drinke, *imper.* 202/436

swynke, *inf.* 202/439

thinke, *inf.*

brinke, *obl.* 4/79

brynke, *obl.* 176/142

drinke, *inf.* 4/82

synke, *inf.* 176/145

**-inne, -ynne (see -in, -yne)**

atwynne, *adv.*

withinne, *adv.* 66/136

ynne, *prep.* 214/213

<sup>1</sup> The ryme has been spoiled by the carelessness of the scribe.

begynne, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
   synne, *nom.* 213/165  
   wynne, *imper.* 213/166  
 begynne, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   twynne, *inf.* 174/87  
 begynne, *subj.*  
   twynne, *inf.* 132/764  
 begynne, *inf.*  
   therynne, *adv.* 170/164  
   winne, *inf.* 61/4  
   wynne, *nom.* 61/5  
   wynne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 108/129  
 ynne, *prep.*  
   atwynne, *adv.* 214/211  
 ynne, *adv.*  
   pynne, *obj.* 55/316, 97/1017,  
     115/328, 193/181  
   skynne, *obl.* 89/792, 97/1020  
   \*wyne, *obl.* 127/658  
   withinne, *adv.* 34/925  
 pynne, *obj.*  
   inne, *adv.* 97/1019  
   ynne, *adv.* 55/318, 115/329,  
     193/182  
   skynne, *obl.* 97/1020  
 synne, *nom.*  
   begynne, *v. 3 s. pres.* 213/163  
   therin, *prep.* 156/191  
   thynne, *a. sing.* 156/194  
   wynne, *imper.* 213/166  
 synne, *obl.*  
   gynne, *inf.* 186/218  
   twynne, *inf.* 7/167  
 skynne, *obj.*  
   pynne, *obl.* 22/602  
 skynne, *obl.*  
   inne, *adv.* 97/1019  
   ynne, *adv.* 89/794  
   pynne, *obj.* 97/1017  
 therynne, *adv.*  
   begynne, *inf.* 170/162  
 thynne, *a. sing.*  
   synne, *nom.* 156/193  
   therein, *prep.* 156/191  
   twynne, *inf.* 142/76  
   wynne, *inf.* 142/75

twynne, *imper.*  
   withynne, *adv.* 27/715  
 twynne, *inf.*  
   begynne, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/85  
   begynne, *subj.* 132/763  
   synne, *obl.* 7/168  
   thynne, *a. sing.* 142/73  
   wynne, *inf.* 142/75  
 wynne, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   begynne, *inf.* 108/127  
 wynne, *imper.*  
   begynne, *v. 3 s. pres.* 213/163  
   synne, *nom.* 213/165  
 wynne, *inf.*  
   begynne, *inf.* 61/2  
   thynne, *a. sing.* 142/73  
   twynne, *inf.* 142/76  
   wynne, *nom.* 61/5  
 wynne, *nom.*  
   begynne, *inf.* 61/2  
   wynne, *inf.* 61/4  
 withinne, *adv.*  
   atwynne, *adv.* 66/134  
   ynne, *adv.* 34/927  
 withynne, *adv.*  
   twynne, *imper.* 27/717

-ynne is (see -ynes)

pynne is  
   \*vyynes, *n. pl.* 37/1003  
   \*wynes, *n. pl.* 37/1005

-ipe

begripe, *inf.*  
   dripe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 54/277  
   ripe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 54/275  
 dripe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   begripe, *inf.* 54/278  
   ripe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 54/275  
 gripe, *inf.*  
   ripe, *a. pl.* 186/190  
 pipe, *obl.*  
   ripe, *a. pl.* 57/379  
 gripe, *a. pl.*  
   gripe, *inf.* 186/192  
   pipe, *obl.* 57/381

ripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 begripe, *inf.* 54/278  
 dripe, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 54/277

## -ippe

pippe, *obj.*  
 slippe, *imper.* 22/591  
 slippe, *imper.*  
 pippe, *obj.* 22/589

## -ire, -yre (see -yer)

aspire, *inf.*  
 empire, *nom.* 206/548  
 emyspire, *obl.* 206/553  
 gire, *inf.* 206/551  
 desire, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 require, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/53,  
 193/169  
 yre, *obl.* 106/54  
 desire, *imper.*  
 \*myer, *obl.* 2/36  
 desire, *inf.*  
 revire, *inf.* 53/258  
 emyspire, *obl.*  
 aspire, *inf.* 206/550  
 empire, *nom.* 206/548  
 gire, *inf.* 206/551  
 empire, *nom.*  
 aspire, *inf.* 206/550  
 emyspire, *obl.* 206/553  
 enspire, *inf.* 186/213  
 gire, *inf.* 206/551  
 enspire, *inf.*  
 empire, *nom.* 186/211  
 enfire, *inf.*  
 yre, *obl.* (iron) 153/121  
 yre, *obl.* (sorrow) 153/123  
 gire, *inf.*  
 aspire, *inf.* 206/550  
 empire, *nom.* 206/548  
 emyspire, *obl.* 206/553  
 yre, *obl.* (iron)  
 enfire, *inf.* 153/124  
 yre, *obl.* (sorrow) 153/123  
 yre, *obl.* (sorrow)  
 desire, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/51  
 enfire, *inf.* 153/124

require, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/53  
 yre, *obl.* (iron) 153/121  
 require, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 desire, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 106/51, 193/  
 171  
 yre, *obl.* 106/54  
 revire, *inf.*  
 desire, *inf.* 53/259

## -ireth

desireth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 ireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 57/361  
 requireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 52/241,  
 57/359  
 ireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 desireth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 57/362  
 requireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 57/359  
 requireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 desireth, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 52/239,  
 57/362  
 ireth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 57/361

## -is, -ys (see -ysse, -us)

amys, *adv.*  
 is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 127/638  
 is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 amys, *adv.* 127/640  
 is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 178/209, 178/  
 210  
 mys, *inf.* 54/284  
 mys, *adv.* 112/229, 213/179  
 this, *pron.* 35/952, 112/228  
 \*thus, *adv.* 213/177  
 mys, *adv.*  
 is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 112/226, 213/180  
 this, *pron.* 112/228  
 \*thus, *adv.* 213/177  
 mys, *inf.*  
 is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 54/285  
 this, *pron.* 54/282  
 this, *pron.*  
 is, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 35/951, 54/285,  
 112/226  
 mys, *inf.* 54/284  
 \*mysse, *nom.* 11/283



## -ise, -yse (see -ice, -yce)

- arise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 wyse, *obl.* 173/64
- arise, *inf.*  
 devyse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 35/941  
 gise, *obl.* 87/746, 172/28  
 gyse, *nom.* 46/68  
 wyse, *obl.* 46/65, 87/747
- aryse, *inf.*  
 assise, *imper.* 177/180  
 gise, *nom.* 208/28  
 gise, *obl.* 177/179  
 suffice, *inf.* 40/1079
- assise, *imper.*  
 aryse, *inf.* 177/177  
 gise, *obl.* 177/179  
 suffice, *inf.* 16/428
- avyse, *nom.*  
 price, *obl.* 5/103  
 vice, *obl.* 5/100
- avyse, *imper.*  
 servyce, *obj.* 138/953
- devise, *imper.*  
 devyse, *inf.* 199/347  
 ryse, *subj.* 178/193  
 suffice, *inf.* 199/345  
 suffise, *inf.* 178/191
- devyse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 arise, *inf.* 35/939  
 wyse, *obl.* 29/783
- devyse, *imper.*  
 suffice, *subj.* 146/184
- devyse, *inf.*  
 devise, *imper.* 199/348  
 solempnyse, *inf.* 183/114  
 suffice, *inf.* 18/476, 74/363,  
 199/345  
 suffise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 183/117  
 wise, *n. pl.* 95/958  
 wyse, *inf.* 47/78
- devyse, *obj.*  
 gyse, *nom.* 73/347  
 gyse, *obj.* 92/886  
 solempnyse, *inf.* 73/345  
 wyse, *n. pl.* 92/884
- divise, *a. sing.*  
 wyse, *n. pl.* 119/414

gise, *nom.*

- aryse, *inf.* 208/27  
 rise, *subj.* 192/141  
 suffice, *inf.* 99/1065
- gise, *obl.*  
 arise, *inf.* 87/744, 172/27  
 aryse, *inf.* 177/177  
 assise, *imper.* 177/180  
 wyse, *obl.* 87/747
- gyse, *nom.*  
 arise, *inf.* 46/67  
 devyse, *obj.* 73/348, 92/887  
 solempnyse, *inf.* 73/345  
 suffice, *inf.* 145/151  
 wyse, *n. pl.* 92/884, 118/405  
 wyse, *obl.* 46/65
- rise, *subj.*  
 gise, *nom.* 192/143  
 sise, *obl.* 159/32  
 wyse, *obl.* 159/30
- rise, *inf.*  
 suffice, *inf.* 187/14  
 wyse, *obl.* 174/104
- ryse, *subj.*  
 devise, *imper.* 178/194  
 suffise, *inf.* 178/191
- sise, *obl.*  
 rise, *subj.* 159/33  
 wyse, *obl.* 159/30
- solempnyse, *inf.*  
 devyse, *inf.* 183/116  
 devyse, *obj.* 73/348  
 gyse, *nom.* 73/347  
 suffice, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 183/117
- suffise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 devyse, *inf.* 183/116  
 solempnyse, *inf.* 183/114
- suffise, *inf.*  
 devise, *imper.* 178/194  
 ryse, *subj.* 178/193
- wyse, *inf.*  
 devyse, *inf.* 47/80
- wise, *n. pl.*  
 devyse, *nom.* 95/959  
 devyse, *obj.* 92/887  
 divise, *a. sing.* 119/416  
 gyse, *nom.* 118/406

gyse, *obj.* 92/886  
 suffice, *inf.* 127/661  
 wyse, *obl.*  
   arise, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 173/66  
   arise, *inf.* 46/67, 87/744  
   devyse, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 29/784  
 wyse, *obl.*  
   gise, *obl.* 87/746  
   gyse, *nom.* 46/68  
   rise, *subj.* 159/33  
   rise, *inf.* 174/105  
   sise, *obl.* 159/32

-ysed (*see* -iced)

devysed, *v.* 1 *s. pt.*  
 sufficed, *pp.* 61/20

-iseth (*see* -iceth)

aviseth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.*  
 sufficeth, *v.* 3 *s. pres.* 140/15

-ise is (*see* -ides, -is is)

gise is  
 avis is, 36/992  
 \*besides, *adv.* 36/991

-is is (*see* -ides, -ise is)

avis is  
 \*besides, *adv.* 36/991  
 gise is, 36/989

-ysse (*see* -is)

mysse, *nom.*  
 \*this, *pron.* 11/281

-ist (*see* -iste)

list, 3 *s. pres.*  
 list, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 52/220  
 list, *impers. pres.*  
 list, *impers. pres.* 52/218, 52/220  
 \*triste, *imper.* 69/224  
 wist, *imper.* 40/1103  
 wist, *pp.* 40/1104  
 wist, *imper.*  
 list, *impers. pres.* 40/1101  
 wist, *pp.* 40/1104

wist, *pp.*  
 list, *impers. pres.* 40/1101  
 wist, *imper.* 40/1103

-iste (*see* -ist)

triste, *imper.*  
 \*list, *impers. pr.* 69/223

-it (*see* -itte)

it, *pron.*  
 \*slitte, *pp.* 100/1105

-ite, -yte

alite, *adv.*  
 condite, *pp.* 123/526  
 appetite, *nom.*  
 delite, *nom.* 57/360  
 lite, *a. sing.* 22/576  
 lite, *adv.* 26/688  
 white, *a. pl.* 22/579, 26/691  
 astite, *adv.*  
 delite, *obl.* 16/407  
 bite, *subj.*  
 lite, *adv.* 181/58  
 white, *a. pl.* 181/61  
 bite, *inf.*  
 lite, *a. pl.* 42/1157  
 smyte, *inf.* 42/1160  
 white, *a. pl.* 26/703  
 condite, *pp.*  
 alite, *adv.* 123/528  
 delite, *nom.*  
 appetite, *nom.* 57/358  
 delite, *obl.*  
 astite, *adv.* 16/409  
 respite, *inf.* 10/256  
 white, *a. pl.* 10/257  
 delite, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 elite, *pp.* 136/872  
 lite, *a. pl.* 53/253  
 elite, *pp.*  
 delite, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 136/870  
 lite, *a. sing.*  
 appetite, *nom.* 22/579  
 quyte, *inf.* 8/196  
 white, *a. pl.* 22/578, 31/834

lite, *a. pl.*  
   bite, *inf.* 42/1159  
   delite, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 53/255  
   smyte, *inf.* 42/1160, 198/325  
 lite, *adv.*  
   appetite, *nom.* 26/690  
   bite, *subj.* 181/60  
   white, *a. pl.* 181/61  
   white, *a. pl.* 26/691  
 quyte, *inf.*  
   lite, *a. sing.* 8/195  
 respite, *inf.*  
   delite, *obl.* 10/254  
   white, *a. pl.* 10/257  
 smyte, *inf.*  
   bite, *inf.* 42/1159  
   lite, *a. pl.* 42/1157, 198/323  
 white, *obj.*  
   white, *a. pl.* 200/365  
 white, *a. pl.*  
   appetite, *nom.* 22/579, 26/690  
   bite, *subj.* 181/60  
   bite, *inf.* 26/701  
   delite, *obl.* 10/254  
   lite, *a. sing.* 22/576, 31/836  
   lite, *adv.* 26/688, 181/58  
   respite, *inf.* 10/256  
   white, *obj.* 200/367  
   wite, *inf.* 166/73  
 wite, *inf.*  
   white, *a. pl.* 166/71  
       -ith (*see* -eth)  
 pith, *obj.*  
   sith, *adv.* 111/215  
   with, *prep.* 111/212  
 sith, *adv.*  
   pith, *obj.* 111/214  
   with, *prep.* 111/212  
 therwith, *adv.*  
   beth, *subj.* 92/872  
   seth, *v. 3 s. pres.* 92/873  
 with, *prep.*  
   beth, *subj.* 199/353  
   pith, *obj.* 111/214  
   sith, *obl.* 111/215

      -ithe  
 aswithe, *adv.*  
   sithe, *nom.* 126/622  
 sithe, *nom.*  
   aswithe, *adv.* 126/623  
       -itte (*see* -it)  
 slitte, *pp.*  
   \*it, *pron.* 100/1106  
 slitte, *obl.*  
   ypitte, *pp.* 41/1119  
 ypitte, *pp.*  
   slitte, *obl.* 41/1120  
       -ive, -yve  
 alyve, *adv.*  
   blyve, *adv.* 169/156  
   five (v), *a. pl.* 169/158  
 aryve, *subj.*  
   olyve, *obl.* 62/44  
   thryve, *inf.* 62/47  
 asblyve, *adv.*  
   five (v), *a. pl.* 60/443, 163/147  
   upthrive, *imper.* 163/144  
   upthryve, *inf.* 60/446  
 blyve, *adv.*  
   alyve, *adv.* 169/159  
   fyve, *a. pl.* 10/247, 21/572,  
     46/57, 78/481, 89/783, 135/  
     842, 139/959, 169/158, 192/  
     137  
   olyve, *obl.* 21/569, 78/478, 190/  
     86, 190/104  
   thrive, *inf.* 190/89  
   thryve, *inf.* 10/249, 192/135  
 dryve, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
   unthryve, *subj.* 122/507  
 dryve, *imper.*  
   olyve, *obl.* 18/480  
   thryve, *inf.* 18/478  
 dryve, *inf.*  
   fyve, *a. pl.* 189/56  
   thryve, *inf.* 10/266  
 fyve, *a. pl.*  
   alyve, *adv.* 169/159  
   asblyve, *adv.* 60/445, 163/145

blyve, *adv.* 10/250, 21/571, 46/59, 78/480, 89/784, 135/844, 139/960, 169/156, 192/138  
 dryve, *inf.* 189/55  
 olyve, *obl.* 21/569, 78/478  
 thrive, *inf.* 9/227, 76/441, 206/546  
 thryve, *inf.* 10/249, 132/784, 192/135, 208/42, 217/287  
 upthryve, *inf.* 60/446, 163/144  
 wyve, *inf.* 98/1057  
 olyve, *obj.*  
 blyve, *adv.* 78/480  
 five (v), *a. pl.* 78/481  
 thrive, *inf.* 76/430, 86/713  
 thryve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 141/36  
 olyve, *obl.*  
 aryve, *subj.* 62/46  
 blyve, *adv.* 21/571, 190/88, 190/105  
 dryve, *imper.* 18/481  
 five (v), *a. pl.* 21/572  
 thrive, *inf.* 190/89  
 thryve, *inf.* 18/478, 62/47  
 thrive, *inf.*  
 blyve, *adv.* 190/88  
 fyve, *a. pl.* 9/225, 76/440, 206/545  
 olyve, *obl.* 190/86  
 olyve, *obj.* 76/428, 86/714  
 thryve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 olyve, *obj.* 141/35  
 thryve, *inf.*  
 aryve, *subj.* 62/46  
 blyve, *adv.* 10/250, 192/138  
 dryve, *imper.* 18/481  
 dryve, *inf.* 10/265  
 fyve (v), *a. pl.* 10/247, 132/785, 192/137, 208/41, 217/286  
 olyve, *obl.* 18/480, 62/44  
 unthryve, *subj.*  
 dryve, *v. 3 s. pres.* 122/505  
 upthrive, *inf.*  
 asblyve, *adv.* 60/445, 163/145  
 five (v), *a. pl.* 60/443, 163/142  
 wyve, *inf.*  
 fyve, *a. pl.* 98/1056

## -yves

hyves, *n. pl.*  
 lyves, *n. pl.* 147/200  
 lyves, *n. pl.*  
 hyves, *n. pl.* 147/198

## -ixe (see -ix)

fixe, *pp.*  
 sixe (vi), *a. pl.* 60/444  
 sixe (vi), *a. pl.*  
 fixe, *pp.* 60/442

## -o (see -oo)

ō (omega)  
 do, *pp.* 178/213  
 also, *adv.*  
 do, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 102/1162  
 do, *pp.* 193/170, 219/347  
 doo, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 218/302  
 doo, *inf.* 10/246, 53/249, 117/372, 126/618  
 doo, *pp.* 91/839, 173/57, 220/359  
 foo, *nom.* 6/149, 184/151  
 froo, *adv.* 53/247  
 goo, *inf.* 18/463, 42/1153, 126/621, 184/152, 210/78  
 moo, *adv.* 42/1152, 133/813  
 no, *a. sing.* 94/929  
 so, *adv.* 6/152, 219/345  
 therto, *adv.* 194/215, 220/361  
 to, *adv.* 94/926  
 two, *a. pl.* 52/224, 193/172  
 unto, *prep.* 194/212  
 Apollo, *n. pr.*  
 therto, *adv.* 201/409  
 do, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 also, *adv.* 102/1161  
 fro, *adv.* 214/199  
 do, *imper.*  
 fro, *adv.* 201/403  
 go, *inf.* 201/404  
 to, *adv.* 205/519

- do, *pp.*  
 also, *adv.* 193/173, 219/343  
 go, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/298  
 ω (omega), 178/211  
 so, *adv.* 202/420, 216/266, 217/  
 299, 219/345  
 to, *adv.* 203/469  
 two, *a. pl.* 193/172  
 twoo, *a. pl.* 72/321
- fordo, *pp.*  
 two, *a. pl.* 217/288
- fro, *adv.*  
 do, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 214/197  
 doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 197/296  
 do, *imper.* 201/401  
 go, *inf.* 201/404  
 so, *adv.* 24/655  
 therto, *adv.* 25/682, 197/298  
 to, *adv.* 24/656
- go, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 do, *pp.* 217/296  
 so, *adv.* 217/299
- go, *subj.*  
 so, *adv.* 128/678
- go, *inf.*  
 do, *imper.* 201/401  
 fro, *adv.* 201/403
- yo,<sup>1</sup>  
 tough, *adv.* 15/400
- into, *prep.*  
 doo, *inf.* 24/638
- Mago, *n. pr.*  
 goo, *inf.* 67/186  
 soo, *adv.* 67/184
- no, *a. sing.*  
 also, *adv.* 94/928  
 to, *adv.* 94/926
- so, *adv.*  
 also, *adv.* 6/151, 219/348  
 do, *pp.* 202/419, 216/265, 217/  
 296, 219/347  
 doo, *imper.* 128/672  
 doo, *inf.* 74/382, 131/745  
 foo, *nom.* 6/149  
 fro, *adv.* 24/653
- go, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 217/298  
 go, *subj.* 128/679  
 to, *adv.* 24/656, 131/747  
 two, *a. pl.* 74/380
- to, *prep.*  
 doo, *inf.* 67/725  
 doo, *pp.* 153/122  
 froo, *prep.* 87/723
- to, *adv.*  
 also, *adv.* 94/928  
 do, *imper.* 205/521  
 do, *pp.* 203/468  
 doo, *inf.* 131/745, 155/163  
 fro, *adv.* 24/653  
 no, *a. sing.* 94/929  
 so, *adv.* 24/656, 131/748  
 soo, *adv.* 155/166
- therto, *adv.*  
 also, *adv.* 194/214, 220/361  
 Apollo, *n. pr.* 201/407  
 doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 197/296  
 doo, *imper.* 80/536, 119/422  
 doo, *inf.* 27/736, 156/205  
 doo, *pp.* 100/1099, 198/319,  
 220/359  
 fro, *adv.* 25/680, 197/299  
 froo, *prep.* 119/425  
 moo, *a. pl.* 80/534  
 soo, *adv.* 156/207  
 two, *a. pl.* 108/118, 198/317,  
 199/337, 205/512  
 unto, *prep.* 194/212
- two, *a. pl.*  
 also, *adv.* 52/223, 193/173  
 do, *pp.* 193/170  
 doo, *inf.* 74/382  
 doo, *pp.* 198/319  
 fordo, *pp.* 217/290  
 froo, *adv.* 64/102  
 so, *adv.* 74/383  
 soo, *adv.* 64/100  
 therto, *adv.* 108/119, 198/320,  
 199/339, 205/514  
 ydoo, *imper.* 75/406

<sup>1</sup> ? *y[n]o* (enough, sufficiently), but see Glossary.

unto, *prep.*  
 also, *adv.* 194/214  
 doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1164  
 therto, *adv.* 194/215  
 wo, *obj.* 102/1167  
 wo, *obj.*  
 doo, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 102/1164  
 unto, *prep.* 102/1166

**-ocked** (*see -ooked*)

hocked, *a. pl.*  
 crooked, *a. pl.* 42/1154

**-od** (*see -oode*)

unshod, *a. sing.*  
 \*goode, *a. sing.* 32/861

**-ode** (*see -oode*)

brode, *obl.*  
 goode, *adv.* 23/616  
 gode, *obl.*  
 foode, *obl.* 129/698  
 goode, *a. pl.* 129/699  
 shode, *pp.*  
 goode, *adv.* 20/539  
 wode, *a. sing.*  
 bloode, *obj.* 31/844  
 goode, *a. sing.* 31/842

**-ofre** (*see -offre, -opher*)

ofre, *subj.*  
 Philosopher, *nom.* 167/93  
 coffre, *obj.* 167/96

**-offre** (*see -ofre, -opher*)

coffre, *obj.*  
 Philosopher, *nom.* 167/93  
 ofre, *subj.* 167/95

**-ofte**

aloft, *adv.*  
 softe, *adv.* 19/517  
 clofte, (? alofte or olofte)  
 crofte, *obl.* 89/796  
 softe, *inf.* 89/793

crofte, *obl.*  
 clofte, (?) 89/795  
 softe, *inf.* 89/793  
 lofte, *obl.*  
 ofte, *adv.* 82/596, 155/183  
 ofte, *adv.*  
 lofte, *obl.* 82/598, 155/185  
 onlofte, *adv.* 38/1039  
 softe, *a. sing.* 182/90  
 softe, *a. pl.* 140/22  
 olofte, *adv.*  
 softe, *a. pl.* 40/1086, 107/78  
 onlofte, *adv.*  
 ofte, *adv.* 38/1037  
 softe, *adv.*  
 alofte, *adv.* 19/518  
 olofte, *adv.* 40/1088, 107/80  
 softe, *a. sing.*  
 ofte, *adv.* 182/91  
 softe, *a. pl.*  
 ofte, *adv.* 140/21  
 softe, *inf.*  
 clofte, (?) 89/795  
 crofte, *obl.* 89/796

**-oye**

destroye, *inf.*  
 ennoye, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 147/211  
 ennoye, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 destroye, *inf.* 147/210

**-oil**

cerfoil, *obj.*  
 quaterfoil, *obj.* 84/656  
 soil, *obl.* 84/655  
 foil, *obj.*  
 oil, *obl.* 145/142  
 oil, *obl.*  
 foil, *obj.* 145/144  
 quaterfoil, *obj.*  
 cerfoil, *obj.* 84/653  
 soil, *obl.* 84/655  
 soil, *obl.*  
 cerfoil, *obj.* 84/653  
 quaterfoil, *obj.* 84/856



**-oile is** (*see -oiles*)

foile is

foiles, *n. pl.* 51/191

soile is, 51/193

soile is

foiles, *n. pl.* 51/191

foile is, 51/194

**-oiles** (*see -oile is*)foiles, *n. pl.*

foile is, 51/194

soile is, 51/193

**-oint, -oynt** (*see -oint is, -oynte*)disoynt, *subj.*\*enoynte, *subj.* 32/870

\*point is, 32/872

joynt, *obj.*\*enoynte, *inf.* 181/55**-ointe, -oynte** (*see -oint, -oynt, -oint is*)ennointe, *imper.*jointe, *obl.* 134/834, 154/138pointe, *obl.* 154/137enoynte, *subj.*\*disoynt, *subj.* 32/873

\*point is, 32/872

enoynte, *inf.*\*joynt, *obj.* 181/56jointe, *obl.*ennointe, *imper.* 134/833, 154/

135

pointe, *obl.* 154/137, 208/44pointe, *inf.* 208/46pointe, *obl.*ennointe, *imper.* 154/135jointe, *obl.* 154/138, 208/47pointe, *inf.* 208/46serjointe, *pp.* 117/370pointe, *inf.*jointe, *obl.* 208/47pointe, *obl.* 208/44serjointe, *pp.*pointe, *obl.* 117/371**-oint is** (*see -oint, -oynte*)

point is

\*disoynt, *subj.* 32/873\*enoynte, *subj.* 32/870**-oken**broken, *pp.*loken, *pp.* 163/153loken, *pp.*broken, *pp.* 163/155**-old** (*see -olde*)behold, *inf.*cold, *obl.* 99/1084bold, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*\*colde, *obl.* 215/224cold, *obl.*behold, *inf.* 99/1085cold, *a. sing.*cold, *a. pl.* 48/130hold, *pp.* 48/131\*holde, *subj.* 121/495\*holde, *pp.* 52/227old, *a. pl.* 56/349\*witholde, *inf.* 121/492cold, *a. pl.*cold, *a. sing.* 48/128hold, *pp.* 48/131\*holde, *pp.* 86/703manyfold, *adv.* 69/234wold, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 142/53hold, *pp.*cold, *a. sing.* 48/128cold, *a. pl.* 48/130manyfold, *adv.*cold, *a. pl.* 69/232old, *a. pl.*cold, *a. sing.* 56/350told, *pp.*\*folde, *obl.* 65/113wold, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*cold, *a. pl.* 142/51**-olde is** (*see -oldes*)

molde is

goldes, *n. pl.* 143/105

-oldes (*see* -olde is)

goldes, *n. pl.*

molde is, 143/106

-olde (*see* -old, -oolde)

beholde, *subj.*

holde, *inf.* 48/107

tolde, *pp.* 48/109

beholde, *inf.*

colde, *nom.* 209/51

holde, *pp.* 209/54

holde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 217/280

holde, *inf.* 137/923

olde, *a. pl.* 137/922

betolde, *pp.*

olde, *a. pl.* 24/657

bolde, *a. sing.*

colde, *a. pl.* 117/380

wolde, *pp.* 117/382

colde, *nom.*

beholde, *inf.* 209/53

holde, *pp.* 209/54

colde, *obj.*

holde, *inf.* 64/80

colde, *obl.*

\*bold, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 215/223

holde, *inf.* 3/42, 135/847

moolde, *obl.* 96/996

wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 96/998

colde, *a. sing.*

folde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 206/535

folde, *imper.* 154/150

folde, *subj.* 81/557

holde, *imper.* 189/76

holde, *pp.* 81/558, 123/533,

144/110

tolde, *pp.* 104/3

wolde, *v. 1 s. pres.* 19/504

wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 77/455, 144/

111, 171/7

colde, *a. pl.*

bolde, *a. sing.* 117/383

folde, *imper.* 88/774

folde, *inf.* 180/33

holde, *subj.* 12/297

holde, *inf.* 20/520, 41/1117,

106/77, 124/570, 131/743,

152/89, 164/17, 218/311

holde, *pp.* 5/122, 62/43, 105/45,

162/119, 180/32

olde, *a. sing.* 88/772

overfolde, *pp.* 20/523

sholde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/68

tolde, *pp.* 41/1118

wolde, *pp.* 117/382

wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 11/273, 94/

934, 151/67

ytolde, *pp.* 144/134, 152/88

folde, *obl.*

\*told, *pp.* 65/115

folde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

colde, *a. sing.* 206/533

folde, *imper.*

colde, *a. sing.* 154/148

colde, *a. pl.* 88/775

olde, *a. sing.* 88/772

folde, *subj.*

colde, *a. sing.* 81/555

holde, *pp.* 81/558

folde, *inf.*

colde, *a. pl.* 180/30

holde, *subj.* 133/789

holde, *pp.* 133/787, 180/32

holde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

beholde, *inf.* 217/279

holde, *imper.*

colde, *a. sing.* 189/77

olde, *a. pl.* 130/714

holde, *subj.*

\*cold, *a. sing.* 121/494

colde, *a. pl.* 12/295

folde, *inf.* 133/790

holde, *pp.* 133/787

witholde, *inf.* 121/492

holde, *inf.*

beholde, *inf.* 137/920

beholde, *subj.* 48/110

colde, *a. pl.* 20/522, 41/1115,

106/76, 124/568, 131/742,

152/86, 164/15, 218/309

colde, *obj.* 64/78

colde, *obl.* 3/41, 135/848

- holde, *inf.* 137/901, 137/902  
 moolde, *obl.* 69/221, 93/909,  
 112/231, 210/93  
 olde, *a. sing.* 101/1119, 137/899  
 olde, *a. pl.* 131/744, 137/922  
 olde, *inf.* 137/899  
 overfolde, *pp.* 20/523  
 sholde, *v. 3 s. pres.* 69/219  
 tolde, *pp.* 41/1118, 48/109  
 wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 210/96  
 ytolde, *pp.* 152/88  
 holde, *pp.*  
 beholde, *inf.* 209/53  
 \*cold, *a. sing.* 52/225  
 \*cold, *a. pl.* 86/701  
 colde, *a. sing.* 81/555, 123/535,  
 144/108  
 colde, *a. pl.* 5/120, 62/45, 105/  
 43, 162/118, 180/30  
 colde, *nom.* 209/51  
 folde, *subj.* 81/557  
 folde, *inf.* 133/790, 180/33  
 holde, *subj.* 133/789  
 olde, *a. sing.* 108/111, 130/703,  
 183/106  
 wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 130/705,  
 144/111  
 molde, *obl.*  
 sholde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 174/98  
 olde, *a. sing.*  
 colde, *a. pl.* 88/775  
 folde, *imper.* 88/774  
 holde, *inf.* 101/1120, 137/901,  
 137/902  
 holde, *pp.* 108/112, 130/706,  
 183/108  
 wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 130/705  
 olde, *a. pl.*  
 beholde, *inf.* 137/920  
 betolde, *pp.* 24/658  
 holde, *imper.* 130/715  
 holde, *inf.* 131/746, 137/923  
 overfolde, *pp.*  
 colde, *a. pl.* 20/522  
 holde, *inf.* 20/520  
 sholde, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
 holde, *inf.* 69/222
- sholde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 colde, *a. pl.* 151/65  
 molde, *obl.* 174/97  
 moolde, *obj.* 79/519  
 moolde, *obl.* 69/221  
 wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/67  
 tolde, *pp.*  
 beholde, *subj.* 48/110  
 colde, *a. sing.* 104/1  
 colde, *a. pl.* 41/1115  
 holde, *inf.* 41/1117, 48/107  
 witholde, *inf.*  
 \*cold, *a. sing.* 121/494  
 holde, *subj.* 121/495  
 wolde, *v. 1 s. pres.*  
 colde, *a. sing.* 19/503  
 wolde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 colde, *obl.* 96/999  
 colde, *a. sing.* 77/454, 144/108,  
 171/6  
 colde, *a. pl.* 11/272, 94/932,  
 151/65  
 holde, *inf.* 210/95  
 holde, *pp.* 130/706, 144/110  
 moolde, *obl.* 96/996, 210/93  
 olde, *a. sing.* 130/703  
 sholde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 151/68  
 wolde, *pp.*  
 bolde, *a. sing.* 117/383  
 colde, *a. pl.* 117/380  
 ytolde, *pp.*  
 colde, *a. pl.* 144/133, 152/86  
 holde, *inf.* 152/89
- ole (see -oolle, -ulle)
- cole, *inf.*  
 scole, *nom.* 44/14  
 scole, *nom.*  
 cole, *inf.* 44/13  
 wole, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 woolle, *obl.* 167/79  
 fulle, *obl.* 167/81
- olle (see -ulle)
- wolle, *obj.*  
 fulle, *obl.* 154/140

wolle, *obl.*

fulle, *obl.* 57/376

wolle, *subj.* 57/375

wolle, *subj.*

fulle, *obl.* 57/376

fulle, *a. pl.* 39/1065

pulle, *inf.* 53/252

wolle, *obl.* 57/373

### -olve

desolve, *subj.*

devolve, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 204/497

devolve, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

desolve, *subj.* 204/496

dissolve, *inf.*

resolve, *inf.* 219/344

dissolve, *subj.*

resolve, *inf.* 14/365

resolve, *inf.*

dissolve, *subj.* 14/367

dissolve, *inf.* 219/346

### -ome (see -umme)

some, *nom.*

humme, *subj.* 162/124

summe, *subj.* 162/123

### -on (see -one, -oon, -oone, -oun)

on, *adv.*

\*everichone, *pron.* 79/522

\*gone, *pp.* 79/523

on, *prep.*

\*oon, *a. sing.* 76/421

ablaqueacion, *obj.*

dominacion, *obj.* 188/41

ablaqueacion, *obl.*

excodicacion, *obj.* 44/3

castracion, *nom. sing.*

ocupacion, *nom.* 152/94

significacion, *nom. sing.* 162/122

dominacion, *obj.*

ablaqueacion, *obj.* 188/42

elacion, *obl.*

putacion, *obl.* 91/858

region, *obl.* 91/856

Elioselinon, *nom.*

Petroselinon, *nom.* 142/69

yposelinon, *nom.* 142/66

emplastracion, *obj.*

inoculacion, *obj.* 165/45

enoculacion, *nom. sing.*

ocupacion, *obj.* 213/164

everichon, *pron.*

\*oon, *pron.* 148/228

excodicacion, *obj.*

ablaqueacion, *obl.* 44/1

expu[r]gacion, *obj.*

generacion, *obl.* 138/940

generacion, *obl.*

expu[r]gacion, *obj.* 138/942

germinacion, *obj.*

ocacion, *obj.* 207/11

sation, *nom. sing.* 207/9

germynacion, *obl.*

ocupacion, *nom.* 113/248

incrementacion, *nom. sing.*

putacion, *nom.* 217/293

inoculacion, *obj.*

emplastracion, *obj.* 165/43

insicion, *obj.*

\*emplastracioun, *obj.* 161/91

multiplicacion, *obl.*

procuracion, *obj.* 214/193

Septentrion, *obl.* 175/118

translacion, *nom.* 214/191

ocacion, *obj.*

germinacion, *obj.* 207/12

sation, *nom. sing.* 207/9

ocupacion, *nom. sing.*

castracion, *nom. sing.* 152/92

germynacion, *obl.* 113/246

pampinacion, *nom. sing.* 171/15

ocupacion, *obj.*

enoculacion, *nom. sing.* 213/162

ocupacion, *obl.*

pampinacion, *obl.* 150/22

propagacion, *nom. sing.* 189/57

origon, *nom.*

echoon, *a. sing.* 38/1027

noon, *a. sing.* 38/1026

pampinacion, *nom. sing.*

ocupacion, *nom. sing.* 171/17

pampinacion, *obl.*  
 ocupacion, *obl.* 150/24  
 Petroselinon, *nom.*  
 Elioselinon, *nom.* 142/68  
 yposelinon, *nom.* 142/66  
 procuracion, *obj.*  
 multiplicacion, *obl.* 214/194  
 translacion, *nom.* 214/191  
 propagacion, *nom. sing.*  
 ocupacion, *obl.* 189/59  
 putacion, *obj.*  
 incrementacion, *nom.* 217/294  
 putacion, *obl.*  
 elacion, *obl.* 91/859  
 region, *obl.* 91/856  
 region, *obl.*  
 elacion, *obl.* 91/859  
 putacion *obl.* 91/858  
 sation, *nom.*  
 germinacion, *obj.* 207/12  
 occacion, *obj.* 207/11  
 Septentrion, *obl.*  
 \*everichoon, *pron.* 17/458  
 \*ichone, *pron.* 78/493  
 multiplicacion, *obj.* 175/119  
 significacion, *nom.*  
 castracion, *nom.* 162/120  
 translacion, *nom.*  
 multiplicacion, *obl.* 214/194  
 procuracion, *obj.* 214/193  
 yposelinon, *nom.*  
 Elioselinon, *nom.* 142/68  
 Petroselinon, *nom.* 142/69

-ond (see -ande, -ounde)

hond, *obl.*  
 \*lande, *obj.* 47/79  
 stond, *inf.* 47/82  
 lond, *obl.*  
 stond, *inf.* 14/32  
 stond, *inf.*  
 hond, *obl.* 47/81  
 \*lande, *obj.* 47/79  
 lond, *obl.* 141/30  
 yfond, *pp.*  
 \*lande, *obl.* 62/23  
 \*understande, *inf.* 62/26

-onde (see -ande, -onnde, -ounde)  
 awonde, *obj.*  
 stonde, *inf.* 123/547  
 bonde, *obl.*  
 stonde, *inf.* 131/756  
 bronde, *obl.*  
 fonde, *pp.* 88/753  
 stonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 88/754  
 stonde, *inf.* 53/248  
 feconde, *a. pl.*  
 aboute, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 219/330  
 feconde, *inf.*  
 founde, *pp.* 71/277  
 wounde, *obj.* 71/278  
 fonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 londe, *obl.* 114/275  
 stonde, *inf.* 114/277  
 fonde, *inf.*  
 londe, *obl.* 185/167  
 fonde, *pp.*  
 bronde, *obl.* 88/751  
 honde, *nom.* 218/324  
 honde, *obl.* 14/356, 187/12  
 \*lande, *nom.* 47/100  
 londe, *inf.* 173/54  
 londe, *obl.* 1/8, 52/232, 159/28,  
 191/114, 191/124  
 londe, *obj.* 83/618, 158/11, 187/9  
 \*stande, *inf.* 47/102  
 stonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 88/754, 218/  
 327  
 stonde, *imper.* 131/751, 173/51,  
 191/21  
 stonde, *inf.* 83/620, 158/12, 191/  
 116  
 honde, *nom.*  
 fonde, *pp.* 218/326  
 stonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 218/327  
 honde, *obl.*  
 fonde, *pp.* 14/357, 187/11  
 londe, *obj.* 187/9  
 stonde, *inf.* 79/505  
 londe, *inf.*  
 fonde, *pp.* 173/53  
 stonde, *imper.* 173/51  
 londe, *nom.*  
 \*stande, *inf.* 67/175

londe, *obj.*  
 fonde, *inf.* 185/168  
 fonde, *pp.* 1/10, 52/234, 158/9,  
 159/27, 187/11  
 honde, *obl.* 187/12  
 stonde, *inf.* 29/791, 63/63, 64/  
 84, 66/157, 158/12, 184/150  
 londe, *obl.*  
 fonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 114/278  
 fonde, *pp.* 83/621, 191/117, 191/  
 123  
 stonde, *imper.* 191/121  
 stonde, *inf.* 81/581, 83/620, 114/  
 277, 191/116  
 sonde, *nom.*  
 stonde, *inf.* 77/448  
 stonde, *obl.*  
 stonde, *inf.* 39/1053  
 stonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 bronde, *obl.* 88/751  
 fonde, *pp.* 88/753, 218/326  
 honde, *nom.* 218/324  
 stonde, *imper.*  
 fonde, *pp.* 131/753, 173/53, 191/  
 123  
 londe, *inf.* 173/54  
 londe, *obl.* 191/124  
 stonde, *subj.*  
 bonnde, *obl.* 74/368  
 stonde, *inf.* 74/369  
 stonde, *inf.*  
 awonde, *obj.* 123/549  
 bonde, *obl.* 131/757  
 bonnde, *obl.* 74/368  
 bronde, *obl.* 53/246  
 fonde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 114/278  
 fonde, *pp.* 83/621, 158/9, 191/  
 117  
 honde, *obl.* 79/507  
 londe, *obj.* 83/618, 158/11, 184/  
 148  
 londe, *obl.* 29/790, 63/62, 66/  
 155, 64/83, 81/580, 114/275,  
 191/114  
 sonde, *nom.* 77/447  
 stonde, *obl.* 39/1051  
 stonde, *subj.* 74/366

wonde, *obj.*

\*lande, *nom.* 123/534

\*stande, *inf.* 123/536

-onder (see -under)

asonder, *adv.*

sonder, *3 pl. pres.* 49/145

under, *adv.* 11/267, 30/801, 39/  
 1060, 49/142, 53/273, 92/  
 881, 144/114

sonder, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

asonder, *adv.* 49/144

under, *adv.* 49/142

thonder, *subj.*

under, *adv.* 111/202

-one (see -oon, -oone)

alone, *adv.*

doone, *pp.* 215/236

grone, *inf.* 216/255

oone, *obl.* 215/235

allone, *adv.*

everichone, *a. sing.* 44/19

ichone, *pron.* 57/378

\*noon, *a. sing.* 44/16

Aquylone, *obl.*

alloone, *adv.* 56/347

done, *pp.* 107/84

noone, *a. pl.* 56/348

corone, *inf.*

fordone, *pp.* 15/381

done, *inf.*

moone, *obl.* 164/6, 172/30, 193/  
 184

sone, *adv.* 172/32

done, *pp.*

Aquilone, *obl.* 107/83

everichone, *a. sing.*

allone, *adv.* 44/18

gone, *pp.* 79/523

\*noon, *a. sing.* 44/16

\*on, *adv.* 79/520

fordone, *pp.*

corone, *inf.* 15/379

gone, *inf.*

alone, *adv.* 216/253



gone, *pp.*  
 everichone, *pron.* 79/522  
 \*on, *adv.* 79/520

ichone, *pron.*  
 allone, *adv.* 57/377  
 \*anoon, *adv.* 35/950  
 \*doon, *inf.* 79/513  
 goone, *subj.* 35/949  
 moone, *obl.* 79/516  
 noone, *a. sing.* 2/29  
 \*Septentrion, *obl.* 78/491

none, *a. pl.*  
 sone, *adv.* 141/50

ragstone, *obl.*  
 noone, *a. sing.* 3/63

repone, *imper.*  
 doone, *inf.* 127/662  
 everichoone, *pron.* 127/660

sone, *adv.*  
 done, *inf.* 172/33  
 moone, *obl.* 85/693, 106/57, 143/93, 166/55, 168/113, 172/30, 182/78, 191/113

sone, *adv.*  
 none, *a. pl.* 141/49

stone, *nom.*  
 goone, *inf.* 14/375  
 \*oon, *obl.* 14/376

-ones (see -oones, -onys, -on is, -oone is)

eftesones, *adv.*  
 doone is, 115/319  
 stones, *n. pl.* 62/28  
 stonys, *n. pl.* 115/317

ones, *adv.*  
 stoones, *n. pl.* 195/241

stones, *n. pl.*  
 eftesones, *adv.* 62/27  
 everichon is, 29/789  
 flyntstone is, 49/143  
 ygone is, 29/788

-one is (see -ones, -on is)

flyntstone is  
 stones, *nom.* 49/141

ygone is  
 everichon is, 29/789  
 stones, *n. pl.* 29/786

-on is (see -ones, -one is)

everichon is,  
 stones, *n. pl.* 29/786  
 ygone is, 29/788

-onys (see -ones, -oone is, -oon is)

bonys, *n. pl.*  
 goone is, 213/173  
 noon is, 213/172  
 ydoon is, 133/799

nonys, *n. pl.*  
 goone is, 98/1034  
 onys, *adv.* 98/1033

onys, *adv.*  
 nonys, *n. pl.* 98/1031  
 goone is, 98/1034

stonys, *n. pl.*  
 doonis, 78/476, 127/665, 150/40  
 doone is, 108/122, 115/319, 144/120  
 eftstones, *adv.* 115/320  
 moone is, 182/98  
 noon is, 150/39, 150/49  
 stoon is, 174/80  
 stoone is, 158/7

-onge (see -onnge, -oung)

amonge, *adv.*  
 dounge, *obl.* 107/103  
 stronge, *a. sing.* 105/31  
 stronge, *a. pl.* 107/102

amonge, *prep.*  
 dounge, *obl.* 67/162  
 fonge, *inf.* 189/75  
 longe, *a. sing.* 140/17  
 longe, *a. pl.* 65/127  
 stronge, *a.* 189/74, 200/380  
 wronge, *obj.* 140/19, 200/383

bespronge, *pp.*  
 longe, *a. pl.* 25/679

clonge, *a. sing.*  
 dounge, *obl.* 55/317  
 longe, *adv.* 55/320

- donge, *obl.*  
   longe, *adv.* 144/124  
   yspronge, *pp.* 144/125  
 elonge, *subj.*  
   \*lange, *a. pl.* 4/86  
   \*strange, *a. pl.* 4/88  
 elonge, *inf.*  
   longe, *adv.* 126/634  
   longe, *a. pl.* 126/635  
 flonge, *pp.*  
   dounge, *obj.* 179/9  
   wronge, *obj.* 179/12  
 fonge, *inf.*  
   amonge, *prep.* 189/72  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 189/74  
   stronge, *a. pl.* 167/92  
   yonge, *a. sing.* 127/639  
   yonge, *inf.* 127/641  
 honge, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   longe, *a. sing.* 116/343  
   longe, *a. pl.* 114/282  
   spronge, *pp.* 114/284  
 honge, *inf.*  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 130/719  
   wronge, *nom.* 212/150  
   yonge, *a. pl.* 130/717  
 longe, *inf.*  
   dounge, *obl.* 87/743  
 longe, *obl.*  
   dounge, *obl.* 195/237, 209/72  
   stronge, *a. pl.* 165/42  
   wronge, *nom.* 209/75  
 longe, *a. sing.*  
   amonge, *prep.* 140/20  
   dounge, *obl.* 94/925, 96/993,  
     115/313, 138/947  
   dounge, *obj.* 192/136  
   honge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 116/342  
   longe, *adv.* 16/432  
   spronge, *inf.* 119/423  
   spronge, *pp.* 37/1018, 124/573,  
     143/79, 184/147  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 16/431  
   wronge, *adv.* 115/312  
   wronge, *obj.* 76/434, 140/19  
 longe, *a. pl.*  
   amonge, *prep.* 65/129  
   bespronge, *pp.* 25/678  
   dounge, *obl.* 208/40, 211/107  
   dounge, *obl.* 84/660  
   elonge, *inf.* 126/632  
   honge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 114/285  
   longe, *adv.* 126/634, 169/153  
   spronge, *pp.* 114/284, 114/293  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 208/39  
   stronge, *a. pl.* 135/863  
   uphonge, *pp.* 135/855  
   wronge, *a. sing.* 211/109  
   yonge, *a. pl.* 84/663, 167/105,  
     193/164  
 longe, *adv.*  
   clonge, *a. sing.* 55/319  
   donge, *obl.* 144/122  
   dounge, *obl.* 55/417, 116/330  
   elonge, *inf.* 126/632  
   longe, *a. sing.* 16/429  
   longe, *a. pl.* 126/635, 169/154  
   longe, *adv.* 118/398, 118/399  
   spronge, *pp.* 166/54  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 16/431  
   stronge, *a. pl.* 83/630, 204/483  
   wronge, *nom.* 90/817, 166/53,  
     179/3  
   wronge, *obj.* 13/339  
   ywronge, *pp.* 90/814, 144/125  
 spronge, *inf.*  
   longe, *a. sing.* 119/421  
 spronge, *pp.*  
   dounge, *inf.* 125/582, 180/22  
   honge, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 114/285  
   longe, *a. sing.* 37/1016, 124/574,  
     143/81, 184/146  
   longe, *a. pl.* 114/282, 114/294  
   longe, *adv.* 166/51  
   stronge, *a. pl.* 180/35  
   tonge, *nom.* 166/72  
   wronge, *nom.* 166/53, 182/104  
   yonge, *a. pl.* 106/71, 166/74  
 stronge, *a. pl.*  
   amonge, *adv.* 107/100, 189/72  
   dounge, *nom.* 172/41  
   dounge, *obl.* 107/103

fonge, *inf.* 167/94, 189/75  
 longe, *obl.* 165/41  
 longe, *a. pl.* 135/865  
 longe, *adv.* 83/629, 204/482  
 spronge, *pp.* 180/34  
 yonge, *a. pl.* 149/15, 188/43  
 stronge, *a. sing.*  
   amonge, *adv.* 105/20, 200/382  
   dounge, *obl.* 208/40  
   honge, *inf.* 130/720  
   longe, *a. pl.* 208/37  
   longe, *a. sing.* 16/429  
   longe, *adv.* 16/432  
   wronge, *obj.* 194/196, 200/383  
   yonge, *a. pl.* 130/717  
 tonge, *nom.*  
   spronge, *pp.* 166/75  
   yonge, *a. pl.* 166/74  
 unbiyonge, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
   donnge, *obl.* 51/212  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 51/215  
 umbiyonge, *inf.*  
   donnge, *obl.* 119/435  
 uphonge, *pp.*  
   longe, *a. pl.* 135/854  
 wronge, *nom.*  
   donnge, *obl.* 209/72  
   honge, *inf.* 212/148  
   longe, *obl.* 209/74  
   longe, *adv.* 90/816, 166/51, 179/1  
   spronge, *pp.* 166/54, 182/105  
   ywronge, *pp.* 90/814  
 wronge, *obj.*  
   amonge, *prep.* 140/20, 200/382  
   dounge, *obj.* 179/9  
   flonge, *pp.* 179/11  
   longe, *a. sing.* 76/433, 140/17  
   longe, *adv.* 13/337  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 194/195, 200/380  
 wronge, *a. sing.*  
   dounge, *obl.* 211/107  
   longe, *a. pl.* 211/110  
 wronge, *adv.*  
   dounge, *obl.* 115/313  
   longe, *a. sing.* 115/310  
 wronge, *pp.*  
   dounge, *obj.* 50/183

yonge, *inf.*  
   fonge, *inf.* 127/642  
   yonge, *a. sing.* 127/639  
 yonge, *a. sing.*  
   dounge, *obl.* 214/195  
   fonge, *inf.* 127/642  
   yonge, *inf.* 127/641  
 yonge, *a. pl.*  
   dounge, *nom.* 28/757  
   dounge, *obl.* 51/198, 84/660  
   honge, *inf.* 130/720  
   longe, *a. pl.* 84/662  
   longe, *a. pl.* 167/104, 193/162  
   spronge, *pp.* 106/73, 166/75  
   stronge, *a. sing.* 130/719  
   stronge, *a. pl.* 149/17, 188/45  
   strounge, *a. sing.* 51/201  
   tonge, *nom.* 166/72  
   yspronge, *pp.* 78/486  
 yspronge, *pp.*  
   donge, *obl.* 144/122  
   dounge, *obl.* 191/119  
   longe, *adv.* 144/124  
   yonge, *a. pl.* 78/484  
 ywronge, *pp.*  
   longe, *adv.* 90/816  
   wronge, *nom.* 90/817

-onger (see -enger)

stronger, *a. sing.*  
   \*lenger, *adv.* 41/1111  
   unstronger, *a. pl.* 40/11110  
 unstronger, *a. pl.*  
   \*lenger, *adv.* 41/1111  
   stronger, *a. sing.* 41/1108

-onnde (see -onde)

bonnde, *obl.*  
   stonde, *subj.* 74/366  
   stonde, *inf.* 74/369

-onne (see -oune)

begonne, *pp.*  
   ronne, *pp.* 212/142  
   sonne, *nom.* 19/492, 212/145  
   sonne, *obl.* 69/237  
   wonne, *pp.* 19/494

beronne, *pp.*  
 konne, *subj.* 208/26  
 sonne, *obl.* 160/71, 208/23

conne, *subj.*  
 sonne, *obl.* 13/326  
 \*umviroune, *pp.* 13/324

fonne, *inf.*  
 ponne, *obl.* 33/909

konne, *subj.*  
 beronne, *pp.* 208/25  
 sonne, *obl.* 208/23

ponne, *obl.*  
 fonne, *inf.* 33/910

ronne, *inf.*  
 sonne, *obl.* 71/301

ronne, *pp.*  
 begonne, *pp.* 212/144  
 sonne, *nom.* 212/145  
 sonne, *obl.* 109/160, 169/141,  
 202/432  
 tonne, *obj.* 202/429  
 wonne, *pp.* 162/112

sonne, *nom.*  
 begonne, *pp.* 19/495, 69/238,  
 212/144  
 ronne, *pp.* 212/142  
 wonne, *pp.* 19/494

sonne, *obj.*  
 wonne, *pp.* 168/108

sonne, *obl.*  
 beronne, 160/73, 208/25  
 conne, *subj.* 13/327  
 konne, *subj.* 208/26  
 ronne, *inf.* 71/300  
 ronne, *pp.* 109/161, 169/143,  
 202/431  
 tonne, *obj.* 202/429  
 \*umviroune, *pp.* 13/324  
 wonne, *pp.* 123/546, 168/133,  
 178/203, 216/252

tonne, *obj.*  
 ronne, *pp.* 202/431  
 sonne, *obl.* 202/432

tonne, *obl.*  
 wonne, *pp.* 96/976

wonne, *pp.*  
 begonne, *pp.* 19/495  
 ronne, *pp.* 162/111  
 sonne, *nom.* 19/492  
 sonne, *obj.* 168/106  
 sonne, *obl.* 123/545, 168/132,  
 178/202, 216/251  
 tonne, *obl.* 96/974

-onnge (*see* -ongge, -oung)

donnge, *nom.*  
 stronge, *a. pl.* 172/42

donnge, *obl.*  
 longe, *obl.* 209/74  
 longe, *a. pl.* 208/37, 211/110  
 stronge, *a. sing.* 208/39  
 wronge, *nom.* 209/75  
 wronge, *adj.* 211/109

tonnge, *obl.*  
 \*young, *a. pl.* 26/693

-ons (*see* -oon is)

ons, *obj.*  
 \*oon is, 147/212

-oo (*see* -o)

agoo, *pp.*  
 goo, *subj.* 39/1073  
 soo, *adv.* 39/1076

doo, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 also, *adv.* 218/304  
 fro, *adv.* 197/299  
 therto, *adv.* 197/298  
 unto, *prep.* 102/1166  
 wo, *obj.* 102/1167

doo, *imper.*  
 froo, *prep.* 80/553, 119/425  
 froo, *adv.* 168/131  
 goo, *imper.* 89/789  
 goo, *inf.* 146/174, 168/130  
 inoo, *a. pl.* 80/534  
 so, *adv.* 128/671  
 soo, *adv.* 89/788  
 therto, *adv.* 80/537, 119/424  
 too, *adv.* 85/668, 146/173

doo, *inf.*  
 also, *adv.* 10/248, 53/250, 117/  
 374, 126/620  
 fordoo, *pp.* 195/220

- froo, *adv.* 53/247  
 froo, *prep.* 87/723  
 goo, *v. 1 s. pres.* 157/239  
 goo, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 25/668  
 goo, *inf.* 132/776  
 goo, *pp.* 126/621  
 into, *prep.* 24/640  
 so, *adv.* 74/383, 131/748  
 soo, *adv.* 118/389, 155/166, 156/207  
 therto, *adv.* 27/738, 156/208  
 to, *adv.* 131/747, 155/165  
 too, *adv.* 64/92  
 too, *prep.* 118/390  
 too, *a. pl.* 74/380
- doo, *pp.*  
 also, *adv.* 91/840, 173/59, 220/362  
 doo, *pp.* 126/611, 126/613  
 froo, *adv.* 202/430  
 goo, *inf.* 126/614  
 soo, *adv.* 90/822, 169/140  
 therfroo, *adv.* 104/17  
 therto, *adv.* 100/1098, 198/320, 220/361  
 to, *prep.* 153/120  
 two, *a. pl.* 198/317
- foo, *nom.*  
 also, *adv.* 6/151, 184/149  
 goo, *inf.* 184/152  
 so, *adv.* 6/152
- fordoo, *inf.*  
 soo, *adv.* 34/932
- fordoo, *pp.*  
 doo, *inf.* 195/218
- froo, *prep.*  
 doo, *imper.* 80/552
- froo, *adv.*  
 also, *adv.* 53/250  
 doo, *imper.* 119/422, 168/128  
 doo, *inf.* 53/249, 87/725  
 doo, *pp.* 202/428  
 goo, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 147/193  
 goo, *inf.* 168/130  
 soo, *adv.* 64/100  
 therto, *adv.* 119/424
- to, *prep.* 87/726  
 two, *a. pl.* 64/103
- goo, *v. 1 s. pres.*  
 doo, *inf.* 157/239
- goo, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 doo, *inf.* 25/666  
 froo, *adv.* 147/191
- goo, *imper.*  
 doo, *imper.* 89/786  
 soo, *adv.* 89/788
- goo, *subj.*  
 agoo, *pp.* 39/1075  
 soo, *adv.* 39/1076  
 too, *obl.* 57/364
- goo, *inf.*  
 also, *adv.* 18/465, 42/1150, 184/149, 210/80  
 doo, *imper.* 146/171, 168/128  
 doo, *inf.* 132/773  
 doo, *pp.* 126/611, 126/613  
 foo, *nom.* 184/151  
 froo, *adv.* 168/131  
 Mago, *n. pr.* 67/187  
 moo, *adv.* 42/1152  
 therfroo, *adv.* 111/201  
 too, *prep.* 132/775  
 too, *adv.* 146/173  
 ydoo, *pp.* 111/198
- goo, *pp.*  
 also, *adv.* 126/620  
 doo, *inf.* 126/618
- moo, *a. pl.*  
 doo, *imper.* 80/536  
 thereto, *prep.* 80/537  
 twoo, *a. pl.* 72/314
- moo, *adv.*  
 also, *adv.* 42/1150, 133/812  
 goo, *inf.* 42/1153
- soo, *adv.*  
 agoo, *pp.* 39/1075  
 doo, *imper.* 89/786  
 doo, *inf.* 118/387, 155/163, 156/205  
 doo, *pp.* 90/820, 169/139  
 fordoo, *inf.* 34/934  
 froo, *adv.* 64/102

goo, *imper.* 89/789  
 goo, *subj.* 39/1073  
 goo, *inf.* 67/186  
 Mago, *n. pr.* 67/187  
 therto, *adv.* 156/208  
 to, *adv.* 155/165  
 too, *prep.* 118/390  
 two, *a. pl.* 64/103  
 therfroo, *adv.*  
 doo, *pp.* 104/15  
 goo, *inf.* 111/200  
 ydoo, *pp.* 111/198  
 too, *obl.*  
 goo, *subj.* 57/363  
 too, *prep.*  
 doo, *inf.* 118/387, 132/773  
 goo, *inf.* 132/776  
 soo, *adv.* 118/389  
 too, *adv.*  
 doo, *imper.* 85/666, 146/171  
 doo, *inf.* 64/94  
 goo, *inf.* 146/174  
 twoo, *a. pl.*  
 do, *pp.* 72/322  
 moo, *a. pl.* 72/315  
 ydoo, *pp.*  
 goo, *inf.* 111/200  
 therfroo, *adv.* 111/201  
 two, *a. pl.* 75/405

## -ood

flood, *nom.*  
 good, *a. sing.* 49/147  
 good, *a. sing.*  
 flood, *nom.* 49/146

## -oode (see -od, -ode)

bloode, *nom.*  
 goode, *a. sing.* 41/1134  
 bloode, *obj.*  
 goode, *a. sing.* 31/842, 141/24  
 stooode, *v. 3 s. perf.* 141/27  
 wode, *a. sing.* 31/845  
 broode, *obl.*  
 goode, *a. sing.* 22/577, 26/707

floode, *obl.*  
 goode, *a. sing.* 28/763, 59/439,  
 131/732  
 foode, *obl.*  
 gode, *obl.* 129/696  
 goode, *a. pl.* 129/699  
 goode, *a. sing.*  
 bloode, *nom.* 41/1133  
 bloode, *obj.* 31/844, 141/26  
 broode, *obl.* 22/575  
 floode, *obl.* 28/762, 59/438,  
 131/730  
 obroode, *inf.* 59/436  
 stooode, *v. 3 s. perf.* 141/27  
 \*unshod, *a. sing.* 32/860  
 wode, *a. sing.* 31/845  
 woode, *a. sing.* 6/133  
 goode, *a. pl.*  
 foode, *obl.* 129/698  
 gode, *obl.* 129/696  
 southernwoode, *obl.* 125/596  
 goode, *adv.*  
 brode, *obl.* 23/615  
 broode, *obl.* 26/706  
 shode, *pp.* 20/538  
 obroode, *inf.*  
 floode, *obl.* 59/438  
 goode, *a. sing.* 59/439  
 southernwoode, *obl.*  
 goode, *a. pl.* 125/598  
 stooode, *v. 3 s. perf.*  
 bloode, *obj.* 141/26  
 goode, *a. sing.* 141/24  
 woode, *a. sing.*  
 goode, *a. sing.* 6/132

## -oode is (see -oodes)

goode is  
 woodes, *n. pl.* 43/1169

## -oodes (see -oode is)

woodes, *n. pl.*  
 goode is, 43/1168

## -ook (see -ooke)

stook, *obl.*  
 \*ooke, *obl.* 88/752



-ooke (*see* -ook)  
 ooke, *obl.*  
 \*stook, *obl.* 88/750

-ooked (*see* -ocked)  
 crooked, *a. pl.*  
 \*rocked, *a. pl.* 42/1155

-oolde (*see* -olde)  
 moolde, *obl.*  
 colde, *obl.* 96/999  
 holde, *inf.* 69/222, 93/910, 112/  
 230, 210/95  
 sholde, *v.* 69/219  
 wolde, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 96/998,  
 210/96  
 moolde, *obj.*  
 sholde, *v.* 79/521

-oolle (*see* -ole, -ulle)  
 woolle, *obl.*  
 \*fulle, *obl.* 167/81  
 \*wolle, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 167/82

-oom  
 broom, *obl.*  
 doom, *obl.* 20/525  
 doom, *obl.*  
 broom, *obl.* 20/524

-oon (*see* -on, -oone, -one)  
 agoon, *inf.*  
 stoon, *obl.* 156/195  
 anoon, *adv.*  
 goon, *inf.* 74/360  
 \*goone, *subj.* 35/949  
 \*ichone, *pron.* 35/947  
 oon, *a. sing.* 46/62  
 doon, *inf.*  
 \*ichone, *pron.* 79/515  
 \*moone, *obl.* 79/516, 108/132  
 echoon, *a. sing.*  
 noon, *a. sing.* 38/1026  
 origon, *nom.* 38/1024  
 everichoon, *pron.*  
 \*Septemtrion, *obl.* 17/456

goon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 oon, *a. sing.* 178/204  
 goon, *subj.*  
 \*aloone, *adv.* 123/551  
 \*stoone, *obj.* 123/550  
 goon, *inf.*  
 anoon, *adv.* 74/358  
 oon (I), *a. sing.* 147/217  
 noon, *a. sing.*  
 \*allone, *adv.* 44/18  
 echoon, *a. sing.* 38/1027  
 \*everichone, *a. sing.* 44/19  
 \*goone, *inf.* 175/129  
 oon, *adv.* 192/144  
 origon, *nom.* 38/1024  
 stoon, *obj.* 192/142  
 oon, *a. pl.*  
 goon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 178/206  
 oon, *pron.*  
 everichon, *pron.* 148/222  
 ygoon, *pp.* 126/619  
 oon, *a. sing.*  
 anoon, *adv.* 46/63  
 goon, *inf.* 147/218  
 \*goone, *inf.* 14/375  
 \*on, *prep.* 76/423  
 \*stone, *nom.* 14/373  
 oon, *adv.*  
 \*goone, *inf.* 17/452  
 noon, *a. sing.* 192/145  
 stoon, *obj.* 192/142  
 \*stoone, *obj.* 17/450  
 oon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 \*stoone, *obl.* 27/737  
 togoon, *inf.* 27/740  
 stoon, *obl.*  
 agoon, *inf.* 156/196  
 stoon, *obj.*  
 noon, *pron.* 192/145  
 oon, *pron.* 192/144  
 togoon, *inf.*  
 oon, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 27/739  
 \*stoone, *obl.* 27/737  
 ygoon, *pp.*  
 oon, *pron.* 126/617

- oone (*see* -on, -one, -oon, -one)
- alloone, *adv.*  
 Aquylone, *obl.* 56/345  
 noone, *a. pl.* 56/348
- aloone, *adv.*  
 doone, *inf.* 89/781  
 \*goon, *subj.* 123/548  
 moone, *obl.* 89/779  
 stoone, *obj.* 123/550
- anoone, *adv.*  
 brymstoone, *obl.* 33/902  
 goone, *inf.* 55/321
- brymstoone, *obl.*  
 anoone, *adv.* 33/903
- doone, *inf.*  
 aloone, *adv.* 89/782  
 everichoone, *pron.* 127/660  
 moone, *nom.* 152/97  
 moone, *obl.* 30/825, 78/482, 89/779, 114/274, 151/64, 152/85, 196/267, 203/464  
 repone, *imper.* 127/663  
 soone, *adv.* 203/467
- doone, *pp.*  
 \*alone, *adv.* 215/233  
 moone, *obl.* 75/400, 107/97, 160/60, 160/64  
 oone, *obl.* 215/235  
 soone, *adv.* 160/61
- everichoone, *pron.*  
 doone, *inf.* 127/662  
 moone, *obl.* 82/594  
 repone, *imper.* 127/663
- goone, *subj.*  
 \*anoon, *adv.* 35/950  
 ichone, *pron.* 35/947
- goone, *inf.*  
 anoone, *adv.* 55/322  
 \*noon, *a. sing.* 175/127  
 oon, *adv.* 17/453  
 \*oon, *a. sing.* 14/376  
 stone, *nom.* 14/373  
 stoone, *obj.* 17/450
- ichoone, *pron.*  
 ydoone, *pp.* 121/485  
 moone, *nom.* 121/487
- moone, *nom.*  
 doone, *inf.* 152/98  
 ichoone, *pron.* 121/488  
 ydoone, *pp.* 121/485
- moone, *obl.*  
 aloone, *adv.* 89/782  
 done, *inf.* 164/7, 172/33, 193/187  
 \*doon, *inf.* 79/513, 108/133  
 doone, *inf.* 30/826, 78/483, 89/781, 114/276, 151/66, 152/87, 196/269, 203/466  
 doone, *pp.* 75/402, 107/98, 160/58, 160/66  
 everichoone, *pron.* 82/595  
 ichone, *pron.* 79/515  
 sone, *adv.* 85/692, 106/59, 143/95, 166/56, 168/115, 172/32, 182/80, 191/115  
 soone, *adv.* 160/61, 203/467  
 undoone, *pp.* 173/62
- noone, *a. pl.*  
 alloone, *adv.* 56/347  
 Aquylone, *obl.* 56/345  
 ichone, *a. sing.* 2/31  
 ragstone, *obl.* 3/62
- oone, *obl.*  
 alone, *adv.* 215/233  
 doone, *pp.* 215/236
- overgoone, *inf.*  
 stoone, *obj.* 54/300
- soone, *adv.*  
 doone, *inf.* 203/466  
 doone, *pp.* 160/58  
 moone, *obl.* 160/60, 203/464
- stoone, *obj.*  
 aloone, *adv.* 123/551  
 \*goon, *subj.* 123/548  
 goone, *inf.* 17/452  
 \*oon, *adv.* 17/453  
 overgoone, *inf.* 54/301
- stoone, *obl.*  
 \*oon, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 27/739  
 \*togoone, *inf.* 27/740
- undoone, *pp.*  
 moone, *obl.* 173/63

ydoone, *pp.*

ichoone, *pron.* 121/488

moone, *nom.* 121/487

-oon is (*see* -onys, -oonys, -oone is)

doon is

moonys, *n. pl.* 142/63

noon is, 155/39

stonys, *n. pl.* 78/475, 127/664,  
155/37

noon is

bonys, *n. pl.* 213/170

doon is, 150/40

goone is, 213/173

stonys, *n. pl.* 150/37, 150/48

oon is

\*ons, *obj.* 147/214

stoon is

stonys, *n. pl.* 174/78

ydoon is

bonys, *n. pl.* 133/798

-oone is (*see* -ones, -onys, -oon is)

doone is,

eftsones, *adv.* 115/320

stonys, *n. pl.* 108/120, 115/317,  
144/119

goone is

bonys, *n. pl.* 213/170

nonys, *n. pl.* 98/1031

noon is, 213/172

onys, *adv.* 98/1033

moone is

stonys, *n. pl.* 182/97

stoone is

stonys, *n. pl.* 158/6

-oones (*see* -ones)

stoones, *n. pl.*

ones, *adv.* 195/239

-oonys (*see* -oon is)

moonys, *n. pl.*

doon is, 142/64

-oor (*see* -ore)

hoor, *adv.*

\*boore, *obj.* 98/1051

-ooore

boore, *obl.*

hoore, *a. sing.* 99/1062

stoore, *obl.* 99/1061

hoore, *a. sing.*

boore, *obl.* 99/1059

stoore, *obl.* 99/1061

moore, *a. sing.*

poore, *a. sing.* 177/188

poore, *a. sing.*

moore, *a. sing.* 177/189

stoore, *obl.*

boore, *obl.* 99/1059

hoore, *a. sing.* 99/1062

-oos (*see* -ose)

encloos, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*

\*dispose, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 89/801

-oote (*see* -ote, -oother)

boote, *nom.*

remote, *pp.* 55/313, 150/47

roote, *obl.* 9/237, 55/310, 57/370,  
88/762, 141/45, 150/46, 212/

135

roote, *obj.* 92/862

roote, *inf.* 141/47, 212/137

boote, *obj.*

roote, *obl.* 87/748, 107/104, 108/

107

ymmote, *imper.* 108/109

boote, *obl.*

roote, *obl.* 219/335

boote, *inf.*

roote, *obl.* 125/588

foote, *imper.*

foote, *obl.* 12/316

foote, *obl.*

foote, *imper.* 12/318

roote, *nom.* 30/803

\*wrote, *inf.* 130/802

foothoote, *obl.*  
 hoote, *obl.* 52/226  
 \*wote, 1 s. *pres.* 52/229  
 hoote, *obl.*  
 foothoote, *obl.* 52/228  
 \*wote, 1 s. *pres.* 52/229  
 hoote, *a. pl.*  
 roote, *obl.* 115/308  
 roote, *nom.*  
 foote, *obl.* 30/800  
 \*wrote, *inf.* 30/802  
 roote, *obj.*  
 boote, *nom.* 92/864  
 roote, *inf.* 84/647  
 roote, *obl.*  
 boote, *nom.* 9/238, 57/371, 88/  
 763, 141/48, 150/44, 212/  
 138  
 boote, *obj.* 107/105, 108/110  
 boote, *obl.* 219/336  
 boothe, *obj.* 94/943  
 hoote, *a. pl.* 115/307  
 remote, *a. sing.* 150/47  
 roote, *inf.* 85/682, 112/234,  
 141/47  
 rote, *inf.* 212/137  
 soote, *a. sing.* 77/446, 94/942  
 soote, *a. pl.* 192/147  
 wrote, *imper.* 77/445  
 ymmote, *imper.* 108/109  
 roote, *obl.*  
 boote, *nom.* 55/312  
 boote, *obj.* 87/749  
 boote, *inf.* 125/587  
 remote, *a. sing.* 55/313  
 roote, *inf.* 78/489  
 roote, *inf.*  
 boote, *nom.* 141/48  
 roote, *obl.* 78/490, 85/680, 112/  
 232, 141/45  
 roote, *obj.* 84/645  
 soote, *a. sing.*  
 boothe, *obj.* 94/943  
 roote, *obl.* 77/443, 94/940  
 wrote, *imper.* 77/445  
 soote, *a. pl.*  
 roote, *obl.* 192/146

-oote is (*see* -ootes)  
 boote is  
 footes, *a. pl.* 163/140  
 rootes, *n. pl.* 67/181, 101/1114  
 -ootes (*see* -oote is, -ote is)  
 footes  
 boote is, *a. pl.* 163/137  
 rootes, *n. pl.*  
 boote is, 67/182  
 boote is, 101/1116  
 bote is, 34/938  
 -oothe (*see* -oote)  
 boothe, *obj.*  
 roote, *obl.* 94/940  
 soote, *a. sing.* 94/942  
 -ope.  
 drope, *obl.*  
 hope, *nom.* 157/237  
 hope, *nom.*  
 drope, *obl.* 157/237  
 -opher (*see* -ofre, -offre)  
 Philosopher, *nom.*  
 ofre, *subj.* 167/95  
 coffre, *obj.* 167/96  
 -oppe  
 stoppe, *inf.*  
 toppe, *obl.* 96/1000  
 toppe, *obl.*  
 stoppe, *inf.* 96/1001  
 -ore (*see* -oor)  
 afore, *adv.*  
 evermore, *adv.* 139/965  
 lore, *nom.* 196/266  
 more, *a. pl.* 139/964  
 therfore, *adv.* 139/967  
 alore (? afore)  
 more, *adv.* 4/78  
 before, *adv.*  
 before, *adv.* 25/661  
 core, *obj.* 205/506  
 evermore, *adv.* 26/711

lore, *nom.* 105/42  
 lore, *obl.* 26/712  
 more, *a. pl.* 189/60, 205/508  
 more, *adv.* 189/61  
 bore, *imper.*  
   store, 190/87  
 bore, *inf.*  
   bore, *obl.* 76/416  
   therefore, *adv.* 195/245  
 bore, *obl.*  
   bore, *inf.* 76/414  
 bore, *obj.*  
   \*hoor, *adv.* 98/1053  
 core, *obj.*  
   before, *adv.* 205/509  
   fore, *adv.* 95/971  
   more, *a. sing.* 95/970  
   more, *a. pl.* 205/508  
 evermore, *adv.*  
   afore, *adv.* 139/962  
   before, *adv.* 26/709  
   lore, *obl.* 26/712  
   more, *a. pl.* 139/964  
   sore, *adv.* 106/74  
   therefore, *adv.* 139/967  
   tore, *pp.* 106/75  
 fore, *adv.*  
   core, *obj.* 95/968  
   more, *a. sing.* 95/970  
 lore, *nom.*  
   afore, *adv.* 196/265  
   before, *adv.* 105/41  
   more, *a. sing.* 88/755  
 lore, *obl.*  
   before, *adv.* 26/709  
   evermore, *adv.* 26/711  
 more, *adv.*  
   alore (? afore), 4/80  
   before, *adv.* 189/58  
   more, *a. pl.* 189/60  
 more, *a. sing.*  
   core, *obj.* 95/968  
   fore, *adv.* 95/971  
   lore, *nom.* 88/756  
   sore, *a. pl.* 23/604  
   therefore, *adv.* 23/606

more, *a. pl.*  
   afore, *adv.* 139/962  
   before, *adv.* 189/58, 205/509  
   core, *obj.* 205/506  
   evermore, *adv.* 139/965  
   more, *adv.* 189/61  
   therefore, *adv.* 139/967  
 seore, *inf.*  
   therefore, *adv.* 153/118  
 sore, *a. pl.*  
   more, *a. sing.* 23/607  
   therefore, *adv.* 23/606  
 sore, *adv.*  
   evermore, *adv.* 106/72  
   tore, *pp.* 106/75  
 store, *obj.*  
   bore, *imper.* 190/85  
 therefore, *adv.*  
   bore, *inf.* 195/244  
   seore, *inf.* 153/119  
 therefore, *prep.*  
   afore, *adv.* 139/962  
   evermore, *adv.* 139/965  
   more, *a. sing.* 23/607  
   more, *a. pl.* 139/964  
   sore, *a. pl.* 23/604  
 tore, *pp.*  
   evermore, *adv.* 106/72  
   sore, *adv.* 106/74

## -ored

bored, *pp.*  
   scored, *pp.* 126/626  
 scored, *pp.*  
   bored, *pp.* 126/624

## -orgh

forgh, *obj.*  
   thorgh, *prep.* 150/36  
 thorgh, *prep.*  
   forgh, *obj.* 150/38

## -orle (see -urle)

thorle, *imper.*  
   hurle, *inf.* 175/133

**-orme**forme, *obl.*

for me, 60/448

**-orme is** (*see -ormys*)

worme is

wormys, *n. pl.* 138/945**-ormys** (*see -orme is*)wormys, *n. pl.*

worme is, 138/946

**-orn** (*see -orne*)aforne, *adv.*born, *pp.* 162/116lorn, *pp.* 162/117scorn, *nom.* 32/868beforn, *adv.*lorn, *pp.* 29/796thorn, *obl.* 29/793upborn, *pp.* 206/538born, *pp.*aforne, *adv.* 162/114lorn, *pp.* 162/117lorn, *pp.*aforne, *adv.* 162/114beforn, *adv.* 29/795born, *pp.* 162/116thorn, *obl.* 29/793scorn, *nom.*aforne, *adv.* 32/867thorn, *obl.*beforn, *adv.* 29/795lorn, *pp.* 29/796upborn, *pp.*\*aforne, *adv.* 148/220beforn, *adv.* 206/539\*borne, *pp.* 148/222**-orne** (*see -orn, -ourne, -urne*)aforne, *adv.*borne, *pp.* 49/138, 74/734, 148/  
222thorne, *obl.* 148/223torne, *pp.* 49/137\*upborn, *pp.* 148/225beforne, *adv.*corne, *obj.* 25/660corne, *obl.* 99/1079lorne, *pp.* 25/663, 140/13thorne, *obl.* 81/571torne, *pp.* 81/572, 161/81ylorne, *pp.* 161/182yshorne, *pp.* 140/12borne, *inf.*corne, *obj.* 37/996lorne, *pp.* 37/999borne, *pp.*aforne, *adv.* 49/135, 74/372,  
148/220corne, *obl.* 68/198lorne, *pp.* 68/201thorne, *obl.* 148/223\*torn, *pp.* 49/137\*upborn, *pp.* 148/225corne, *obl.*beforne, *adv.* 99/1081borne, *pp.* 68/200lorne, *pp.* 7/162, 68/201corne, *obj.*beforne, *adv.* 25/663borne, *inf.* 37/998lorne, *pp.* 25/662, 37/999lorne, *pp.*beforne, *adv.* 25/663, 140/10borne, *inf.* 37/998borne, *pp.* 68/200corne, *obj.* 25/660, 37/996corne, *obl.* 7/164, 68/198yshorne, *pp.* 140/12scorne, *n. pl.*turne, *inf.* 154/146thorne, *obl.*aforne, *adv.* 148/220beforne, *adv.* 81/569borne, *pp.* 148/222torne, *pp.* 81/572\*upborn, *pp.* 148/225torne, *pp.*aforne, *adv.* 49/135beforne, *adv.* 81/569, 161/79borne, *pp.* 49/138



thorne, *obl.* 81/571  
 ylorne, *pp.* 161/82  
 yorne, *adv.*  
   tourne, 17/448  
 ylorne, *pp.*  
   beforne, *adv.* 161/79  
   torne, *pp.* 161/81  
 yshorne, *pp.*  
   beforne, *adv.* 140/10  
   lorne, *pp.* 140/13  
  
   -orne is (*see* -ornys)  
 borne is  
   hornys, *n. pl.* 125/597  
   horne is, 125/600  
 corne is  
   bifornys, 159/43  
 horne is  
   hornys, *n. pl.* 125/597  
   borne is, 125/599  
  
   -ornes  
 bycornes, *n. pl.*  
   thornes, *n. pl.* 42/1162  
 thornes, *n. pl.*  
   bycornes, *n. pl.* 42/1161  
  
   -ornys (*see* -orne is)  
 bifornys, *adv.*  
   corne is, 159/45  
 hornys, *n. pl.*  
   borne is, 125/599  
   horne is, 125/600  
  
   -ose (*see* -oos)  
 chose, *pp.*  
   dispose, *inf.* 78/492  
   pose, *obj.* 78/495  
 close, *imper.*  
   disclose, *inf.* 56/331  
   repose, *imper.* 56/334  
 close, *inf.*  
   unclose, *inf.* 157/218  
 complose, *pp.*  
   nebulose, *a. sing.* 175/114  
   ose, *subj.* 175/116

dispose, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   \*encloos, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 89/799  
 dispose, *imper.*  
   rose, *obl.* 156/204, 203/456  
 dispose, *inf.*  
   chose, *pp.* 78/494  
   close, *imper.* 56/333  
   pose, *obj.* 78/495  
   repose, *imper.* 56/334  
 lapidose, *a. pl.*  
   vermyculose, *a. sing.* 215/227  
 nebulose, *a. sing.*  
   complose, *pp.* 175/117  
   ose, *inf.* 175/116  
 oilderose, *obj.*  
   rose, *obl.* 156/211  
 ose, *inf.*  
   complose, *pp.* 175/117  
   nebulose, *a. sing.* 175/114  
 pose, *obj.*  
   chose, *pp.* 78/494  
   dispose, *inf.* 78/492  
 repose, *imper.*  
   close, *imper.* 56/333  
   disclose, *inf.* 56/331  
 rose, *obl.*  
   dispose, *imper.* 156/206, 203/  
   458  
   oilderose, *obj.* 156/213  
 unclose, *inf.*  
   close, *inf.* 157/220  
 vermyculose, *a. sing.*  
   lapidose, *a. pl.* 215/225  
  
   -oste  
 coste, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
   thoste, *obj.* 39/1077  
 thoste, *obj.*  
   coste, *v. 3 s. pres.* 39/1078  
  
   -ote (*see* -oote)  
 dote, *inf.*  
   rote, *inf.* 28/750  
 frote, *imper.*  
   rote, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 33/886  
   throthe, *obl.* 132/767

remote, *a. sing.*

boote, *nom.* 55/312, 150/44

roote, *obl.* 55/310, 150/46

rote, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

frote, *imper.* 33/883

rote, *inf.*

boote, *nom.* 212/138

dote, *inf.* 28/752

roote, *obl.* 212/135

throthe, *obl.*

frote, *imper.* 132/765

wrote, *v. 1 s. pres.*

foothoote, *obl.* 52/228

hoote, *obl.* 52/226

wrote, *imper.*

roote, *obl.* 77/443

soote, *a. sing.* 77/446

wrote, *inf.*

foote, *obl.* 30/800

roote, *nom.* 30/803

ymmote, *imper.*

boote, *obj.* 108/110

roote, *obl.* 108/107

-ote is (*see* -ootes)

bote is

rootes, *n. pl.* 34/937

-oth

broth, *obj.*

seefroth, *nom.* 116/335

seefroth, *nom.*

broth, *obj.* 116/336

-othe

bothe, *adv.*

unclothe, *inf.* 167/90

bothe, *a. pl.*

lothe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 83/612

lothe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

bothe, *a. pl.* 83/610

unclothe, *inf.*

bothe, *adv.* 167/91

-other

Brother, *nom.*

other, *pron.* 117/384

brother, *obj.*

other, *pron.* 154/153, 210/104

other, *pron.*

Brother, *nom.* 117/385

brother, *obj.* 154/154, 210/105

-oubte (*see* -oute)

doubte, *obj.*

route, *obl.* 52/222

stoute, *a. pl.* 52/221

-ouell (*see* -oule)

shouell, *obj.*

\*defoule, *imper.* 31/838

\*oule, *obj.* 31/835

-ough

bough, *nom.*

plough, *obl.* 182/95

ynough, *adv.* 182/96

bough, *obj.*

slough, *obl.* 125/605

bough, *obl.*

ynough, *adv.* 75/413, 144/127

frough, *a. sing.*

tough, *adv.* 85/672

plough, *obl.*

bough, *nom.* 182/93

sough, *obl.* 19/515

tough, *a. sing.* 45/23, 50/173

ynough, *adv.* 19/516, 45/25,

50/170, 182/96

sough, *obl.*

plough, *obl.* 19/513

ynough, *adv.* 19/516

slough, *obl.*

bough, *obj.* 125/603

tough, *a. sing.*

plough, *obl.* 45/26, 50/172

ynough, *adv.* 45/25, 50/170

tough, *adv.*

frough, *a. sing.* 85/671

yo, *adv.* 15/402

ynough, *adv.*

bough, *nom.* 182/93

bough, *obl.* 75/412, 144/126

plough, *obl.* 19/513, 45/26, 50/172, 182/95

sough, *obl.* 19/515

tough, *a. sing.* 45/23, 50/173

### -ought

besought, *pp.*

wrought, *pp.* 41/1107

bethought, *pp.*

brought, *pp.* 40/1083

wrought, *pp.* 40/1082

bought, *pp.*

nought, *obl.* 128/689

brought, *pp.*

bethought, *pp.* 40/1080

nought, *nom.* 26/696

sought, *pp.* 87/740

wrought, *pp.* 40/1082, 87/739

nought, *nom.*

brought, *pp.* 26/694

nought, *obl.*

bought, *pp.* 128/687

sought, *pp.* 88/766

wrought, *pp.* 49/155

sought, *pp.*

brought, *pp.* 87/737

nought, *obl.* 88/764

wrought, *pp.* 87/739

ywrought, *pp.* 82/589

wrought, *pp.*

besought, *pp.* 41/1109

bethought, *pp.* 40/1080

brought, *pp.* 40/1083, 87/737

nought, *obl.* 49/157

sought, *pp.* 87/740

ywrought, *pp.*

sought, *pp.* 82/591

### -oule (see -ouell)

defoule, *imper.*

oule, *obj.* 31/835

\*shouell, *obj.* 31/837

oule, *obj.*

\*shouell, *obj.* 31/837

defoule, *imper.* 31/838

### -oun (see -on, -oune)

castracioun, *nom.*

operacioun, *nom.* 162/115

correctioun, *obl.*

protectioun, *nom.* 139/936

emplastracioun, *obj.*

\*insicion, *obj.* 161/90

jubilacioun, *obj.*

salvacioun, *obj.* 139/968

operacioun, *nom.*

castracioun, *nom.* 162/113

protectioun, *nom.*

correctioun, *obl.* 139/961

salvacioun, *obj.*

jubilacioun, *obj.* 139/966

septemtrioun, *obl.*

\*doune, *adv.* 49/161

### -ounde (see -onde, -unde)

abounde, *a. sing.*

rounde, *a. sing.* 98/1052

rounde, *a. pl.* 133/792

sounde, *a. pl.* 98/1055

abounde, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

fecounde, *a. pl.* 219/332

fecounde, *a. pl.* 86/707

\*infecounde, *a. pl.* 25/667

rounde, *a. pl.* 25/670

rounde, *adv.* 104/10

abounde, *subj.*

fecounde, *a. sing.* 4/77

wounde, *obl.* 188/49

abounde, *inf.*

enrounde, *inf.* 147/209

fecounde, *a. pl.* 63/57, 71/285

founde, *pp.* 173/68

grounde, *obl.* 73/341, 147/208,

165/37, 173/65

infounde, *imper.* 220/363

rounde, *a. sing.* 165/39, 203/454

secounde, *a. sing.* 71/282, 73/

340, 93/911

- bounde, *pp.*  
   grounde, *pp.* 163/137  
   infounde, *imper.* 163/138  
 confounde, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
   grounde, *obl.* 107/86  
   wounde, *obl.* 107/88  
 confounde, *subj.*  
   grounde, *obl.* 51/1132  
   ygrounde, *pp.* 41/1129  
 confounde, *inf.*  
   grounde, *pp.* 90/813  
   grounde, *obl.* 73/335, 105/36  
 contounde, *imper.*  
   grounde, *pp.* 220/367  
 enrounde, *imper.*  
   grounde, *obl.* 56/344  
 enrounde, *inf.*  
   abounde, *inf.* 147/206  
   grounde, *obl.* 147/208  
   grounde, *pp.* 22/593  
   pounde, *n. pl.* 145/147  
   wounde, *obl.* 22/592  
 fecounde, *a. sing.*  
   abounde, *subj.* 4/76  
 fecounde, *a. pl.*  
   abounde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 86/706  
   abounde, *imper.* 63/59  
   abounde, *inf.* 71/284  
   infounde, *imper.* 97/1021, 122/  
   510  
   secounde, *a. sing.* 71/282  
 founde, *imper.*  
   grounde, *pp.* 42/1135  
 founde, *pp.*  
   abounde, *inf.* 173/67  
   fecounde, *inf.* 71/275  
   grounde, *pp.* 36/981  
   grounde, *obl.* 89/790, 153/115,  
   173/65, 210/90  
   wounde, *obj.* 71/278  
 grounde, *pp.*  
   bounde, *pp.* 163/135  
   confounde, *inf.* 90/815  
   contounde, *imper.* 220/365  
   enrounde, *inf.* 22/590  
   founde, *imper.* 42/1137  
   founde, *pp.* 36/983  
   infounde, *imper.* 163/138, 205/  
   518  
   secounde, *a. sing.* 205/511  
   wounde, *obl.* 22/592  
 grounde, *obl.*  
   abounde, *inf.* 73/338, 147/206,  
   165/40, 173/67  
   confounde, *v. 3 s. pres.* 107/89  
   confounde, *subj.* 41/1131  
   confounde, *inf.* 73/336, 105/38  
   enrounde, *imper.* 56/346  
   enrounde, *inf.* 147/209  
   founde, *pp.* 89/791, 153/113,  
   173/68, 210/91  
   grounde, *obl.* 34/917  
   rounde, *a. sing.* 70/264, 174/96  
   rounde, *adv.* 69/230, 165/39  
   secounde, *a. sing.* 73/340  
   stounde, *obl.* 180/44  
   unbounde, *adv.* 158/21  
   wounde, *obj.* 70/263  
   wounde, *obl.* 70/258, 102/1154,  
   107/88  
   ygrounde, *pp.* 41/1129, 174/95,  
   180/47  
   ywounde, *pp.* 68/216  
 infounde, *imper.*  
   abounde, *inf.* 220/364  
   bounde, *pp.* 163/135  
   fecounde, *a. pl.* 97/1022, 122/511  
   grounde, *pp.* 163/137  
 infounde, *inf.*  
   grounde, *pp.* 205/517  
   sounde, *a. pl.* 211/112  
 jocounde, *a. sing.*  
   redounde, *inf.* 205/504  
 pounde, *n. pl.*  
   enfounde, *inf.* 145/148  
 pounde, *obj.*  
   sounde, *adv.* 183/122  
 pounde, *obl.*  
   sounde, 118/413  
 redounde, *inf.*  
   jocounde, *a. sing.* 205/503  
 rounde, *a. sing.*  
   abounde, *a. sing.* 98/1054  
   abounde, *inf.* 203/455

- grounde, *obl.* 70/261, 174/93  
 sounde, *a. pl.* 98/1055  
 wounde, *obj.* 70/263  
 ygrounde, *pp.* 174/95  
 rounde, *a. pl.*  
   abounde, *a. sing.* 133/791  
   abounde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 25/669  
   \*infecunde, *a. pl.* 25/667  
 rounde, *adv.*  
   abounde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 104/8  
   abounde, *inf.* 165/40  
   grounde, *obl.* 69/231, 165/37  
 secounde, *a. sing.*  
   abounde, *inf.* 71/284, 73/338,  
   93/913  
   fecounde, *a. pl.* 71/285  
   grounde, *obl.* 73/341  
 sounde, *a. pl.*  
   abounde, *a. sing.* 98/1054  
   infounde, *inf.* 211/111  
   rounde, *a. sing.* 98/1052  
 sounde, *adv.*  
   pounde, *obl.* 118/412  
   pounde, *obj.* 183/120  
 stounde, *obl.*  
   grounde, *obl.* 180/46  
   ygrounde, *pp.* 180/47  
 unbounde, *adv.*  
   grounde, *obl.* 158/20  
 wounde, *obj.*  
   feconde, *inf.* 71/275  
   founde, *pp.* 71/277  
   grounde, *obl.* 70/261  
   rounde, *a. sing.* 70/264  
   yfounde, *pp.* 153/126  
 wounde, *obl.*  
   abounde, *subj.* 188/48  
   confounde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 107/  
   89  
   enrounde, *inf.* 22/590  
   grounde, *pp.* 22/593  
   grounde, *obl.* 70/259, 102/1155,  
   107/86  
 yfounde, *pp.*  
   wounde, *obj.* 153/125
- ygrounde, *pp.*  
   confounde, *subj.* 41/1131  
   grounde, *obl.* 41/1132, 174/93,  
   180/46  
   rounde, *a. sing.* 174/96  
   stounde, *obl.* 180/44  
 ywounde, *pp.*  
   grounde, *obl.* 68/217  
   -oune (*see* -onne, -oun)  
 doune, *adv.*  
   \*septemtrioun, *obl.* 49/160  
 umviroune, *pp.*  
   \*sonne, *obl.* 13/326  
   \*conne, *subj.* 13/327  
   -oung (*see* -oungge)  
 young, *a. pl.*  
   \*toungge, *obl.* 26/692  
   -oungge (*see* -oung)  
 doungge, *inf.*  
   sprongge, *pp.* 125/584 180/24,  
 doungge, *nom.*  
   yongge, *a. pl.* 28/759  
 doungge, *obj.*  
   amongge, *adv.* 107/100  
   flongge, *pp.* 179/11  
   longge, *a. sing.* 192/134  
   strongge, *a. pl.* 107/102  
   wrongge, *obj.* 179/12  
   wrongge, *pp.* 50/185  
 doungge, *obl.*  
   amongge, *prep.* 67/164  
   clongge, *a. sing.* 55/319  
   longge, *obl.* 195/238  
   longge, *inf.* 87/745  
   longge, *a. sing.* 94/927, 96/994,  
   115/310, 138/949  
   longge, *a. pl.* 84/662  
   longge, *adv.* 55/320, 116/332  
   strongge, *a. sing.* 51/201, 51/215  
   umbiyongge, *v. 3 pl. sing.* 51/214  
   umbiyongge, *inf.* 119/437  
   wrongge, *adv.* 115/312  
   yongge, *a. sing.* 214/196

yonge, *a. pl.* 51/200, 84/663  
 yspronge, *pp.* 191/118  
 strounge, *a. sing.*  
 dounge, *obl.* 51/198, 51/212  
 umbiyonge, *v. 3 s. pres.* 51/214  
 yonge, *a. pl.* 51/200

## -ount

grount, *obl.*  
 sount, *a. sing.* 176/154  
 sount, *a. sing.*  
 grount, *obl.* 176/153

## -our

flour, *obj.*  
 humour, *obl.* 191/129  
 flour, *obl.*  
 licour, *obl.* 33/897  
 humour, *obl.*  
 flour, *obj.* 191/127  
 licour, *obl.*  
 flour, *obl.* 33/899

## -oure

beshoure, *subj.*  
 floure, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 149/9  
 heure, *nom.* 149/11  
 coloure, *nom.*  
 socoure, *inf.* 91/836  
 coloure, *obl.*  
 soure, *a. pl.* 128/682  
 Floure, *nom.*  
 honoure, *nom.* 163/148  
 floure, *obj.*  
 floure, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 152/78  
 floure, *obl.*  
 heure, *nom.* 81/568  
 floure, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 beshoure, *subj.* 149/12  
 floure, *obj.* 152/80  
 honoure, *obl.* 54/298  
 heure, *nom.* 149/11  
 socoure, *imper.* 54/299  
 heure, *nom.*  
 beshoure, *subj.* 149/12  
 floure, *obl.* 81/570  
 floure, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 149/9

heure, *obl.*  
 laboure, *obl.* 1/14  
 licoure, *obl.* 178/200  
 soure, *a. sing.* 178/198  
 honoure, *nom.*  
 floure, *nom.* 163/150  
 honoure, *obl.*  
 floure, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 54/296  
 socoure, *imper.* 54/299  
 laboure, *obl.*  
 heure, *obl.* 1/13  
 licoure, *obl.*  
 heure, *obl.* 178/201  
 soure, *a. sing.* 178/198  
 myrroure, *obl.*  
 socoure, *imper.* 36/978  
 terroure, *obj.* 36/977  
 odoure, *obl.*  
 socoure, *inf.* 138/948  
 soure, *a. pl.* 138/950  
 soure, *a. sing.*  
 heure, *obl.* 178/201  
 licoure, *obl.* 178/200  
 soure, *a. pl.*  
 odoure, *obl.* 138/951  
 socoure, *inf.* 138/948  
 socoure, *imper.*  
 ' floure, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 54/296  
 honoure, *obl.* 54/298  
 myrroure, *obl.* 36/975  
 terroure, *obj.* 36/977  
 socoure, *inf.*  
 coloure, *nom.* 91/834  
 odoure, *obl.* 138/951  
 soure, *a. pl.* 138/950  
 soure, *a. pl.*  
 coloure, *obl.* 128/680  
 terroure, *obj.*  
 myrroure, *obl.* 36/975  
 socoure, *imper.* 36/978

## -oured

coloured, *pp.*  
 disclosed, *pp.* 134/816  
 socoured, *pp.* 197/280  
 disclosed, *pp.*  
 coloured, *pp.* 134/814



socoured, *pp.*

coloured, *pp.* 197/279

-oure is (*see* -oures)

floure is

floures, *n. pl.* 37/1017

socoure is,<sup>1</sup> 37/1019

honoure is

houres, *n. pl.* 10/244

socoure is<sup>1</sup>

floures, *n. pl.* 37/1017

floure is, 37/1020

-oures (*see* -oure is)

floures, *n. pl.*

socoure is,<sup>1</sup> 37/1019

floure is, 37/1020

houres, *n. pl.*

honoure is, 10/245

-ourme

confourme, *imper.*

fourme, *nom.* 157/231

fourme, *nom.*

confourme, *imper.* 157/230

fourme, *imper.*

refourme, *inf.* 83/637

refourme, *inf.*

fourme, *imper.* 83/636

-ourmed

confourmed, *pp.*

fourmed, *pp.* 121/482

fourmed, *pp.*

confourmed, *pp.* 121/483

-ourne (*see* -orne)

tourne

yorne, *adv.* 17/447

-ous

argillous, *a. sing.*

glareous, *a. sing.* 121/497

glareous, *a. sing.*

argillous, *a. sing.* 121/496

-oute (*see* -oubte)

aboute, *adv.*

aroute, *adv.* 94/944

doute, *nom.* 30/805, 36/973,  
76/420

doute, *obl.* 116/353

doute, *inf.* 55/302

oute, *adv.* 31/852

route, *obj.* 31/851

spoute, *inf.* 40/1097

stoute, *a. pl.* 23/630

withoute, *adv.* 33/888, 74/367,  
92/869

withoute, *prep.* 40/1094

aboute, *prep.*

oute, *adv.* 83/623

aroute, *adv.*

aboute, *adv.* 94/945

doute, *nom.*

aboute, *adv.* 30/804, 36/972,  
-76/419

oute, *adv.* 156/209

doute, *obl.*

aboute, *adv.* 116/351

doute, *inf.*

aboute, *adv.* 55/304

oute, *adv.*

aboute, *adv.* 31/849

aboute, *prep.* 83/622

doute, *nom.* 156/210

route, *obj.* 31/851

route, *obj.*

aboute, *adv.* 31/849

oute, *adv.* 31/852

route, *obl.*

doubte, *obj.* 52/219

stoute, *a. pl.* 52/221

spoute, *inf.*

aboute, *adv.* 40/1096

withoute, *prep.* 40/1094

stoute, *a. pl.*

aboute, *adv.* 23/629

doute, *obj.* 52/219

route, *obl.* 52/222

<sup>1</sup> Printed second is.

withoute, *adv.*

aboute, *adv.* 33/889, 74/36, 92/  
871

withoute, *prep.*

aboute, *adv.* 40/1096  
spoute, *inf.* 40/1097

-outh

mouth, *obl.*

south, *obl.* 209/62

south, *obj.*

mouth, *obl.* 209/63

-outhe

couthe, *a. pl.*

mouthe, *obj.* 39/1062

southe, *obl.* 39/1059

mouthe, *obj.*

couthe, *a. pl.* 39/1061

southe, *obl.* 39/1059

southe, *obl.*

couthe, *a. pl.* 39/1061

mouthe, *obj.* 39/1062

-ove

above, *adv.*

love, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 8/197, 56/  
337, 83/611, 165/29

remove, *inf.* 83/614

hove, *inf.*

shove, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 36/976

love, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

above, 8/199, 56/339, 83/613,  
165/31

remove, *inf.* 83/614

remove, *inf.*

above, *adv.* 83/613

love, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 83/611

shove, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

hove, *inf.* 36/974

-oved

admoved, *pp.*

moved, *pp.* 11/274

moved, *pp.*

admoved, *pp.* 11/276

-oves

droves, *obj.*

groves, *n. pl.* 134/827

groves, *n. pl.*

droves, *obj.* 134/826

-owe

alowe, *imper.*

growe, *inf.* 71/281

avowe, *inf.*

overflowe, *inf.* 42/1143

plowe, *inf.* 42/1146

bestowe, *imper.*

growe, *inf.* 45/39

lowe, *adv.* 160/68

sowe, *inf.* 45/37, 209/71

sowe, *pp.* 160/65

blowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

slowe, *a. pl.* 82/607

sowe, *inf.* 82/604

blowe, *subj.*

sowe, *pp.* 187/1

bowe, *obl.*

growe, *inf.* 76/424

trowe, *inf.* 76/425

enowe, *adv.*

growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 6/128

mowe, *subj.* 6/131

flowe, *inf.*

growe, *v. 3 s. pres.* 195/223

growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

enowe, *adv.* 6/130

flowe, *inf.* 195/224

knowe, *inf.* 80/530

mowe, *subj.* 6/131

sowe, *imper.* 80/538, 193/186

sowe, *inf.* 10/260, 80/527, 80/  
545, 114/286, 165/32

sowe, *pp.* 81/576, 122/503, 187/  
10, 193/185

stowe, *inf.* 165/33

throwe, *imper.* 85/689

throwe, *inf.* 81/579

ynowe, *adv.* 130/729

growe, *subj.*

lowe, *adv.* 108/130

sowe, *inf.* 114/295

sowe, *pp.* 108/128  
 ynowe, *adv.* 23/617  
 growe, *inf.*  
 alowe, *imper.* 71/283  
 bestowe, *imper.* 45/40  
 bowe, *obl.* 76/422  
 knowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 7/166  
 lowe, *adv.* 141/37, 183/107,  
 212/153  
 mowe, *subj.* 51/199  
 overthrowe, *subj.* 149/20  
 owe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 149/5  
 plowe, *imper.* 217/281  
 plowe, *inf.* 45/22  
 rowe, *nom.* 168/111  
 sowe, *v. 3. pl. pres.* 97/1029  
 sowe, *imper.* 80/547, 84/657  
 sowe, *subj.* 62/48  
 sowe, *inf.* 45/37, 110/174, 140/9,  
 142/59, 213/186, 216/267  
 sowe, *pp.* 7/163, 62/22, 79/510,  
 84/646, 106/50, 106/63, 114/  
 280, 128/686, 143/101, 149/  
 2, 165/27, 172/29, 181/67,  
 184/135, 187/15, 213/176  
 strowe, *imper.* 213/187  
 throwe, *imper.* 143/90, 143/104,  
 180/43  
 throwe, *pp.* 142/61, 181/68,  
 183/109, 184/138, 192/151  
 trowe, *inf.* 76/425  
 ysowe, *pp.* 54/286, 86/699, 120/  
 456, 143/87, 184/155, 192/  
 149  
 ythrowe, *imper.* 84/649  
 growe, *pp.*  
 overthrowe, *inf.* 164/10  
 ynowe, *adv.* 52/231  
 howe, *adv.*  
 nowe, *adv.* 98/1038, 106/64  
 prowē, *nom.* 98/1040  
 knowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 growe, *inf.* 7/165  
 sowe, *pp.* 7/163  
 knowe, *inf.*  
 growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 80/529  
 sowe, *inf.* 80/527

lowe, *adv.*  
 bestowe, *imper.* 160/67  
 growe, *subj.* 108/131  
 growe, *inf.* 141/39, 183/110,  
 212/154  
 sowe, *pp.* 108/128, 160/65  
 throwe, *pp.* 183/109  
 mowe, *subj.*  
 enowe, *adv.* 6/130  
 growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 6/128  
 growe, *inf.* 51/197  
 nowe, *adv.*  
 howe, *adv.* 98/1041, 106/66  
 prowē, *nom.* 98/1040  
 overblowe, *pp.*  
 sowe, *inf.* 30/306  
 overflowe, *inf.*  
 avowe, *inf.* 42/1145  
 plowe, *inf.* 42/1146  
 overgrowe, *pp.*  
 rowe, *a. sing.* 150/31  
 sowe, *inf.* 9/218  
 overthrowe, *subj.*  
 growe, *inf.* 149/21  
 overthrowe, *inf.*  
 growe, *pp.* 164/8  
 owe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 growe, *inf.* 149/4  
 sowe, *pp.* 149/2  
 plowe, *imper.*  
 growe, *inf.* 217/283  
 plowe, *inf.*  
 avowe, *inf.* 42/1145  
 growe, *inf.* 45/24  
 overflowe, *inf.* 42/1143  
 rowe, *a. pl.* 160/53  
 rowe, *inf.* 160/54  
 prowē, *nom.*  
 howe, *adv.* 98/1041  
 nowe, *adv.* 98/1038  
 rowe, *nom.*  
 growe, *inf.* 168/112  
 rowe, *a. sing.*  
 overgrowe, *pp.* 150/29  
 rowe, *a. pl.*  
 plowe, *inf.* 160/51  
 rowe, *inf.* 160/54

- rowe, *inf.*  
   plowe, *inf.* 160/51  
   rowe, *a. pl.* 160/53  
 sowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   growe, *inf.* 97/1028  
 sowe, *imper.*  
   growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 80/539,  
     193/183  
   growe, *inf.* 80/549, 84/658  
   sowe, *pp.* 193/185  
   throwe, *inf.* 180/36  
 sowe, *subj.*  
   growe, *inf.* 62/49  
 sowe, *inf.*  
   bestowe, *imper.* 45/40, 209/73  
   blowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 82/606  
   growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 10/262, 80/  
     529, 80/546, 114/287, 165/  
     30  
   growe, *subj.* 114/297  
   growe, *inf.* 45/39, 110/175, 140/  
     11, 142/62, 213/184, 216/269  
   knowe, *inf.* 80/530  
   overblowe, *pp.* 30/808  
   overgrowe, *pp.* 9/220  
   slowe, *a. pl.* 82/607  
   strowe, *imper.* 213/187  
   throwe, *inf.* 7/175  
   throwe, *pp.* 142/61, 179/20  
 sowe, *pp.*  
   bestowe, *imper.* 160/67  
   blowe, *subj.* 187/3  
   growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 122/504,  
     165/30, 187/8, 193/183, 81/  
     578  
   growe, *subj.* 108/131  
   growe, *inf.* 7/165, 62/24, 79/511,  
     84/648, 106/52, 106/62, 114/  
     279, 128/685, 143/103, 149/  
     4, 165/28, 172/31, 181/65,  
     184/137, 187/17, 213/178  
   knowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 7/166  
   lowe, *adv.* 108/130, 166/68  
   owe, *v. 3 pr. pl.* 149/5  
   sowe, *imper.* 193/186  
   sowe, *inf.* 165/32  
   strowe, *inf.* 207/3  
   throwe, *imper.* 143/104, 179/  
     10  
   throwe, *inf.* 45/45, 81/579, 184/  
     143  
   throwe, *pp.* 181/68, 184/134,  
     191/126  
   ungrowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 98/  
     1046  
   ythrowe, *imper.* 84/649  
 slowe, *a. pl.*  
   blowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 82/606  
   sowe, *inf.* 82/604  
 strowe, *imper.*  
   growe, *inf.* 213/184  
   sowe, *inf.* 213/186  
 strowe, *inf.*  
   sowe, *pp.* 207/1  
 throwe, *imper.*  
   growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 85/687  
   growe, *inf.* 143/89, 143/103,  
     180/45  
   sowe, *pp.* 143/101, 179/8  
   ysowe, *pp.* 148/87  
 throwe, *inf.*  
   growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 81/578  
   sowe, *imper.* 180/38  
   sowe, *inf.* 7/155  
   sowe, *pp.* 45/43, 81/576, 184/  
     141  
 throwe, *pp.*  
   growe, *inf.* 142/62, 181/65, 183/  
     110, 184/137, 192/152  
   lowe, *adv.* 183/107  
   sowe, *inf.* 142/59, 179/21  
   sowe, *pp.* 181/67, 184/135, 191/  
     125  
   ysowe, *pp.* 192/149  
 trowe, *inf.*  
   bowe, *obl.* 76/422  
   growe, *inf.* 76/424  
 ungrowe, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   sowe, *pp.* 98/1044  
 ynowe, *adv.*  
   growe, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 130/728  
   growe, *subj.* 23/619  
   growe, *pp.* 52/230

ysowe, *pp.*  
 growe, *inf.* 54/287, 86/700, 120/  
 458, 143/89, 184/157, 192/  
 152  
 throwe, *imper.* 143/90  
 throwe, *pp.* 192/151  
 ythrowe, *imper.*  
 growe, *inf.* 84/648  
 sowe, *pp.* 84/646

**-owed**

allowed, *pp.*  
 plowed, *pp.* 47/83  
 plowed, *pp.*  
 allowed, *pp.* 47/84

**-oweth**

soweth, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
 throweth, *v. 3 s. pres.* 32/855  
 throweth, *v. 3 s. pres.*  
 soweth, *v. 3 s. pres.* 32/857

**-u (see -eu)**

superflu, *a. pl.*  
 greu, *v. 3 pl. pt.* 168/119

**-uce**

juce, *obl.*  
 letuce, *obl.* 51/204  
 letuce, *obl.*  
 juce, *obl.* 51/206

**-ucke**

crucke, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 plucke, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 51/209  
 plucke, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 crucke, 51/210

**-ude**

altitude, *obl.*  
 longitude, *obj.* 167/80  
 conclude, *subj.*  
 rude, *a. pl.* 176/146  
 conclude, *inf.*  
 latitude, *obl.* 176/135  
 rude, *a. pl.* 176/137  
 crassitude, *obl.*  
 longitude, *obj.* 119/431  
 rude, *a. pl.* 119/432

delude, *subj.*  
 multitude, *nom.* 147/203  
 disclude, *inf.*  
 magnitude, *obl.* 152/83  
 enclude, *imper.*  
 latitude, *obl.* 174/92  
 magnitude, *obl.* 39/1066  
 reclude, *imper.* 39/1069  
 enclude, *inf.*  
 exclude, *inf.* 95/966  
 magnitude, *obl.* 117/358, 161/80  
 teneritude, *nom.* 154/157  
 exclude, *imper.*  
 magnitude, *nom.* 134/815  
 similitude, *obl.* 134/818  
 exclude, *inf.*  
 enclude, *inf.* 95/965  
 include, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 102/1145  
 similitude, *obj.* 102/1143  
 include, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 exclude, *inf.* 102/1146  
 similitude, *obj.* 102/1143  
 latitude, *obl.*  
 conclude, *inf.* 176/138  
 enclude, *imper.* 174/94  
 rude, *a. pl.* 176/137  
 longitude, *obl.*  
 altitude, *obl.* 167/78  
 crassitude, *obl.* 119/429  
 rude, *a. pl.* 119/432  
 magnitude, *nom.*  
 exclude, *imper.* 134/817  
 similitude, *obl.* 134/818  
 magnitude, *obl.*  
 enclude, *imper.* 39/1068  
 enclude, *inf.* 117/360, 161/78  
 reclude, *imper.* 39/1069  
 magnitude, *obj.*  
 disclude, *inf.* 152/84  
 multitude, *nom.*  
 delude, *subj.* 147/204  
 reclude, *imper.*  
 enclude, *imper.* 39/1068  
 magnitude, *obl.* 39/1066  
 rude, *a. pl.*  
 conclude, *subj.* 176/147  
 conclude, *inf.* 176/138

crassitude, *obl.* 119/429  
 latitude, *obl.* 176/135  
 longitude, *obj.* 119/431  
 similitude, *obl.*  
 exclude, *imper.* 134/817  
 magnitude, *nom.* 134/815  
 similitude, *obj.*  
 exclude, *inf.* 102/1146  
 include, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 102/1145  
 teneritude, *nom.*  
 enclude, *inf.* 154/155

-ue (*see* -ewe)

pursue, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 eschewe, *inf.* 34/923

## -ued

hued, *pp.*  
 hued, *pp.* 133/808, 133/811  
 skued, *pp.* 133/810  
 skued, *pp.*  
 hued, *pp.* 133/808, 133/811

## -uge

huge, *adv.*  
 ruge, *n. pl.* 130/704  
 ruge, *n. pl.*  
 huge, *adv.* 130/702

-ulle (*see* -ole, -olle)

fulle, *a. pl.*  
 wolle, *subj.* 29/1067  
 fulle, *adv.*  
 pulle, *inf.* 93/896  
 wolle, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 167/82  
 wolle, *obl.* 57/373, 167/79  
 wolle, *obj.* 154/139  
 wolle, *subj.* 57/375  
 pulle, *inf.*  
 fulle, *adv.* 93/895  
 wolle, *subj.* 53/251

## -uls

huls, *inf.*  
 puls, *obl.* 160/55  
 puls, *obl.*  
 huls, *inf.* 160/56

## -ume

assume, *imper.*  
 consume, *subj.* 198/314  
 consume, *subj.*  
 assume, *imper.* 198/315

-umme (*see* -ome)

gumme, *obj.*  
 summe, *a. pl.* 215/244  
 humme, *subj.*  
 \*some, *nom.* 162/121  
 summe, *subj.* 162/123  
 summe, *subj.*  
 humme, *subj.* 162/124  
 \*some, *nom.* 162/121  
 summe, *a. pl.*  
 gumme, *obj.* 215/245

-unde (*see* -ounde)

infecunde, *a. pl.*  
 \*abounde, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 25/669  
 \*rounde, *a. pl.* 25/670

-under (*see* -onder)

under, *adv.*  
 asonder, *adv.* 11/269, 39/1058,  
 49/144, 53/272, 92/882, 144/  
 116  
 sonder, *adv.* 30/799  
 sonder, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 49/145  
 thonder, *subj.* 111/203

## -ure

admysure, *obl.*  
 cure, *obj.* 136/876  
 assure, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
 cure, *obj.* 146/188  
 pasture, *obl.* 146/187  
 assure, *inf.*  
 dure, *inf.* 95/947  
 geniture, *nom.* 136/889  
 mesure, *obl.* 9/212  
 sure, *a. sing.* 95/949  
 ure, *obl.* 9/215  
 culture, *obj.*  
 cure, *obj.* 84/654  
 nature, *obl.* 2/20  
 sure, *a. sing.* 124/577



- cure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 cure, *nom.* 198/311
- cure, *inf.*  
 lesure, *obl.* 134/825  
 nature, *obl.* 91/842, 134/822,  
 193/176  
 sure, *a. sing.* 212/136  
 sure, *a. pl.* 11/286  
 ure, *inf.* 91/845
- cure, *nom.*  
 cure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 198/309
- cure, *obl.*  
 endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 58/387  
 endure, *inf.* 87/730  
 lesure, *obl.* 87/733  
 mesure, *obl.* 21/558  
 obscure, *a. sing.* 21/555  
 sure, *a. sing.* 58/389
- cure, *obj.*  
 admyssure, *obl.* 136/875  
 assure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 146/185  
 culture, *obj.* 84/652  
 nature, *obl.* 5/106, 29/778  
 pasture, *obl.* 146/187  
 pure, *a. sing.* 190/97  
 pure, *a. pl.* 134/840  
 sure, *a. pl.* 120/449
- curvature, *nom.*  
 sure, *a. sing.* 208/35
- dure, *a. sing.*  
 thure, *obl.* 201/412
- dure, *inf.*  
 assure, *inf.* 95/950  
 pure, *a. sing.* 124/571  
 sure, *a. sing.* 95/949  
 sure, *a. pl.* 124/572
- dure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 impure, *a. sing.* 12/303  
 sure, *a. sing.* 12/305
- endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.*  
 cure, *obl.* 58/390  
 measure, *obj.* 55/326  
 pure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/327
- sure, *a. sing.* 58/389  
 sure, *a. pl.* 212/157
- endure, *subj.*  
 nature, *obl.* 3/44  
 pure, *a. pl.* 3/47
- endure, *inf.*  
 cure, *obl.* 87/732  
 feture, *obj.* 131/731, 166/70  
 lesure, *obl.* 87/733  
 mature, *a. sing.* 163/134  
 mesure, *obl.* 63/53  
 nature, *obj.* 63/51, 131/733  
 pure, *a. sing.* 37/995  
 pure, *a. pl.* 197/301  
 sure, *adv.* 122/525
- feture, *obj.*  
 endure, *inf.* 131/734  
 nature, *obl.* 131/733
- feture, *obl.*  
 endure, *inf.* 166/69
- geniture, *nom.*  
 assure, *inf.* 136/890
- impure, *a. sing.*  
 dure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 12/306  
 sure, *a. sing.* 12/305
- lesure, *obl.*  
 cure, *obl.* 87/732, 134/824  
 endure, *inf.* 87/730  
 nature, *nom.* 134/822
- mature, *a. sing.*  
 endure, *inf.* 163/136
- mature, *a. pl.*  
 pure,<sup>1</sup> *a. pl.* 90/830  
 sure, *a. pl.* 90/831
- mesure, *nom.*  
 sure, *a. pl.* 159/38
- mesure, *obj.*  
 endure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/324  
 pure, *v.* 3 *pl. pres.* 55/327  
 sure, *a. pl.* 178/192
- mesure, *obl.*  
 assure, *inf.* 9/214  
 cure, *obl.* 21/557  
 endure, *inf.* 63/54  
 mysseaventure, *nom.* 12/312

<sup>1</sup> Printed peres.

- nature, *obl.* 103/1171  
 nature, *obj.* 63/51  
 obscure, *a. sing.* 21/555  
 recure, *subj.* 12/313  
 undure, *obl.* 103/1174  
 ure, *obl.* 9/215  
 mysseaventure, *nom.*  
   *measure, obl.* 12/310  
   *recure, subj.* 12/313  
 nature, *nom.*  
   *cure, inf.* 134/824  
   *lesure, obl.* 134/825  
   *pure, inf.* 219/350  
   *sure, a. sing.* 197/294  
 nature, *obj.*  
   *endure, inf.* 63/54  
   *measure, obl.* 63/53  
   *sure, a. sing.* 200/374  
 nature, *obl.*  
   *culture, obj.* 2/21  
   *cure, obl.* 5/108, 29/780  
   *cure, inf.* 91/844, 193/178  
   *endure, subj.* 3/46  
   *endure, inf.* 131/734  
   *feture, obj.* 131/731  
   *measure, obl.* 103/1173  
   *pure, a. pl.* 3/47  
   *undure, obl.* 103/1174  
   *ure, inf.* 91/845  
 obscure, *a. sing.*  
   *cure, obl.* 21/557  
   *measure, obl.* 21/558  
   *sure, a. pl.* 186/196  
 pasture, *obl.*  
   *assure, v. 3 pl. pres.* 146/185  
   *cure, obj.* 146/188  
 pure, *a. sing.*  
   *cure, obj.* 190/98  
   *dure, inf.* 124/569  
   *endure, inf.* 37/997  
   *sure, a. pl.* 124/572  
 pure, *a. pl.*  
   *cure, obj.* 134/841  
   *endure, subj.* 3/46  
   *endure, inf.* 197/300  
 mature,<sup>1</sup> *a. pl.* 90/828  
 nature, *obl.* 3/44  
 sure,<sup>1</sup> *a. pl.* 90/831  
 pure, *v. 3 pl. pres.*  
   *endure, v. 3 pl. pres.* 55/324  
   *measure, obj.* 55/326  
 pure, *inf.*  
   *nature, nom.* 219/349  
   *ympure, a. sing.* 201/402  
 purpure, *a. sing.*  
   *sure, a. sing.* 133/806  
 recure, *subj.*  
   *measure, obl.* 12/310  
   *mysseaventure, nom.* 12/312  
 structure, *obl.*  
   *sure, a. sing.* 176/136  
 sure, *a. sing.*  
   *assure, inf.* 95/950  
   *culture, obj.* 124/575  
   *cure, obl.* 58/390  
   *cure, inf.* 212/134  
   *curvature, nom.* 208/34  
   *dure, v. 3 pl. pres.* 12/306  
   *dure, inf.* 95/947  
   *endure, v. 3 pl. pres.* 58/387  
   *impure, a. sing.* 12/303  
   *nature, nom.* 197/293  
   *nature, obj.* 200/372  
   *purpure, a. sing.* 133/805  
   *structure, obl.* 176/134  
 sure, *a. pl.*  
   *cure, obj.* 120/451  
   *cure, inf.* 11/287  
   *dure, inf.* 124/569  
   *endure, v. 3 pl. pres.* 212/155  
   *mature, a. pl.* 90/828  
   *measure, nom.* 159/36  
   *measure, obj.* 178/190  
   *obscure, a. sing.* 186/195  
   *pure, a. sing.* 124/571  
   *pure,<sup>1</sup> a. pl.* 90/830  
 sure, *adv.*  
   *endure, inf.* 122/524

<sup>1</sup> Printed peres.

thure, *obl.*

dure, *a. sing.* 201/413

undure, *obl.*

mesure, *obl.* 103/1173

nature, *obl.* 103/1171

ure, *obl.*

assure, *obl.* 9/214

mesure, *obl.* 9/212

ure, *inf.*

cure, *inf.* 91/844

nature, *obl.* 91/842

ympure, *a. sing.*

pure, *inf.* 201/400

**-ured**

endured, *pp.*

pured, *pp.* 220/360

pured, *pp.*

endured, *pp.* 220/358

**-urle (see -orle)**

hurle, *inf.*

thorle, *imper.* 175/132

**-urne (see -orne)**

turne, *inf.*

scorene, *n. pl.* 154/147

**-us**

Apuleius, *n. pr.*

thus, *adv.* 34/920

Radius, *n. pr.*

thus, *adv.* 77/459

us, *pron.* 77/460

thus, *adv.*

Apuleius, *n. pr.* 34/918

Radius, *nom. pr.* 77/457

us, *pron.* 77/460

us, *pron.*

Radius, *n. pr.* 77/457

thus, *adv.* 77/459

**-use**

excluse, *pp.*

refuse, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 217/277

use, *inf.* 217/275

excuse, *inf.*

excuse, *imper.* 215/229

refuse, *imper.* 215/228

excuse, *imper.*

excuse, *inf.* 215/226

refuse, *imper.* 215/228

infuse, *pp.*

use, *inf.* 198/322

recluse, *obj.*

use, *inf.* 218/307

refuse, *v. 3 pl. pres.*

excluse, *pp.* 217/278

use, *inf.* 217/275

refuse, *imper.*

excuse, *imper.* 215/229

excuse, *inf.* 215/226

refuse, *inf.*

use, *inf.* 201/398

use, *inf.*

excluse, *pp.* 217/278

infuse, *pp.* 198/321

recluse, *obj.* 218/308

refuse, *v. 3 pl. pres.* 217/277

refuse, *inf.* 201/399

**-used**

excused, *pp.*

used, *pp.* 16/421

used, *pp.*

excused, *pp.* 16/423

**-useth**

enfuseth, *v. 3 s. pres.*

useth, *v. 3 s. pres.* 181/50

useth, *v. 3 s. pres.*

enfuseth, *v. 3 s. pres.* 181/52

**-utte**

cutte, *imper.*

putte, *inf.* 56/353

putte, *inf.*

cutte, *imper.* 56/351

## NOTE ON THE RYME INDEX.

---

The Ryme Index to "Palladius on Husbondrie" here printed was originally begun by the late Rev. Barton Lodge, the Editor of the text. But little, however, was completed at the time of his death, and the work was then taken up by Mr. Henry Cromie, already well known for his Chaucer ryme index. Unfortunately, in the summer of last year, his health gave way, and he was in consequence compelled to give up literary work for a time, and the task was passed over to me. Mr. Cromie had, however, before his illness, prepared a considerable portion of the work for the press, and my share was proportionately lightened, being confined to the arranging of some of the later slips under their proper heads and the seeing the sheets through the press.

In carrying out the notice printed at the beginning of the ryme index as to incorrect or apparently incorrect rymes, the scribe's spelling was taken as the criterion. Experience, however, has convinced me that this was a mistake, for his extreme carelessness and his inconsistency in the use of the final *-e*<sup>1</sup> have completely spoilt many rymes

<sup>1</sup> At the same time it is only fair to the scribe to draw attention to Mr. Lodge's note at the beginning of the text, as it is quite possible that the curls or flourishes which he has disregarded in printing the text, may really have been "marks of contraction," and have represented, in some cases at least, a final *-e*. Moreover, it will be seen from Mr. Lodge's *Corrigenda* that the omission of the final *-e* is in many cases the fault of neither the author nor the scribe. The existence of this list of corrections was unfortunately not known to me until the greater number of the sheets of the Ryme Index had passed through the press, and its discovery necessitates some alterations in the Index which will be found pointed out at the end of Mr. Lodge's list.

which, as the author himself wrote them, were in all probability perfect. Most of these have been pointed out in the footnotes.

---

A few notes on Mr. Lodge's Introduction, etc., mainly by Mr. Henry Nicol, are here subjoined.

### INTRODUCTION.

Page xii. *Boon*, bones, is not an *-n* plural. *Eyon* is an *-n* plural, not an *-er-en*.

The instances cited of supposed plurals of nouns in *-e* appear to be all singulars; it is a point of syntax, not inflexion.

Page xiii. There is no omission of *of* in the phrases given; as Professor Zupitza has pointed out in Sir Guy; they are remains of the old genitive construction, of which numerous instances might be adduced.

Page xiv. Adjective with *-es* in the plural. This appears very doubtful; *clennes* is not the plural of *clean*, but the noun *cleanness*. See Chaucer, Prologue, 505; the *Catholicon Anglicum* gives "Clennes; *honestas, puritas*," etc. *Eschew* is itself a very good adjective; O. French *eschui*, "*Eschevé*; eschewed, shunned, avoided."—Cotgrave.

Page xv. *Bette* and *mo* are distinct from *better* and *more* in Old English.

Page xvii. *-liche* is not the original form of *-ly*; they are independent outcomes of *-lice*.

Page xviii. It is not that *to* has been "omitted before the infinitive," but *to* not inserted.

"*To* redundant before the imperative:" this seems doubtful, may it not be the intensitive use of the prefix *to*? See the note to 4/74.

Page xix. Nominative absolute. Is it the nominative? The first of the examples appears doubtful: "*lycoure shed*" may be the objective after the verb *up-drie*. In the fourth, *thaire* may, as elsewhere, mean *where*.

Mr. Lodge has entirely omitted to point out that the translator's English is full of Latin constructions; and that in consequence the word-order, etc., are frequently quite unnatural. A large proportion, too, of the words are Latin.

## NOTES.

Page 221 : 2/23. *Wholesome* was so spelt because people pronounced it with *wh-*, a *w* having developed from the labial vowel, as in *whore*, etc. It afterwards went into *h* as it did in *who*, *whoop*, etc.

Page 222 : 15/400. "In . . . standard speech the final guttural was no doubt silent." Just the speech in which we know, from the 16th century grammarians, that it was not silent.

15/402. "Yo;" query if not a scribal error for *yno*, sufficiently.

18/463. *Grece* (plural of *gre*, a step) is in Richardson, with several examples. *Greece* in Bacon is one.

Page 223 : 50/172. "It would seem as if the pronunciation . . . varied with the spelling." Rather the spelling varies with the pronunciation.

Page 225 : 69/236. Mr. Nicol proposes to read "maketh the" (thrive) for "ains the."

Page 226 : 84/656. *Synk* for *cinc* (*cinq* is a false modern French spelling) is no more grotesque than *search* for *cercher*.

Page 228 : 121/472. (*Nach-*)*ahmen* comes from O. French *aesmer* (whence English *aim*); and is not old Teutonic at all. What *harme* here does mean it seems impossible to say; probably there is some error on the part of the scribe.

Page 229 : 153/129. It seems more probable that the *first*, not the *second*, syllable of the last word of the line is wanting. Query read *temperate* for *ther ate* ?

## GLOSSARY.

Atteroppes, read Attercoppes.

Browsty : reference should be 219/344.



- Burgyne : reference should be 55/307.  
Cannibe : reference is wrong.  
Caprify, read Caprifie : reference should be 125/592.  
Cave upon : *dele* the comma between these words.  
Chaunging : the reference is wrong ; read 7/163.  
Cloft, 89/795 : omitted : probably an error for *aloft* or *oloft*.  
Couthe, could : *dele* the *could* : the reference should be 39/1061.  
Entere : reference should be 11/279.  
Ereither : for 397/75, read 75/397.  
Foolde : references should be 37/1021, 88/770.  
Medessyng, read Medissyng : reference should be 29/797.  
Pastyne, 210/86 : read Pastyn.  
P'yment, read P'myment.  
Portulake, Lat. *pursulain*. The English is *purslain*, Lat. *portulaca*.  
Pike, 186/194 : *dele*.  
Stanry, 86/701 : read Stannry, 86/708.  
Sterve is O. E. *steorfan* (cognate with G. *sterben*).  
Stulpes : the reference should be 32/1054.  
Teete, read Tecte.  
There, thereas : in second line omit *thou*.  
Tort : reference should be 107/83 ; add 159/33.

S. J. H.

## CORRIGENDA.

The Editor laments to find so many instances of incorrectness—

“quas aut incuria fudit  
Aut humana parum cavit natura.”

He can only point them out, and beg the benignant reader to amend them with his pen. Many of them relate to the final *e*.—B. L.

2/23, <i>read</i> hoole, stande.	12/314, <i>read</i> atte.
2/29, ,, depe are noone.	12/315, ,, grounde.
2/31, ,, wele.	13/335, ,, tymbre.
3/40, ,, smelle.	13/338, ,, weel or.
3/53, ,, swelle.	14/366, ,, sette.
3/56, ,, doubte.	15/400, ,, ygrounde.
3/62, ,, and.	17/446, ,, lete.
3/63, ,, noone.	20/525, ,, goode.
5/105, ,, espie.	20/528, ,, eschewe.
5/111, ,, therfore.	20/532, ,, turne oute
7/153, ,, sayen.	21/562, ,, faate.
8/184, ,, uppe.	22/577, ,, askes.
8/189, ,, tourne.	22/594, ,, grounde.
8/193, ,, lande.	25/678, ,, bespronge.
8/200, ,, lande.	27/723, ,, maner.
9/235, the 2nd “seed” should have the final <i>e</i> .	29/771, ,, helpe.
9/236, <i>read</i> greyne.	29/775, ,, tyllinge.
10/254, ,, maner.	29/786, ,, walle.
10/260, ,, trymenstre.	30/826, ,, doone.
11/281, ,, beye.	31/837, ,, shouell.
11/291, ,, fresshe.	34/937, ,, hertes horne.
12/303, ,, wilt.	34/938, ,, lilee.
	35/944, ,, soure.

- 36/973, *read* wreke.  
 37/1009, ,, yerde.  
 37/1012, ,, of *instead of* or.  
 37/1021, ,, terebyncte.  
 38/1026, ,, noon.  
 38/1043, ,, titimalle.  
 40/1094, ,, seetes.  
 40/1130, ,, suffisantly bigge.  
 43/1170, ,, imus.  
     44/5, ,, alle.  
     44/7, ,, alle.  
     45/33, ,, nowe.  
     45/35, ,, assaileth.  
     46/65, ,, so.  
     47/81, ,, thenne.  
     47/97, ,, breres.  
 48/114, so in MS., but qu. ? dis-  
     cusseth ?=*divide*. Imperative.  
 48/115, *read* twyes.  
 49/146, ,, swete.  
 49/149, ,, wrecched.  
 49/152, ,, sleek.  
 52/219, ,, heure.  
 52/234, ,, tempur.  
 54/288, ,, moone.  
 54/291, ,, atwene.  
 54/300, ,, stoone.  
 55/311, ,, water.  
 55/329, ,, propre.  
 56/349, side-note *read* or.  
 57/371, *read* copron.  
 59/414, ,, nowe.  
 59/417, ,, therein.  
 59/435, ,, nowe.  
     61/19, ,, an.  
     62/42, ,, feire.  
     63/64, *read* saie.  
     64/104, ,, doune.  
     65/110, *insert at beginning* " The  
         same."  
     65/112, *read in* wynde.  
     65/132, ,, in an acre.  
     65/162, *space for a word should*  
         *have been left before* " besi-  
         nesse," *probably* " better."  
     67/177, *read* lite.  
     67/188, ,, ende.  
     68/195, ,, maner.  
     71/292, ,, ramal.  
     72/308, ,, kerve.  
     73/347, ,, And.  
     74/370, ,, yshave *for* " &  
         shave."  
     75/386, *read* And.  
     76/437, ,, cley and mose.  
     78/476, ,, setting.  
     78/479, side-note, *read* no  
         plants.  
     79/513, *read* eree.  
     80/538, ,, lilly.  
     81/556, ,, benygne.  
     81/559, ,, is goode to sowe.  
     86/702, ,, warme.  
     86/704, ,, ther.  
     87/730, ,, swete.  
     88/750, ,, lete.  
     89/782, ,, puld.  
     89/789, *remove comma to next word*.  
     89/790, *read* contynually.  
     90/829, *before hem insert* trede.  
     92/870, *read* " scrape " *in both*  
         *places*.

- 92/882, *read faire instead of save.* 136/897, *read colours.*  
 97/1005, ,, Moche. 140/9, ,, atte.  
 97/1015, ,, boringe. 141/45, ,, thi.  
 98/1037, ,, out. 142/65, ,, kyndes.  
 98/1057, ,, vive. 142/69, in side-note, petroselinon.  
 101/1114, ,, halde. 145/153, *read commyxt.*  
 102/1149, ,, of *instead of as.* 146/177, remove stop at end.  
 104/1, ,, atte. 146/181, *read sewe.*  
 106/61, ,, luke water. 147/205, ,, slee.  
 109/157, ,, hem *after* touche. 149/5, ,, owe *instead of are.*  
 110/164, ,, grene. 149/13, ,, wende.  
 111/206, ,, benygne. 149/21, ,, matier.  
 116/337, ,, the trunke. 150/25, ,, noo.  
 116/355, ,, firthe. 150/38, ,, aycine.  
 117/370, ,, seyointe, *i.e.* se- 150/46, ,, stocke.  
 junctæ. [this 152/103, ,, this.  
 117/378, ,, in this *instead of* or 152/104, ,, enlyne.  
 119/441, ,, handes. 153/128, ,, lupynys.  
 120/445, ,, ytild *instead of* and 155/166, ,, *dele semicolon.*  
 tild. 156/199, ,, and.  
 120/446, ,, enclose. 157/237, ,, drope.  
 120/454, ,, so be *instead of* so 160/71, ,, stondyng.  
 that. 162/119, ,, shepe.  
 122/509, ,, yit. 162/126, ,, drie *instead of* done.  
 122/521, ,, graffed. 163/127, ,, sifte.  
 124/570, ,, is holde. 163/136, ,, ooen.  
 127/665, ,, brynnyng. 163/141, ,, xxii.  
 133/786, ,, other. 163/144, ,, chaire.  
 133/792, ,, buttockes. 163/148, ,, ymne.  
 134/826, ,, droves. 166/51, ,, wattred.  
 134/839, a whole line omitted. 168/119, ,, ikeste.  
 See Note. 170/165, ,, yit.  
 135/845, *read* Prikker, *i.e.* Rider. 170/168, ,, prince I mene.  
 136/883, ,, malincoly. 171/7, ,, vynes roote.  
 136/888, ,, remove comma 172/46, ,, besinesse.  
 after nare. 176/134, ,, uppe.

176/138, <i>read</i> rounde.	194/194, <i>read</i> ther rise.
179/1, <i>remove comma</i> .	196/254, <i>remove comma to after</i>
179/2, <i>read</i> humoure.	herbe.
180/22, ,, <i>atte</i> .	196/258, <i>read</i> ryvullynge.
180/34, <i>remove comma to</i>	196/261, ,, <i>and</i> .
“ <i>come</i> ,” <i>in next line</i> .	197/275, <i>place comma at</i> “ <i>af-</i>
181/50, <i>read</i> wilde.	<i>ferme</i> .”
182/87, ,, <i>pike</i> .	197/280, <i>read</i> socoured.
182/102, ,, <i>lenghte</i> .	201/387, ,, <i>cors</i> .
185/163, ,, <i>Feveryere</i> .	203/469, ,, <i>parte</i> .
185/183, <i>in side-note read</i> dia-	204/488, ,, <i>nys</i> .
<i>moron</i> .	206/539, ,, <i>beforn</i> .
186/197, ,, <i>devite, &amp;c</i> .	208/26, ,, <i>ther on</i> .
186/215, ,, <i>Him</i> .	209/65, ,, <i>wol</i> .
188/28, ,, <i>graffes</i> .	212/154, ,, <i>stocke</i> .
191/128, ,, <i>fedde</i> .	213/177, ,, <i>this</i> .
191/130, <i>insert comma at end</i> .	216/271, <i>full stop after</i> “ <i>wepe</i> .”
192/152, <i>read</i> Nowe eke.	219/333, <i>read</i> Feveryere.

Other readings which Mr. Skeat, in the *Academy*, has specified as probable errors, are printed as in the MS., e.g. *oons*, 114/293; *ons*, 147/214; *thens*, 30/818; *een*, 129/677; *colours*, 133/804.

---

Consequent on the above the following corrections should be made in the Ryme Index:—

- Page 260, l. 17, the footnote refers to the heading **ayne** is.  
 ,, 266, col. 2, *dele heading* **-and**.  
 ,, 267, col. 1, ll. 23–37, *for land read* lande.  
 ,, 272, col. 2, *under -aunce add to* abundaunce, fecundaunce, *obl.*  
 134/838; *pleasaunce, obl.* 134/836.  
 ,, 273, col. 1, l. 4, *to* fecundaunce *add* abundaunce, *obj.* 134/839.  
 ,, 273, col. 1, l. 10, *to* pleasaunce *add* abundaunce, *obj.* 134/839.

- Page 286, col. 1, under heading **-een** for atween read atwene, *dele* the asterisks, and transfer to p. 298, col. 2, under the heading **-ene**.
- „ 290, col. 1, *dele* all under heading **-eir**.
- „ 290, col. 2, l. 4, for feir read feire; *dele* \*.
- „ 290, col. 2, l. 8, under feire, *a. pl.*, add appeire, *inf.* 62/41.
- „ 295, col. 2, *dele* all under heading **-end**.
- „ 296, col. 2, l. 29, for end read ende; *dele* \*.
- „ 297, col. 1, l. 13, add descende, *inf.* 67/189.
- „ 322, col. 2, l. 11, add multiplice, (*sic*) 162/125.
- „ 327, col. 1, under heading **-igne**, *dele* **-ynge**, and add under benygne, *a. sing.*, assigne, *inf.* 81/554; vyne, *obl.* 71/299.
- „ 334, col. 1, under **-ing**, l. 4, for boring read boringe, *dele* the asterisk from bringe, and transfer to p. 335 under **-inge**.
- „ 334, col. 2, for ryvullyng read ryvullynge, *dele* asterisk from sprynge, and transfer to p. 336, col. 1.
- „ 334, col. 2, for tylling read tyllynge, *dele* the asterisks and transfer to p. 336, col. 2.
- „ 332, col. 1, under lupyne, *obl.*, *dele* fyne is, and wynys and footnote 1.
- „ 333, col. 2, ll. 6 and 24, for lupyne read lupynys.
- „ 333, col. 2, under heading **-ynys**, for lupyne read lupynys, and add lupynys, *obl.*, fyne is, 153/131, wynys, *n. pl.* 153/130, and *dele* footnote 3.
- „ 339, col. 2, under **-is**, for thus read this; *dele* \*.
- „ 346, col. 1, last line but one, for serjointe read seyointe.













DING SECT. JUN 30 1964

PR Early English Text  
1119 Society  
A2 [Publications]  
no.52 Original series. no. 52,72

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH



